CORSO DI STUDIO ITALIANO.

PART I.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.
A GRAMMAR

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE

BY

PIETRO BACHI,
INSTRUCTOR IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

A NEW EDITION REVISED AND IMPROVED,
WITH THE ADDITION OF
PRACTICAL EXERCISES AND NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS,
DRAWN FROM THE ITALIAN CLASSICS.

"Una lingua deve avere l' uso per base, l' esempio per consiglio,
e la ragion per guida."

CESAROTTI.

BOSTON:
CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN.

LONDON:
RICHARD JAMES KENNERT.

M DCCC XXXVIII.
Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1838, by
PIETRO BACHI,
in the Clerk's office of the District Court, for the District of Massachusetts.
"De exteris hominibus jam nunc dicam, quorum demerendi, si tibi id cordi est, persanè ampla in præsens oblata est occasio. Ut enim apud eos ingenio quis forte floridior, aut moribus amœnis et elegantibus, lingvam Etruscam in deliciis habet præcipuis, quin et in solidâ etiam parte eruditionis esse sibi ponendam ducit, præsertim si Græca aut Latina vel nullo, vel modico, tinctu imbiberit. Ego certè istis utrisque linguis, non extremis tantummodo labris madidus, sed, si quis alius, quantùm per annos licuit, poculis majuribus prolutus, possum tamen nonnunquam ad illum Dantem et Petrarcam, aliosque vestros complurimos, libenter et cupidè comissatum ire. Nec me tam ipsæ Athenæ Atticæ cum illo suo pellucido Ilisso, nec illa vetus Roma suâ Tiberis ripâ retinere valuerunt, quin sœpe Arnum vestrum et Fæsulanos illos colles invisere amem."

PREFACE

TO THE FORMER EDITION.

As a natural consequence of the general advancement of this country in literature, the importance attached to an acquaintance with the Italian Language, as a part of polite education, has considerably increased. Not only does it now enter into the circle of the elegant studies of females, as the handmaid and ally of the ornamental arts, but the spirit of its higher literature begins to be understood by the cultivated of both sexes; and within a short time a place has been conceded to Dante and Tasso in the same academic course with Homer and Virgil.

But while the other languages of the continent of Europe have possessed the advantage of a variety of good grammars written in English, the Italian Instructer has had the mortification to see in almost universal use the farrago of Veneroni,* to the disparagement of his native tongue and the perplexity of those who would learn it. It is true, that other grammars are extant of various degrees of merit, and those of Galigáni, Santagnello, and Vergáni are entitled to much praise; the first two, however, are hardly known here,

* Veneroni was a native of Verdun, a small town of Burgundy, in France; his real name was Vigneron; but, having learnt Italian, and wishing to teach it in Paris, he Italianized his name and called himself a Florentine. The Complete Italian Master by Signor Veneroni was written for a few crowns by Roselli, the extraordinary adventurer, who has left us his history in the romance entitled The Unfortunat Neapolitan.
and the last, which is perhaps the best of them all, has been confined principally to New-York; where indeed the want of a suitable grammar has been far less felt than in other places, from the singular good fortune of that city in enjoying the living instruction of the venerable Da Ponte, whose own writings, in prose as well as in verse, form an integral and permanent part of the noble literature, which he has done so much to propagate in America.

The field, therefore, was open for attempting to treat in English the Grammar of the Italian Language in a manner better suited to the wants of the public; and the author, in entering it, has flattered himself that he should render an acceptable service, if, after a thorough study of Italian writers on their own tongue, and a diligent examination of the labors of his predecessors both in Great Britain France, and Germany, he should be able to produce a more complete, and methodical, and, at the same time, strictly practical treatise, than now exists in English, however far he might fall short of that perfection of which he has the idea.

In the Introduction are given very summarily the principles of general grammar, and the terms are defined in which those principles are afterwards applied to the Italian tongue.

The Part devoted to Pronunciation affords, it is believed, more full information on the subject than can elsewhere be found; and, as the words are carefully represented by English combinations of letters of equivalent sound,* students who can-

* The vowel a is represented by the combination of letters ah, pronounced without aspiration as in the words sirrah, hallelujah, &c.: e, by ay, as in day, except when it occurs before certain consonants with which in English it has what is called the short sound, nearly resembling the sound in Italian, as in the syllables em, el, &c.; before r, however, e is sounded long, like ay: i, by ee, as in sleep: u, by oo, as in ooze. In the combinations k, y — g, y — l, y — n, y, a comma is inserted to prevent the letter before it from coalescing with the y, which is to be pronounced with the following vowel as if it began the syllable.
not avail themselves of oral instruction, may yet make such an approximation to a just pronunciation, as to perceive and enjoy in a good degree the rhythm and harmony of the classic authors, and, with few errors to unlearn, be prepared to take advantage of future opportunities of improving their pronunciation by intercourse with accomplished speakers of the language.

In treating of the different Parts of Speech, in the division called Analogy, while the author has wished that nothing should be wanting to the completeness of this part of his treatise, he has striven so to methodize the various particulars that they should lie ready for use. The verbs, especially, are given with unexampled fulness; and to both the regular and irregular verbs are annexed the poetical forms, which constitute no small difficulty for learners, even in reading the older prose writers. This is an advantage not afforded to the same extent in any preceding grammar.

As to the Syntax, a few scattered observations only are to be found in the best grammars. These are here digested under their proper heads, increased by various new ones, and all of them supported by citations from those Classics from whose authority no appeal can be allowed, though colloquial usage may in a few instances be at variance with them.

The Orthography contains the result of what has been written by Italian authors on the subject, and such rules as have been deduced from the usage of the best writers.

Throughout the Grammar, it should be observed, the principal rules are placed under their appropriate heads, in large type; exceptions to general rules and subordinate observations are printed in smaller type. Every Italian word of more than one syllable is carefully accented, that the mere perusal of the Grammar may operate as a perpetual lesson in pronunciation, preparing the pupil to read currently the first author put into his hands, and sparing the instructor the
trouble of much inculcation. For an analogous reason, every Italian word and sentence is accompanied by a literal English version, which is often indispensable to the beginner, and can rarely be useless.

The author is well aware of the amount of indulgence which his English style will require on the part of his readers, whose very pursuit of a foreign literature implies a degree of cultivation in their own, which must make them impatient of the constraint and want of idiomatic propriety they will here meet with. Grammatical propriety, however, and perspicuity were the highest qualities to which he could at present pretend, in a language whose idioms are so remote from his own; and, if he has been in any good degree successful in attaining these, he relies on the candor of ingenious scholars to attribute his defects to the difficulty of the case, and not suppose that he undervalue or is insensible to the charms of a good style; which would indeed be inexcusable in one whose ambition it is to spread a knowledge of the most graceful of modern dialects:

"Illam, quidquid agit, quoquo vestigia movit,
Componit furtim subsequiturque Decor."

TIBULL. l. 4. c. 2.
The flattering reception, which the former edition of this Grammar has met with, both in this country and abroad, and the wide circulation, which in a few years it has obtained in the different quarters of this Union, have made it the duty of the author to redouble his efforts to approach nearer to the end which he originally proposed to himself.

A long experience in teaching, the useful suggestions made to him by friends who have been using his book both in private and public instruction, together with an incessant study of his native tongue in the works of the classic writers, have enabled him to make such improvements, as to render the work more deserving of the public favor.

But the light, which the writings of Monti, Compagnoni, Romani, Ambrosoli, Lucchesini, and others, have shed on Philology, in Italy, has given origin, within the last few years, to so many valuable treatises on Grammar, that, to derive advantage from their works, and to suit this book to the present times, it was necessary to remodel the former plan, and introduce such changes, as appeared to be required by the philosophy of the language, and the progress of grammatical science.

To obtain this object, the Grammar has been newly written, the arrangement altered, the method simplified, and the style generally improved. Several remarks, which had been found useless, have been omitted, and many important rules, which had been omitted, have been introduced. The verbs have been better displayed; and the Syntax has been increased
by several important chapters, such as those on the Regimen of Words, the Agreement of Participles, &c.

Sensible of the truth of the principle, that a grammarian ought not to limit himself to a mere exposition of principles, but should deduce them from sound reason and verify them by the authority of the classic writers, — ("Grammaticorum sine ratione testimoniaeque auctoritas nulla est." — Sanct. Minerv. l. 1. c. 2.) — the author has, in this new edition, endeavoured first to write and explain his rules, and then to add, by way of illustration, the classical authorities, which have furnished him the Examples corroborating the principles he has laid down.

Convinced, too, of the advantage which the student naturally derives from the practical application of abstract principles, he has introduced, in each chapter of the Grammar, one or more Exercises, as the subject or the importance of the rules seemed to require.

The Examples, as well as the Exercises, have been chiefly drawn from the writers of the fourteenth century, such as Dante, Petrarch, Boccaccio, Villani, &c.; in many instances from those of the sixteenth, as Machiavelli, Guicciardini, Ariosto, Tasso, &c.; and, when these have failed to supply apposite illustrations, from the best poets and prose writers of the eighteenth century, and from those among the moderns who have distinguished themselves for purity of diction and elegance of style, as Alfieri, Foscolo, Botta, Manzoni, &c.

To prevent any interruption in the regular progress of the different parts of the book, and to reduce the principles to a more compact form, it was at first thought advisable to throw into an Appendix, at the end of the volume, certain lists of words and supplementary remarks, which formerly occupied a place in the Analogy; but the size, which the work had already attained,
determined the author to reserve it to be published in a separate form, particularly as its omission at present affects in no manner the completeness of the Grammar, however useful such an appendage might be.

Some improvements have also been made in the typographical execution of the work. The most important parts of the rules have been printed in *italics*. In the examples, which immediately follow, the words which directly illustrate the rules are printed in **small capitals**; and the whole of these examples, which always recur in the succeeding citations from the classics, are there printed in **small capitals**, to engage the attention of the learner to their connexion with the longer passages, from which they were at first detached.

Should the volume appear to any one larger than is necessary for common use, he should observe, that, of the whole number of pages, 351 only are occupied by the *rules of the language* and their *immediate illustrations*, and that the remainder of the book is filled by *Exercises* (which are commonly printed in a separate volume), and by a collection of eighteen hundred citations from the classics, which exhibit all the principal phenomena of the language, in a form which gives the student ready access to a high authority for, and a happy exemplification of, every principle, thus making him familiar beforehand with the idioms and constructions, which would be the chief impediments in his reading the most difficult authors.

As to the mode of using this Grammar, the author would recommend the following plan. Let the principles first be properly explained and exemplified by the instructor, and let them be properly learned and recited by the student. This done, let the instructor point out the application of them in the citations from the classics which follow the rules of each chapter, and let the student account for them (and for as many others as he may have
already learned), by parsing the words which form the subjects of
the rules with which he is already acquainted; and, when he
has become familiar with them, let him be directed to write out
the Exercises. This method, if strictly adhered to, cannot
fail to prove highly useful to the learner, and satisfactory to the
teacher.

Desirous that his book should not fall short of that perfection,
which grammatical science seems lately to have reached in
Italy, the author has spared neither expense nor diligence in
procuring all the best treatises on the Italian language, which
have hitherto been published in Europe. Some of these have
been of great assistance to him in his labors, and in many in-
stances he has not hesitated to adopt from them many excellent
hints and valuable remarks. Still he trusts, that the manner
in which he has combined his scattered materials into a body
of principles, all illustrated by a variety of unquestionable clas-
sical authorities, will secure to his work the character of origi-
nality, so far as this can belong to any grammar of a language
long since settled in its usages and idioms:

"Etiamsi omnia a veteribus inventa sunt, hoc tamen erit
- semper novum, usus et dispositio inventorirn ab aliis."

Senec. Epist. 64.

Cambridge, September, 1838.
A LIST OF WORKS
EXAMINED WITH REFERENCE TO THE COMPIILATION OF THIS
GRAMMAR.

Alberti (di Villanuova, Francesco d'), Dizionario Universale
Criticò Enciclopédico della Lingua Italiana. Lucca, 1805.
6 vol. 4to.

Alberti (de Villeneuve, François d'), Grand Dictionnaire Fran-
çois-Italien, et Italien-François. Bassano, 1831. 2 vol. 4to.

Algarotti (Francesco), Lettere Filologiche, raccolte da Bar-
tolommeo Gamba. Venezia, 1826. 1 vol. 12mo.

Alessandro (Francesco), Le Ricchezze della Lingua sopra il Deca-
merone. Venezia, 1557. 1 vol. 4to.

Ambrosoli (Francesco), Manuale della Lingua Italiana. Milàno,
1829. 1 vol. 12mo.

Barberi (J. Pl.), Grammaire des Grammaires Italiennes, ou
Cours Complet de Langue Italienne. Paris, 1819. 2 vol. 8vo.

----, Petit Trésor de la Langue Française et de la Lang-
ue Italiene. Paris, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.

Barretti (Joseph), A Dictionary of the English and Italian Lan-

Bartoli (Danièle), Trattato dell' Ortografia Italiana. Milàno,
1880. 1 vol. 12mo.

Bazzarini (Antonio), Ortografia Enciclopédica Universale.
Venezia, 1824. 1 vol. 8vo.

Bembo (Pietro), Prose, nelle quali si ragiona della Volgàr Lin-
gua, colle Giuntie di Lodovico Castelvetro. Milàno, 1824.
1 vol. 12mo.

Bergantini (Giován-Pietro), Voci Italiane d' Autori Approvati
dalla Crusca, nel Vocabolario di essa non registrate. Venè-
zia, 1745. 1 vol. 4to.

Biagioli (G.), Grammaire Italienne Élémentaire et Raisonnée.
Paris, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.

Boréli (Pasquale), Principj dell' Arte Etimològica. Nápoli,
1830. 1 vol. 4to.

Brosse (Charles de), Traité de la Formation Mécanique des
Langues. Paris, 1801. 2 vol. 12mo.
Briani (Donato Antônio), Osservazioni sopra la Lingua Toscana. Nápoli, 1759. 1 vol. 12mo.

Buller (J. B.), Memoires sur la Langue Celtique. Besançon, 1760. 3 vol. fol.

Buonomatti (Benedetto), Della Lingua Toscana, Libri Due, colle note di Anton-María Salvini. Miláno, 1807. 2 vol. 8vo.

Callefi (Giuseppe), Grammatica della Lingua Italiana, compilata sulle migliori moderne Grammatiche. Firénze, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.

Cardinali (Francisco), Dizionario portatile della Lingua Italiana. Bolgòna, 1828. 2 vol. 8vo.

Carducci (Facundo), Elementi della Lettura, ed Ortografia Italiana. Siéna, 1828. 1 vol. 8vo.

Césari (Antônio), Dissertazione sopra lo Stato della Lingua Italiana. Verona, 1810. 1 vol. 4to.

Cesarotti (Melchior), Saggi sulla Filosofia delle Lingue, e del Gusto. Miláno, 1821. 1 vol. 12mo.

Cinònio [alias Mambelli (Marc-Antônio)], Osservazioni della Lingua Italiana, illustrate ed accresciute da Luigi Lamberti. Miláno, 1811. 4 vol. 8vo.

Cittadini (Césio), Le Origini della Toscana Favélla. Siéna, 1628. 1 vol. 8vo.

Compagnoni (Giuseppe), Teorica de' Verbi Italiani, regolari, anômali, difettivi, e mal-nóti; compilata sulle Opere del Cinònio, del Pistolesi, del Mastrofani, e d' altri più illustri Grammatici. Livorno, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.

Corticelli (Salvadore), Regole ed Osservazioni della Lingua Toscana. Bassano, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.

Cousel (Gio. de'), Nuova Grammatica della Lingua Italiana per gli Italiani. Livorno, 1816. 1 vol. 8vo.

Daliento, Osservazioni intorno alla Lingua Italiana. Venézia, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.

Da-Ponte (Lorénzo), Elementi della Lingua Italiana. Nuova-Yærk, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.

Dell' Arte della Parola, considerata né varj Modi della sua Espressione. Miláno, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.

Del-Muro (Vincenzo), Grammatica Ragionata della Lingua Italiana. Nápoli, 1804. 1 vol. 8vo.

Destutt-de-Tracy (Antônio Luigi Clemente), Grammatica Generale, colla Annotazioni di Giuseppe Compagnoni. Miláno, 1817. 2 vol. 8vo.
Dizionario della Lingua Italiana. Pádova, 1827. 7 vol. 4to.

Dolce (Lodovico), Osservazioni sulla Lingua Italiana. Venézia, 1562. 1 vol. 8vo.

Eleménti della Lingua Italiana ad uso della Scuole. Venézia, 1810. 1 vol. 8vo.

— délla Grammatica, e délla Ortografia Italiana, ricaváti dal Pallavicino, Bártili, Rogácci, Buommatéi. Nápoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.

Faccioláti (Jácopo), Ortografia Modérna Italiana. Nápoli, 1831. 1 vol. 4to.

Ferrarii (Octavi), Origines Linguae Italicæ. Patavii, 1676. 1 vol. fol.

Fornasari, Theoretisch praktische Anleitung zur Erlernung der Italienischen Sprache, in einer neuen, und fasslicheren Darstellung. Wien, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.

Francisci (Stéfano), Grammatica Inferiôre délla Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.


Giambullári (Pier-Francésco), Lezioni, aggiuntovi l'Orígne délla Lingua Fiorentina, altriménti il Géllo. Miláno, 1827. 1 vol. 12mo.

Giannelli (Leonárdo), Régole Grammaticáli per chi vuó parláre, e scrivéró correttamente Toscáno. Lúcca, 1820. 1 vol. 12mo.

Gigli (Girólamo), Lezioni di Língua Toscána. Venézia, 1722. 1 vol. 8vo.

Gióia (Melchiór), Ideología. Miláno, 1822. 2 vol. 8vo.

Gório (A. F.), Stória Antiquária Etrúscá. Firénze, 1749. 1 vol. 12mo.

Gran Dizionario délla Lingua Italiana. Bológna, 1828. 7 vol. 4to.

Grássi (Giuséppe), Sággio intórno ái Sinóními délla Lingua Italiana. Firénze, 1832. 1 vol. 8vo.


Jaklitsch (Giuséppe), Príncipj Elementári délla Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.

Lémni (Giov. Spirito), Elementénti ragionáti délla Lingua Toscána. Livórno, 1808. 1 vol. 8vo.
Lucchesini (Cesare), Dell’ Illustrazione delle Lingue Antiche e Moderne, e principalmente dell’ Italiana. Lucca, ——. 2 vol. 8vo.

Méier (Andréa), Della Lingua Comune d’Italia. Venézia, 1822. 1 vol. 12mo.

Manni (Doménico Maria), Lezioni di Lingua Toscano. Miláno, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.

Martignoni (Girólamo), Nuovo Metodo per la Lingua Italiana la più Scélta, estensivo a tutte le Lingue. Miláno, 1743. 2 vol. 4to.

Mastrofini (Marco), Teoría e Prospéctto, oseia Dizionário Critico de’ Vérbis Italiani coniugáti, specialmente dégli anomáli, e mal-nótí. Roma, 1814. 2 vol. 4to.

Mastróti (Francésco), Corso di Lingua Italiana. Nápoli, 1833. 1 vol. 8vo.

Mazzinghi, Ortografia Italiana. Nápoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.

Meidinger, Praktische Italienische Grammatik, wodurch man diese Sprache auf eine ganz neue, und sehr leichte Art in kurzer Zeit gründlich erlernen kann. Leipzig, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.

Menágio (Egidio), Originí della Lingua Italiana. Parigi, 1669. 1 vol. fol.

Menzini (Benedetto), Della Costruzione Irregoláre della Lingua Toscaná. Veróna, 1744. 1 vol. 4to.

Mímo (Giovánni), Sintássi, Frási, e Vóci per perseverzionári nélla Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1809. 1 vol. 8vo.

Minti (Vincentzo), Proposta di alcune Correzioni ed Aggiunte al Vocabolário della Crúsca. Miláno, 1826. 7 vol. 8vo.

Mucchi (Doménico), Nuova Grammatica Italiana, formata su i Principi di Grammatica Generále. Nápoli, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.

Muratbri (Ludovico Antonio), Dissertazioni sopra le Antichità Italiane. Miláno, 1751. 3 vol. 4to.

Napione (Francesco Galeáni), Dell’ Uso e dé’ Prégi della Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1830. 2 vol. 12mo.

Nesi (Lorenzo), Dizionário Ortológiço Prático della Lingua Italiana. Pavía, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.

Nuova Ortografia Italiana, con l’Aggiunta di varie Voci Dubbíe. Pádova, 1825. 1 vol. 12mo.

Onorati (Niccoló), Dizionário di Voci Dubbíe Italiane. Nápoli, 1783. 1 vol. 4to.

Ortografia della Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 18mo.

Parénti (Marc-António), Annotazioni al Dizionário Italiano, che si stampa in Bologna. Módena, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.


Pergamini (Giácomo), Trattato della Língua Italiana. Venézia, 1613. 1 vol. 8vo.

Pezzana (Ángelo), Osservazioni concernénti álla Língua Italiana, ed á suoi Vocabolári. Párlma, 1823. 1 vol. 8vo.

Pistoléri (Giam-Battista), Prospécto d’Verbi Italiani regolári e irregolári. Pisa, 1813. 1 vol. 4to.

Pónza (Michélle), L’ Annotatóre dégli Errori di Língua. Toríno, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.

———, Grammáctica délla Língua Italiana. Toríno, 1834. 1 vol. 12mo.

Puóti (Basílio), Régole Elementário délla Língua Italiana. Nápoli, 1836. 2 vol. 12mo.

Rábbi (Cário Costánz), Sinóními ed Aggiúnti Italiani. Venezíá. 1817. 1 vol. 4to.

Románi (Giovánni), Teórica délla Língua Italiana. Milánó, 1825. 2 vol. 8vo.

———, Teórica dé Sinóními Italiani. Milánó, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.

———, Dizionário Generále dé Sinóními Italiani. Milánó, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.

———, Osservazioni sópra Várie Véci del Vocabolário délla Crúsca. Milánó, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.

———, Opuscoli Scélti súlla Língua Italiana. Milánó, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.

Rosséco (Gíralamo), Délla Língua Toscánta, Diálogghi Sétte. Milánó, 1824. 2 vol. 12mo.

Róster (Gíácomo), Osservazioni Grammaticáfico intéorno álla Língua Italiana. Firénte, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.

———, Elementi Grammaticáfico Ragionáti di Língua Italiana. Firénte, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.

Sálviáti (Leonárdò), Avvertiménti délla Língua sópra il Decaméroné. Milánó, 1810. 3 vol. 8vo.

Santagnélo (M.), A Complete Grammar of the Italian Lan-

WORKS EXAMINED.


Sodave (Francisco), Grammatica Ragionata della Língua Italiana, colle Aggiunte di António Bianchini. Brésca, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.

Soldati (Mattò), Sullo Státo presente della Língua Italiana. (Atti dell’ Acád. Itál., vol. I.)

Sorézi (Pier-Doménico), Erudímenti della Língua Italiana. Miláno, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.

Spadassíra (Plácido), Prosodia Italiana, colla Giúnta di tre brévi Trattáti; l’ uno della Z, e sua varietá; e l’ altro dell’ E e O; il térzo della buona e rêa Pronúncia. Venézie, 1830. 2 vol. 8vo.

Tommaso (Nicolò), Nuovo Dizionário de’ Sinònimi della Língua Italiana. Firènze, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.

Tozelli (Ottávio), Origine della Língua Italiana. Bolónia, 1831. 3 vol. 8vo.

Vánzon (Carlo António), Grammática Ragionata della Língua Italiana. Livórnio, 1834. 1 vol. 8vo.

——, Dizionário Universále della Língua Italiana. Livórnio, 1827. 3 vol. 8vo.

Várchi (Benedícto), L’ Ercoleáno, o Ragionaménto súlle Língue, ed in particoláre della Toscána e Fiorentína. Miláno, 1803. 1 vol. 8vo.

Vergani (M. A.), A New and Complete Italian Grammar. Lághorn, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.

Vocabolário degli Accadémici della Crúsca. Venézie, 1763. 7 vol. 4to.

———, colle Aggiunte di António Césari. Veróna, 7 vol. 4to.

——— Universále della Língua Italiana. Nápoli, 1829— [1 prími] 5 vol. 4to., [che contengono le letére A—RU. (Ópera in córso.)]

Zanobéttì (Giovánni), Nuovo Dizionário Portátile della Língua Italiana. Livórnio, 1827. 1 vol. 16mo.

Zotti (Romualdo), Grammaire Italiennne, et Thèmes sur la Lan- gue Italiennne. París, 1823. 2 vol. 12mo.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Note</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AGN. Pand. o.</td>
<td>Pandolfini (Ágnolo), 'Trattáto del Govérno dellà Famiglia,' pàgina o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alam. Colt. o. o.</td>
<td>Alamànni (Luigi), 'La Cultivazione,' libro o. pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alberg. Nov.</td>
<td>Albergáti-Capacélli (Francésco), 'Nòvéllë.'</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Albert.</td>
<td>Albertáno, Giúdc÷à Brésçìà, Volgarìzzà-mento dè' 'Tre Trattáti,' capitolo o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abertan. c. o.</td>
<td>———, ———, Trattáto o. cap. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alf. Fil. o. o.</td>
<td>Alféri (Víttrèrio), 'Tragédìè,' Filèppo, átto o. scéna o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>———</td>
<td>———, Antígone, átto o. scéna o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>———</td>
<td>———, Sàúl, átto o. scéna o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alg. lett.</td>
<td>Algarótì (Francésco), 'Léttere.'</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alleg.</td>
<td>Allégrì (Alessàndro), 'Léttere e Rìme,' pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allegr. o.</td>
<td>———</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ambr. Cof. o. o.</td>
<td>Æmbra (Francésco d'), 'La Cofanària,' comédia, átto o. scéna o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Am. Ant.</td>
<td>———</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amm. Ant. d. o. r. o.</td>
<td>'Ammaestraméntì dégli Antìchi, raccólì e volgarìzzàti da Fra Bartolòmméo da San Concórdìo, distribuzìóne o. rubrica o. ammaestraméntò o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amor.</td>
<td>Amòrtìli (Cárlo), 'Viàggio ài Tre Lághì; Maggióre, di Lucàno, e di Cómò.'</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ann. Vang.</td>
<td>'Annotazìóne sòpra gli Evangèli,' (Tésto à pènna, citàto nel Vocabolário della Crùsca.)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ariost</td>
<td>Ariòsto (Ludovìco), 'Orlandò Fùrìso,' cán- to o. stànza o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>——— Fur. o. o.</td>
<td>———</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B.</td>
<td>Védì Bocc.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barb. Gr. Gr.</td>
<td>Barberì (J-Ph.), 'Grammàires des Gram- maires Italiennes.'</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bellinc.</td>
<td>Bellincìòni (Bernárdo), 'Rìme.'</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bemb.</td>
<td>Bèmbo (Píètro), 'Stòria di Venészìà,' lib. o. pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>——— Stor. o. o.</td>
<td>———, 'Léttere Volgári,' volúme o. lib. o. pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>——— Lett. o. o.</td>
<td>———</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE OF ABBREVIATIONS.  XXV

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bent.</td>
<td>Bentivoglio (Cardinal Guido), ‘Lettere’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— lett. o.</td>
<td>lettera o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ber. Tass. lett.</td>
<td>Tasso (Bernardo), ‘Lettere’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bern. Orl. o. o.</td>
<td>Berni (Francesco), ‘Orlando Innamorato’, canto o. stanza o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Rim. o. o.</td>
<td>‘Rime Burlésche,’ vol. o. pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Intr.</td>
<td>——, ‘Decam.’ Proemio.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Introd.</td>
<td>——, giorno a o. Proemio.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Proem.</td>
<td>——, giorno a nova a o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— g. o. n. o.</td>
<td>giorno a novella o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— g. o. canz.</td>
<td>giorno a canzone.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Concl.</td>
<td>——, Conclusione.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Corb.</td>
<td>Védi —— Lab., Laber. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Amet. o.</td>
<td>——, ‘Ameto,’ pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Fiam.</td>
<td>——, ‘Fiammetta,’ lib. o. número o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Fiamm. o. o.</td>
<td>——, Filocolo e Filóco po, lib. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Filoc. o.</td>
<td>——, Laberinto d’Amore, o sia il Corbaccio, num. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Lab.</td>
<td>——, ‘Testide,’ canto o. stanza o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Laber. o.</td>
<td>——, ‘Testamento.’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Tes. o. o.</td>
<td>——, ‘Testament’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Testam.</td>
<td>——, ‘Amorosa Visione,’ canto o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Vis. o.</td>
<td>——, ‘Comento soppia i primi Diciassette Canti dell’Inferno di Dante’</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Vis. Amor.</td>
<td>——, Vita di Dante Alighieri,’ pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Vit. Dant. o.</td>
<td>Védi Varch.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Tosc. o.</td>
<td>——, (Vincenzo), ‘Déll’Toscana, e délle sue Città,’ discorso, pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Arm. Fam. o.</td>
<td>——, ‘Dell’Arme delle Famigliie Fiorentine,’ discorso, pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brunet. Tes. o. o.</td>
<td>da Bono Giambóni, lib. o, cap. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Pataff. o.</td>
<td>‘Il Patàfso,’ cap. o. (Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### TABLE OF ABBREVIATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Buom.</td>
<td><em>Buonmattiti</em> (Benedetto), 'Della Lingua Toscana, Libri Due,' lib. o. trattato o. cap. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buon.</td>
<td><em>Buonarroti</em> (Michel-Angelo, il vecchio), 'Rime,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Buonar. Rim. o.</td>
<td><em>(Michel-Angelo, il giovane), 'La Fiera,' comedia in cinque giornate, Introduzione.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fier. Introd.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>giornata o. átto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burchiell. p. o. s. o.</td>
<td>*Burchiello, 'Sonetti,' parte o. sonetto o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>*Inferno, Purgatorio, Paradiso, canto o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cant. Carn. o.</td>
<td><em>Canti Carnascialeschi, pág. o. (Texto a penña, citado nel Vocabolario).</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Car.</td>
<td>*Caro (Annibàl), 'Lettere Familiari,' parte o. pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caro. lett. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matt. s. o.</td>
<td>*Mattacini,' sonetto o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Casa Galat. o.</td>
<td>*Càsa (Monsignor Giovanni della), 'Il Galateo,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Castigl. Cort. l. o.</td>
<td>*Castigliane (Baldassàre), 'Il Cortigiano,' lib. o. pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cavalc.</td>
<td>*Cavàtica (Fra Doménico), Volgarizzamento degli 'Atti degli Apóstoli,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Att. Apost o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Espos. Simb. o.</td>
<td>*Esposizione del Simbolo degli Apóstoli,' lib. o. pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frutt. Ling.</td>
<td><em>Trattato de' Frutti della Lingua.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pungil. o.</td>
<td>*Pungiltiungua,' cap. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Specch. Cr.</td>
<td><em>Spècchio della Cròce.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stolt. o.</td>
<td>*Trattato delle 'Trènta Stoltizie dell'Uàmo,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cavalcánti.</td>
<td><em>Esposizione delle sue Canzeni.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cecch. Dot. o. o.</td>
<td>*Cèechi (Giovan-Maria), 'La Dòte,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Esalt. cr.</td>
<td>*L' Esaltazione della Cròce,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inc. o.o.</td>
<td>*Gl' Incantàtìsimi,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spir. o.o.</td>
<td>*Lo Spirìta,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cesar.</td>
<td><em>Cesarótti (Melchiòr), Traduzione dell' 'Ilìade d' Oméro.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cinon. t. o.</td>
<td>*Cínònio,' Osservazioni della Língua Itàliànà,' tòme o.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### TABLE OF ABBREVIATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Esémpio tirato da Autore Clássico, del quale non si rimembra il nome. Occórre raríssime volte.</td>
<td>Corticelli (Salvadore), 'Régole ed Osservazioni della Língua Toscaná.'</td>
<td>Crescenzzi (Pietro dé'), 'Trattáto dell' Agricoltúra, lib. o. cap. o. núm. o.</td>
<td>'Crônica di Giovanni Morélí.'</td>
<td>'Vocabolário dégli Accadémici délla Crúsca.'</td>
<td>Dante Alighiéri, 'Divína Comédia,' Inferno, canto o.</td>
<td>— 'Comm.' Purgatório, canto o.</td>
<td>— 'Paradiso, canto o.</td>
<td>— 'Convívio.'</td>
<td>— 'Rime.'</td>
<td>Davanzati (Bernardo), 'Opere.'</td>
<td>— 'Scisma d' Inghiltérra,' pág. o.</td>
<td>— 'Coltivazione Toscaná.'</td>
<td>— Volgarizzaménto dégli 'Annáli di Cornélio Tácito,' lib. o. pág. o.</td>
<td>— Volgarizzaménto délle 'Stórie di Tácito,' lib. o. pág. o.</td>
<td>— Volgarizzaménto délla 'Germánia di Tácito,' pág. o.</td>
<td>— Volgarizzaménto déllle Cagióni délla Perdúta Eloquéncia di Tácito,' pág. o.</td>
<td>— 'Postille ai primi séi libri délla sua traduzión dégli Annáli di Tácito,' pág. o.</td>
<td>Volgarizzaménto délle 'Declamazióni di Quintiliáno, tésto a pénna di Mattéo Caccini. (Citáto nel Vocabolário.)</td>
<td>Volgarizzaménto délla 'Locuzióné de Demétrio Paléréo,' di Piero Segni, pág. o.</td>
<td>Denina (Cárló), 'Rivoluzióni d' Itália,' lib. o. cap. o.</td>
<td>— Discórso Sópra le Vicénde délla Letteratúra.'</td>
<td>— 'Staggio sópra la Letteratúra Ralíána.'</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dep.'Decam. o.</td>
<td>'Annotazioni e Discorsi sopra alcuni luoghi del Decamerone di Giovanna Boccaccio, fatti da' Deputati' [elëtti dal Gran-Duca Cesimo I. l'anno 1565, per la correzione di quell' opera], pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dial. S. Greg. m.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamiento de' Dialoghi di San Gregorio Magno.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Din. Comp. o. o.</td>
<td>Compagni (Dino), 'Storia, ovvero Cronaca Fiorentina, lib. o. pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dittam.</td>
<td>'Il Dittamondo' di Fazio degli Uberti, lib. o. cap. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eriz. Giorn.</td>
<td>Erizzo (Sebastiano), 'Le Séi Giornate.'</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fav. Esop. o.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamento delle 'Favole d' Esopo,' pág. o. (Testo a penña, citato nel Vocabolario.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fior. Vt. c. o.</td>
<td>'Fiore di Virtù,' cap. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fir.</td>
<td>Firenzuola (Agnolo), Traduzione dell' 'A- sino d'Oro d'Apuléo,' pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Firenz. Asin.</td>
<td>'Diálogo delle Bellizze delle Don- ne,' pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— As. d' Or. o.</td>
<td>Disc. an. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— disc. an. o.</td>
<td>'Discorso degli Animali,' pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Luc. o. o.</td>
<td>'I Lucidi,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— nov. o.</td>
<td>'Novella,' novella o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Trin. o. o.</td>
<td>'Trináxia,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fosc.</td>
<td>Fóscolo (Ugo), 'Esame Crítico de' Commenta- tóri di Dante.'</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fr. Giord.</td>
<td>Fra Giordano da Ripalda, 'Prédiche,' pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fra Giord. o.</td>
<td>S. Pred. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— S. Pred. o.</td>
<td>'Testo (a penña) Salviati, prédica o. (Citato nel Vocabolario.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fr. Guitt.</td>
<td>Fra Guittone d' Arézzo, 'Lettete,' letras- tera o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fra Guitt. lett. o.</td>
<td>Barberino (Francisco), 'Documenti d' A- móre,' poesia, pág. o. verso o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fr. Sacch.</td>
<td>Frisi (Paolo), 'Elólogo di Galileo Galilei.'</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fris. Elog. Galil.</td>
<td>'Istoria e Dimostrazioni intorno alle Macchie Solari, e loro accidenti,' pág. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gall.</td>
<td>Mach. Sol. o.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gall. o.</td>
<td>Ganganelli (Giovan-Vincenzo António [Papa Clemente XIV.]), 'Lettete.'</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>—— Mach. Sol. o.</td>
<td>Ganganelli (Giovan-Vincenzo António) [Papa Clemente XIV.], 'Lettete.'</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### TABLE OF ABBREVIATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gell.</td>
<td>Gelli (Giovam-Battista), 'La Circe,' diálogo o. pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Circ. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Giamb. l. o.</td>
<td>Giambullari (Pier-Francéscuo), 'Stória d' Europa,' libr. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gio. &amp; Giov. Vill. l. o. c. o. o.</td>
<td>Villani (Giovanni), 'Stória,' libr. o. cap. o. núm. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Giral. lett.</td>
<td>Giraldi (Giraldo), 'Lettere.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gold. — Avvent.</td>
<td>Goldoni (Carlo), 'L' Avventurière Onorato,' comédia.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gr. — S. Gir. o. o.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamento de' Grádi de San Giró-lamo,' cap. o. pag. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guar. Past. Fid. o. o.</td>
<td>Guarini (Giovam-Battista), 'Pastor Fido,' atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guicc. — Stor. o. o.</td>
<td>Guicciardini (Francéscuo), 'Stória de Bália,' libr. o. pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Stor. Ital.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guid. — o.</td>
<td>Guido Giúdice dalle Colóinne di Messéina, Volgarizzamento della 'Stória della Guér- ra Troiána,' pág. o. (Testo a péna, citádo nel Vocabolário.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Incer. c. o.</td>
<td>'Rime Antíche d' Incerti Autórí,' canzóne o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lab. o.</td>
<td>Védi Bocc. Lab. Laber.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lasc. Sibill. o. o.</td>
<td>Grazzini (Anton-Francéscuo) déto il Lásca, 'La Sibilla,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Spir. o. o.</td>
<td>— 'La Spirítúta,' comédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lib. Cur. Malatt.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamento del 'Libro, ossía Trattáto della Cúra di tutte le Malattío,' (Testo a péna, citádo nel Vocabolário.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Libr. Adorn. Donn.</td>
<td>'Libro dégli Adoraménti delle Dónne,' (Testo a péna, citádo nel Vocabolário.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lipp. M. o. o. — Malm. o. o.</td>
<td>Lippi (Lorenzó), 'Il Malmantile Racquier- státo,' canto o. stánza o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Liv. dec. o.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamento della 'Déche (Príma e Térza) di Tito Lívio,' déca o. (Testo a péna, citádo nel Vocabolário.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lod. Nov.</td>
<td>Lódoli (Francesco), 'Novélle.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lor. Med. c. o.</td>
<td>Médici (Lorenzo dé'), 'Canzóni a Bállo, canzóne o.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviation</td>
<td>Description</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nenc. o.</td>
<td>'La Nência,' stànza o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arid. Prolog.</td>
<td>(Lorenzino dé'), 'Aridósio,' comédia, Prólogo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o. o.</td>
<td>'Aridósio,' atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mach.</td>
<td>Machiavelli (Niccolò), 'Istorie Fiorentine,'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stor. Fior. l.o.</td>
<td>lib. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Com.</td>
<td>'Comédie,'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lett.</td>
<td>'Lettère,'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mandrag.</td>
<td>'La Mondragora,' comédia.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Princ.</td>
<td>'Il Principe,'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maestruzz. o. o.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamento della 'Sómma Pisanella, detta il Maestruzzo,' lib. o. cap. o. (Testo a pénya, citato nel Vocabolario.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maff. Mer. o. o.</td>
<td>Maffei (Scipione), 'Mérope,' tragédia, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matt. Fran.</td>
<td>Franzés (Matteo), 'Rime Burlsche,' vol. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Franz. Rim. o.o.</td>
<td>pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matt.-Vill. o. o.</td>
<td>Villani (Matteo), 'Stória,' lib. o. cap. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cin. o.</td>
<td>Cino da Pistóia, 'Rime,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metast. Artas. o. o.</td>
<td>Metastásio (Pietro), 'Artasérse,' drámma, atto o. scena o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lett.</td>
<td>'Lettère,'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miliz. Art. Dis.</td>
<td>Militia (Francisco), 'Dizionario delle Belle Arti del Diséngo.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mor. S. Greg. &amp; Gregor. o. o.</td>
<td>Vedi Zan. da Strat.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nov. Ant.</td>
<td>'Il Novellino, ossia Cénto Novelle Antiche,' novella o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ovid. Pist.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamento delle 'Pistole d'Ovidio.' (Testo a pénya, citato nel Vocabolário.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pall.</td>
<td>Pallavicino, 'Concilio de Trénto.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pass.</td>
<td>Passavanti (Fra Jacopo), 'Spéchio di Vera Penitenza, pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Passav. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pataff. o.</td>
<td>Petrárca (Francisco), 'Rime.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pecor. g. o. n. o.</td>
<td>'Rime,' sonetto o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petr. s. o.</td>
<td>canzone o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c. o.</td>
<td>'Lettère. Familiari.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TABLE ON ABBREVIATIONS</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tr.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tri.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trionf.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Am.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Amor.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fam.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mort.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temp.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>c.o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Uom. ill. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pignu. Fav.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poliz. St. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pros. Fior. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Red. annot. Ditir.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cons. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ditir. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ins. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lett. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vip. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ricett. Fior. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rim. Ant. p. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ros. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sacch. n. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rim. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Op. div. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sag. Nat. esp. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salv. Avvert. vol. o. l. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Granch. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spin. o. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Salvini (Anton-Maria),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pròse Toscàne',</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pag. o.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scal. S. Agost.</td>
<td>Volgarizzamento della 'Scôla del Paradîso,' attribuita a Sant' Agostino. (Têsto a pênna, citato nel Vocabolario.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------</td>
<td>-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Segn. Crist. instr.</td>
<td>Segneri (Pâolo), 'Il Cristiânno Instruito nella sua Lègge,' parte o. ragionamento o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o. o.</td>
<td>Mann. Marz. o. 'Màna dell' ânima,' mèse di Márzo, giorno o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Nov. o.</td>
<td>————, mèse di Novembre, giorno o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sen.</td>
<td>————, Volgarizzamento delle 'Pistole di Sêneca,' pistolâ o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— Pist. o.</td>
<td>————, Ser Giovânni Fiorentino, 'Il Pecoròn,' giornàta o. novélâ o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ser Giov. Fior.</td>
<td>————, Gio. Fior. Pecor. g. o. n. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pecor.</td>
<td>————, Soave (Francésco) 'Novélle Morâli.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cor. g. o. n. o.</td>
<td>————, St. Agost. Citt. Dio. Volgarizzamento della 'Città di Dio' di Sant' Agostino, lib. o. cap. o. (Têsto a pênna, citato nel Vocabolario.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sod. Colt. o.</td>
<td>————, Stor. Sémif. o. Volgarizzamento della 'Stôria di Sêmifónte,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>St. Agost. Citt. Dio.</td>
<td>————, Tass. Am. o. o. 'Tâsso (Torquàto), 'Amínta, Fâvola Bosc-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O. o.</td>
<td>————, chérécia,' átò o scéna o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>————, Ger. o. o.</td>
<td>————, Teor. Verb. Ital. part. o. §. o. 'Teôrica de' Vèrbi Italianî,' di Giuseppe Compagnônî, párte o. parágrafo o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>————, Tass. Am. o. o.</td>
<td>————, Tolom. lett. Tolomèi (Cláudio), 'Lettêre.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>————, Tratt. segr. cos.</td>
<td>————, 'Trattâtò delle Segrête cose delle Dònnè.' (Têsto a pênna, citato nel Vocabolario.)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>donn.</td>
<td>————, Vanzon (Carlo Antônio), 'Grammatica Ragionàta della Lingua Italianâ.'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vanz.</td>
<td>————, Varchi (Benedetto), Traduzione della 'Con-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>————, solazione Filosófica di Boëzio, lib. o. pró-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Varch.</td>
<td>————, sa &amp; ríma o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>————, Ercol. o. 'Ercolâno, ossia Ragionamiento sulle Lingue,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boez. o. o.</td>
<td>————, Rim. o. 'Rîme,' pág. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>————, Sen. ben. o. o. Traduzione dé' libri dé' 'Beneficzj di Sêne-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>————, ca,' lib. o. cap. o.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vas.</td>
<td>————, Vasari (Giôrgio), 'Trattâtà della Pittûra.'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| Vill.                | ————, Vêdi Gio. & Giov. Vill.
TABLE OF ABBREVIATIONS.

Vinc. Mart. rim. o. Martelli (Vincenzo), 'Rime e Letteere,' pág. o
Vit. S. Ant. 'Vita di Sant' Antonino.' (Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolário)

- S. Cater. '—— di Santa Caterina da Siéna.'
- S. Franc. '—— di San Francêscô.'
- S. G. Bat. '—— di San Giovam-Battista.'
- S. Gio. Batt. '—— di San Giovam-Battista, MS. della Libreria de' Guadagni, pág. o. (Citato nel Vocabolário.)
- S. Giov. Guald. (Guad. lib.) o. '—— di San Giovam-Battista, MS. della Libreria de' Guadagni, pág. o. (Citato nel Vocabolário.)
- SS. PP. o. o. Volgarizzamento delle 'Vite de' Santi Pátri, vol. o. pág. o.
- Pad. o. o. Zanôbi da Sraa, Volgarizzamento de' Morali di San Gregório Mâgno,' lib. o. núm. o.
Zibald. Andr. o. o. 'Zibaldone, ovvero Libro di Vârie Côse,' testo a penna di Andrêa Andreini, parte o. pág. o. (Citato nel Vocabolário.)
ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

INTRODUCTION.

Grammar is the art of speaking and writing correctly. Speaking and writing are the expression of our thoughts by words.

Words may be considered as articulate sounds, or as signs of our thoughts.

Words considered as articulate sounds, are formed of syllables, and syllables of letters.

Syllables consist of one or more letters pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a word, or part of a word.

Words that consist of one syllable, are called monosyllables; those that consist of two syllables, are called disyllables; and those that consist of more syllables, are called polysyllables.

Letters are certain figures or characters, which represent sounds and articulations.

Sounds are simple emissions of the voice; and articulations are the modifications which sounds receive by the movements of the organs of speech. The letters which represent the sounds, as a, e, i, &c., are called vowels; and those which represent the articulations, as b, c, d, &c., are called consonants, because they can only be sounded with a vowel.

The union of two vowels, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, is called a diphthong; and that of three vowels pronounced in like manner, is called a triphthong.

Words considered as signs of our thoughts, are divided into several classes, which constitute the different parts of speech. These in Italian are nine; viz. the article, noun, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection.

Of these nine Parts of Speech, the article, noun, pronoun, verb, and participle, are variable, that is, change their termination; the rest are invariable.
INTRODUCTION.

The Article is a word placed before a noun to denote the extent of its signification; as, il, lo, la, 'the':—il libro, 'the book'; lo sprîne, 'the spur'; la casa, 'the house'.

√ The Noun is either substantive, or adjective.

A Substantive noun is a word, which serves to denote a person or thing; as, Piétro, 'Peter'; sole, 'sun'; virtù, 'virtue'.

Substantive nouns are either proper or common.

A proper noun is one, which is individually applicable to a person or thing; as, Césare, 'Cesar'; Roma, 'Rome'.

A common noun is one, which may be applied to all persons or things of the same kind; as, uómo, 'man'; città, 'city'.

Some common nouns are also called collective, from their presenting to the mind the idea of a collection of persons or things; as, gente, 'people'; esército, 'army'.

An Adjective noun is a word added to a substantive to express its quality; as, dótto, 'learned'; bêlla, 'beautiful':—un uómo dótto, 'a learned man'; una bêlla città, 'a beautiful city'.

Adjectives may express the quality of an object, either absolutely, that is, without any relation to other objects, or relatively to other objects; which produces different degrees of qualification: these have been reduced to the following three, viz. the positive, comparative, and superlative.

The positive is the adjective itself, expressing the quality of an object, without any relation of comparison; as ricco, 'rich'; pôvero, 'poor'.

The comparative is the adjective expressing a relation of superiority, inferiority, or equality, between two or more objects in comparison; as, più, méno, or si ricco, 'more, less, or so rich'; pìù, méno, or si pôvero, 'more, less, or so poor':—Piétro è pìù, o méno ricco di Tommáso, 'Peter is more, or less rich than Thomas'; Tommáso è pìù, o méno pôvero di Páolo, 'Thomas is more, or less poor than Paul'; Piétro e Tommáso sono si ácchi, o si pôveri còme Páolo, 'Peter and Thomas are so rich, or so poor as Paul'.

The Superlative is the adjective expressing the quality of the object in the highest degree of superiority, or the lowest degree of inferiority.

There are two kinds of superlative, the relative, and the absolute.

The relative superlative expresses the superiority or inferiority of an object, with relation to others; as, il più, or il méno ricco, 'the most, or the least rich'; il pìù, o il méno pôvero, 'the most, or the least poor':—Tommáso è il pìù, o il méno ricco, Páolo è il pìù, o il méno pôvero, di tutti; 'Thomas is the most, or the least rich, or Paul is the most, or the least poor, of all'.
INTRODUCTION.

The absolute superlative shows that the object spoken of possesses a quality in the superlative degree, but without reference to any other; as, ricchissimo, 'very rich'; poverissimo, 'very poor'.

A great number of Italian nouns are susceptible of a change of termination, which, modifying the primitive idea expressed by them, augments or diminishes their signification; as, uomo, 'man'; omone, 'large man'; ruscello, 'brook'; ruscelletto, 'small brook'. The nouns thus altered, are called augmentatives and diminutives.

With nouns are usually classed the numerals, which are either cardinal, or ordinal.
- Cardinal numbers are those, which determine a collection of objects, with regard to their number or quantity; as, uno, 'one'; dieci, 'ten'.
- Ordinal numbers determine objects with regard to their order or arrangement; as, primo, 'first'; decimo, 'tenth'.

Italian nouns are varied by gender and number.
- Gender is a division of nouns according to sex. Nouns denoting males are masculine; nouns denoting females are feminine. This division, which properly regards only nouns having sex, is in Italian extended also to all other nouns, though they have no sex; so that every noun is either of the masculine or feminine gender. But there are certain nouns which belong to both genders, and these are said to be of the common gender.
- Number is the designation of one or more objects. There are two numbers, viz. the singular and plural. The singular designates one single person or thing; the plural, more than one person or thing.

The various relations of nouns, which in Latin are denoted by different terminations, or cases, are expressed in Italian by certain prepositions placed before them; and for the nominative and accusative of the Latin, have been substituted the terms subjective, and objective; and for the genitive, dative, and ablative,—the terms relation of possession, of attribution, and of derivation.

A pronoun is a word used instead of a noun, already expressed, to prevent its frequent repetition; and like the noun is either substantive or adjective.
- Substantive pronouns are either personal, conjunctive, relative, or interrogative; and adjective pronouns are either possessive, demonstrative, or indefinite.
INTRODUCTION.

The personal pronouns are those, which mark the persons.
The persons are three, viz. the first, second, and third. The first is the person speaking; as, to, 'I'; noi, 'we':—the second is the person spoken to; as, tu, 'thou'; voi, 'you':—and the third is the person spoken of; as, egli, 'he'; ella, 'she'; egli, ella, 'they'.

The conjunctive pronouns are those, which are always joined to a verb. They are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into conjunctive, properly speaking; as, mi, 'me', or 'to me'; ti, 'thee', or 'to thee'; si, 'one's self', or 'to ones self':—mi duole, 'it grieves me'; ti parla, 'he speaks to thee'; si lodà, 'he praises himself':—and relative conjunctive pronouns; as, ne, 'of it, of him, of her', or 'of them':—ne vorrei veder la fine, 'I should like to see the end of it'.

The relative pronouns are those, which refer to a person or thing, that has been before spoken of; as, chi, 'who' or 'he that'; che, il quale, 'who', or 'which that':—chi si unì alla vita, 'who', or 'he that humbles himself exalts himself': l'uomo, che or il quale scrive, 'the man, who or that writes'; il libro, che or il quale to leggo, 'the book, which or that I read'.

The person or thing, which relative pronouns refer to, is called the antecedent.

The interrogative pronouns are those, which are used to interrogate, or ask a question; as, chi? 'who?' che? 'what?' quale? 'which?':—chi è? 'who is it?' che siete? 'what are you doing?' quale volète? 'which will you have?'

The possessive pronouns are those, which mark the possession of a person or a thing; as, mio, 'my', or 'mine'; tuo, 'thy', or 'thine'; suo, 'his, her, hers', or 'its':—mio fratello, 'my brother'; il tuo cappello, 'thy hat'; questo è suo, 'this is his, hers', or 'its'.

The demonstrative pronouns are those, which point out the particular person or thing of which we speak; as, questo, 'this'; quello, 'that'; c esto, 'that near you':—questo giovine, 'this youth'; quello specchio, 'that looking-glass'; questo libro, 'that book near you'.

The indefinite pronouns are those, which express a person or thing in a general and unlimited sense; as, alcuno, 'some one'; ogni, 'every'; niente, 'nothing'.

Italian pronouns, like the nouns, are varied by gender and number.

A Verb is a word, which by itself implies affirmation; as, essere, 'to be':—E SserE amabile, 'to be amiable': and necessarily supposes a subject and a quality, to which it affirms that the subject is, or is not attributed; as, la virtù è amabile,
INTRODUCTION.

‘virtue is amiable’; la PIGRIZIA non è LODÉVOLE, ‘slothfulness is not laudable’.

There is but one verb, strickly speaking; essere, ‘to be’; because this alone expresses affirmation. But there are other words, which in themselves contain both the verb essere, and the quality, which it affirms to belong to the subject of which we speak; as, amàre (esser amante), ‘to love (to be a lover of)’; sprezzàre (esser sprezzante), ‘to despise (to be a despiser of)’; egli ama (egli è amante), ‘he loves (he is a lover of)’; ella sprezza (ella è sprezzante), ‘she despises (she is a despiser of)’; and to these has also been given the name of verbs, and they are used to express the quality of the subject, or the action it performs or it undergoes.

Verbs are commonly divided into active, passive, neuter, pronominal, and unipersonal.

Active verbs are those, that express an action, which falls or may immediately fall upon an object; as, amàrè, ‘to love’;—amàre la virtù, ‘to love virtue’.

The object upon which the action of the verb falls, is called the regimen or complement of this verb. Besides this first complement, which is called direct, many active verbs may have a second complement, which is called indirect; as, scrivere, ‘to write’; scrivere una lettera, ‘to write a letter’; scrivere una lettera ad un amico, ‘to write a letter to a friend.’ This last, however, properly speaking, is rather a complement of the preposition, which always precedes it.

Passive verbs are those, that express an action which falls upon the subject; as essere amato, ‘to be loved’;—la virtù è amata, ‘virtue is loved’.

Neuter verbs are those, that express a state of being, or an action which does not fall directly upon an object; as, dormire, ‘to sleep’; nuocere, ‘to benoxious’.

Pronominal verbs are those, that are varied with two pronouns of the same person; as, vender-si, ‘to sell’ or ‘to be sold’;—quasto libro si vende caro, ‘this book sells’, or ‘is sold dear’.

To pronominal, properly, belong reflexive and reciprocal verbs.

Reflective verbs are those, that express either the action of a subject which acts upon itself; as, difender-si, ‘to defend oneself’;—to mi difendo, ‘I defend myself’; or an action of the subject, which terminates finally in itself; as, far-si un dovere, ‘to make to oneself a duty’;—lègì sì fa un dovere, ‘he makes to himself a duty’.

Reciprocal verbs are those, that express the action of several subjects, who act respectively the one upon the other; as, aiutàr-si; ‘to assist each other’; noi ci aiutiamo, ‘we assist each other’.
INTRODUCTION.

Unipersonal, or, as they are usually called, impersonal verbs, are those that are used only in the third person singular of each tense; as, accadré, 'to happen': accadré, 'it happens'; accadde, 'it happened'; accaderá, 'it will happen'.

There are moreover two verbs, which generally assist to vary other verbs, and which, consequently, are called auxiliary verbs: these are, avere, 'to have'; and essere, 'to be': avere letto, 'to have read'; essere partito, 'to (be) have departed'.

Italian verbs are varied by mood, tense, number, and person. Mood is a particular form of the verb, which shows the manner in which the action, or the state of being, is represented.

There are five moods, viz. the infinitive, indicative, conjunctive, conditional, and imperative.

The infinitive represents the action in an indefinite manner, and without distinction of person or number; as, scrivere, 'to write'.

The indicative represents the action absolutely, and without dependence on any other word; as, ta scrivo, 'I write'.

The conjunctive represents the action as depending upon another verb with which it is connected by a conjunction; as, bisognava, che ta scriva, 'it is necessary, that I write'.

The conditional represents the action with dependence upon a condition; as, ta scriverei, se potessi, 'I should write, if I could'.

The imperative represents the action in commanding, exhorting, or intreating; as, scrivi, 'write thou'; scrivete, 'write ye'; scriviamo, 'let us write'.

Each of these moods, except the imperative, has different tenses.

Tense is a distinction of time, which shows when the action is done. Time, strictly speaking, is either present, past, or future.

The present denotes the action doing by a subject at the very time in which we are speaking; as, ta canto, 'I sing'.

The past or preterite denotes the action done by a subject before the time in which we are speaking; as, ta cantai, 'I sang'.

The future denotes the action to be done by a subject after the time in which we are speaking; as, ta cantero, 'I will sing'.

The preterite is divided into imperfect and perfect.

The imperfect expresses an action done in a time past, but present in respect to another action done in a time also past; as, ta cantàva, quando vòi entraste, 'I was singing, when you came in'.

The perfect expresses an action done in a time completely
INTRODUCTION.

past, and without reference to any other action; as Io cantà: un' aria, 'I sang an air'.

Tenses are either simple or compound.

Simple tenses are those, which are formed without the assistance of either the auxiliary verbs avere, 'to have', or essere, 'to be'; as, parlò, 'I speak'; venni, 'I came'; lodò, 'I will praise'.

Compound tenses are those, which are formed of the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb avere, 'to have', or essere, 'to be', and the participle of the verb varied; as, ho parlato, 'I have spoken'; sono venuto, 'I (am) have come'; avverò lodato, or sarò lodato, 'I will have praised,' or 'will be praised'.

Each tense contains two numbers; the singular and plural.

The number is singular, when one single subject causes the action of the verb; as, Io mangio, 'I eat';—and it is plural, when more subjects contribute to the same action; as, noi mangiamo, 'we eat'.

Each number has three persons, which are denoted by the personal pronouns, io, 'I'; tu, 'thou'; egli, 'he', or ella, 'she'; in the singular;—and noi, 'we'; voi, 'you'; egli, or ella, 'they'; in the plural; as, Io vedo, 'I see'; tu vedi, 'thou seest'; egli, or ella, vede, 'he or she sees';—noi vediamo, 'we see'; voi vedete, 'you see'; egli, or ella, vedono, 'they see'.

The assemblage of several verbs, forming all their moods, tenses, numbers, and persons, according to the same rule, is called a conjugation.

Such verbs as conform to the rule of any conjugation, are called regular; and such as differ in any respect, are called irregular.

Verbs which are not used in certain tenses, numbers, or persons, are called defective.

The Participle is a word which partakes at the same time of the nature of the verb and of the adjective; as, amante, 'loving'; amato, 'loved.' It partakes of the nature of the verb, because it has its signification, and has reference to time; as, amante (che ama) Dio, 'loving (who loves) God'; amato (che è amato) da Dio, 'loved (who is loved) by God'; and it partakes of the nature of the adjective, because, like an adjective, it qualifies a noun; as, uesto onorato, 'honored man'; virtù provata, 'tried virtue'.

Participles are divided into present and past.

The present participle expresses the action of the subject, or the quality of a noun, at the moment in which we speak; as, amante, 'loving':—domna amante, 'a loving woman'.

The past participle expresses the action or quality as per-
fected or past; as, temuto, 'feared':—castigo TEMUTO, 'fear'd punishment'.

With the participle is usually classed the GERUND, which, like the participle, is an inflexion of the verb, but has nothing in common with the adjective.

Italian participles are varied by gender and number.

An ADVERB is a word, which serves to modify a verb, an adjective, or another adverb, expressing the manner, or circumstances of its signification; as, piu, 'more'; moltò, 'very'; distintamente, 'distinctly':—egli parla DISTINTAMENTE, 'he speaks distinctly'; siei molto savio, 'you are very wise'; piu sinceramente, 'more sincerely'.

Adverbs are divided into those of quality, order, time, place, quantity, comparison, &c.

Adverbs of quality are those, which express the manner in which things are done; as, saviamente, 'wisely'; elegantemente, 'elegantly'; inconsideratamente, 'inconsiderately':—egli pensa SAVIAMENTE, 'he thinks wisely'; ella scrive ELEGANTEMENTE, 'she writes elegantly'; hanno agito INCONSIDERATAMENTE, 'they have acted inconsiderately'.

Adverbs of order serve to express the arrangement of things in regard to one another; as, prima, 'first'; poi, 'then': da principio, 'before'; in seguilo, 'afterward':—PRIMA andremo in Francia, 'we will go first to France'; poi in Italia, 'then to Italy'; DA PRINCIPIO si deve evitare il male, 'we must before avoid evil'; IN SEGUITO si deve far del bene, 'afterward we must do good'.

Adverbs of time are those, which express some relation of time; as, ieri, 'yesterday'; oggi, 'to-day'; domani, 'to-morrow':—lo vidi ieri, 'I saw him yesterday'; vieni oggi, 'come to-day'; partiro domani, 'I shall depart to-morrow'.

Adverbs of place serve to denote the situation or the distance of an object; as, qua, 'here'; là, 'there'; vicino, 'near'; lontano, 'far':—son qui, 'I am here'; guardate là, 'look there'; sta qui vicino, 'he lives near here'; è troppo LONTANO, 'it is too far'.

Adverbs of quantity are those, which modify an object in relation to quantity; as, poco, 'little'; assai, 'much': abbastanza, 'enough':—parla ASSAI, 'he speaks much'; riflette poco, 'he reflects little'; ne ha ABBASTANZA, 'he has enough of it'.

Adverbs of comparison serve to denote the different degrees of quality of the objects compared; as, piu, 'more'; meno, 'less'; costi—come, 'so—as':—l'onore vede più delle ricchezze, 'honor is worth more than riches'; il suo cuore non è MEN bello del viso,
INTRODUCTION.

her heart is not less beautiful than her face'; ègli non è si docile come è vivace, 'he is not so docile as he is lively'.

Adverbs are either simple or compound. Simple adverbs are those which consist of a simple word; as, qui, 'here'; poi, 'then'; bene, 'well'; and compound adverbs are those, which consist of an adjective and the word mènte, 'manner'; as, dolcemente (con dolce mènte), 'sweetly' (in a sweet manner). There are besides several expressions, which in several words announce the same idea that might be expressed by one adverb; as, di buon gràdo, 'willingly'; quanto prima, 'very soon'; all'improvviso, 'unexpectedly'; and these are called adverbial phrases.

A preposition is a word, which is placed before a noun, a pronoun, or a verb, to show its relation to some other word; as, in, 'in'; con, 'with'; senza, 'without':—non è in casa, 'he is not (in the house) at home'; verrò con voi, 'I will come with you'; senza andar più alle lunghe, 'without going any further'.

Prepositions have several denominations, viz. of place, order, time, union, opposition, &c. according to the several relations they express.

The word which follows the preposition is called its regimen or complement.

A conjunction is a word, which serves to join words and sentences together; as, e, 'and'; ne, 'nor, neither'; ma, 'but'; nondimèno, 'nevertheless':—bella e buona, 'handsome and good'; nè mangia nè beve, 'he neither eats nor drinks'; egli è povero ma onorato, 'he is poor but honored'; ella è molto giovane, e nondimèno è molto sùcia, 'she is yet very young, and nevertheless she is very wise'.

Besides the general use of connecting words and sentences together, conjunctions sometimes express the particular point of view in which the mind considers the words and sentences so connected; hence the division of conjunctions into explicative, adversative, alternative, conclusive, &c.

An interjection is a word, which is used to express an emotion or affection of the mind; as, ah! 'ah!' oh! 'oh!' aïmè! 'alas!'

The affections of the mind may be of joy, grèf, indignation, contempt, &c. which give to the interjections different denominations.

Of the foregoing Parts of Speech, some are occasionally employed, when they are not absolutely necessary to grammatical construction, but serve, nevertheless, to give strength and energy to the discourse; as, giù, mica, pùre, mà:—sìl Dio non voglia, 'may God forbid'; non son mìa stèvole, 'they are not
INTRODUCTION.

"fables'"; la cosa andò pur così, 'the affairs went off so'; mà si,
che io le conosco, 'yes, that I know them'. These words, when
so used, are called _expletives._

'Words form the whole subject of Grammar. They may
be either expressed by the _voice_, or represented in _writing_ by
characters.

The collection of letters of which the words of a language
are formed, is called the _alphabet._

That part of Grammar, which teaches how to express the
sounds of words, is called _pronunciation._

That part which treats of the different sorts of words and
their various modifications, is called _analogy._

That part of Grammar, which treats of the connexion and
right order of words among themselves, is called _syntax._

That part, which teaches how to write words correctly, is
called _orthography._
ITALIAN ALPHABET.

The Italian Alphabet contains twenty-two letters, which the modern Romans, following the Latin, name and pronounce as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pronounce</th>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pronounce</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>ah</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>em</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>bay</td>
<td>N</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>en</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>chay</td>
<td>O</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>day</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>pe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>ay</td>
<td>Q</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>qu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>ayf</td>
<td>R</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>er</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>jay</td>
<td>S</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>es</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>ahk-kah</td>
<td>T</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>te</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>ee</td>
<td>U</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>oo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>yay</td>
<td>V</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>ve</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>ayl-lay</td>
<td>Z</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>zeeta</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The Florentines, on the authority of the "Fathers of the Language," * name and pronounce them as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pronounce</th>
<th>Figure</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Pronounce</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>ah</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>emme</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>bee</td>
<td>N</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>enne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>chee</td>
<td>O</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>dee</td>
<td>P</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>pee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>ay</td>
<td>Q</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>qu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>ayf-say</td>
<td>R</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>erre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>jee</td>
<td>S</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>esse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>ahk-kah</td>
<td>T</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>tee</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>ee cor'-to</td>
<td>U</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>oo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>ee loon'-go</td>
<td>V</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>vi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>ayl-lay</td>
<td>Z</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>zeeta</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* E di questi cotali sono molti idiotti, che non sopraganno l’ABBRICOL. (Dant. Conv.)

Egli il crederébe all’era, che guar- 

dando vii, egli credérebbe, che voi sa- 
peste l’ABBRICOL. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 5.)

E fe’ ridicolare tanto badati, quante let- 
ters ha nell’ABBRICOL. (Glov. Vill. 1. 1.
c. 13.)

And of such ones, there are many so ignorant, that do not know even the ah-bee-chee.

He might think so, if looking at you at the same time, he should think that you had learned your a-b-c.

And caused so many convents to be built as there are letters in the a-b-c.
ALPHABET.

Of these twenty-two letters, $A$, $E$, $I$, $O$, $U$, are vowels; $B$, $C$, $D$, $F$, $G$, $L$, $M$, $N$, $P$, $Q$, $R$, $S$, $T$, $V$, $Z$, are consonants; $J$ is considered as a vowel; and $H$ is a simple sign, having no sound.

The Latin letters $K$, $K$, $X$, $Y$, have no place in the Italian Alphabet.

Instead of $K$, either $c$ or $ch$ is used; as,

\begin{center}
$Senza fallo & calendo sar\hat{a}$
\end{center}
Buffalmacco will be captain.

\begin{center}
$Dicta un chirie ed un$
\end{center}
Sanctus.

He said a Kyrie and a Sanctus.

$X$ is sometimes translated into $s$ or $ss$, and sometimes into $cc$; as,

\begin{center}
$Acciocch\hat{e}$ io prima esempio\hfill So that I might first set the
dba a tutti voi.\hfill example to all of you.
\end{center}

They sent a young man, nephew of theirs, called Alexander.

\begin{center}
$Un giovane lor nipote, che$
\end{center}
avea nome Alessandro, mandarono.

It [the wind] leaves it [the dust] upon the high palaces and the lofty towers.

\begin{center}
$Sopra gli alti palagi, e sopra$
\end{center}
$F$ eccelle torri la lascia.

The word 'Xerxes' is written with an $a$, — Sérse; but the word 'Xanthus' is written with an $x$, — Xánto, 'the Scamander'; to distinguish it from Sánto, 'Saint.'

For $Y$ has been substituted $i$; as,

\begin{center}
$Veggio lungo d\'lago Avern\hat{i}, e Sigiri.$\hfill I see far from the Avernian and Stygian lakes.
\end{center}

The English and German $W$, in translating proper names, is commonly changed into $u$ when it is a vowel, and into $v$ or $g$ when it is a consonant; as, Newton, 'Newton': Vallenstein, 'Wallenstein'; Galles, 'Wales.'
PART I.

ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.

CHAPTER I.

SOUNDS OF THE VOWELS.

A is sounded like a in the English word father; as,

(Pronounce)

ara, ahr'-rah, altar;
alma, ahr'-meh, soul.

E has two sounds, one open, the other close:

E open is sounded like ai in the English word

fair; as,

tema, tai'-mah, theme;
vena, vai'-nah, oats.

E close is sounded like ai in the English word

pain; as,

tega, lai'-gah, alliance;
meda, mai'-lah, apple.

I is sounded like ee in English; or like i in the

English word machine; as,

inho, een'-no, hymn;
lite, lee'-tay, strife.

O has two sounds, one open, the other close:

O open is sounded like o in the English word

cord; as,

otta, bot'-lah, blow;
rosa, ro'-sah, rose.
PRONUNCIATION.

_ O close _ is sounded like _ o _ in the English word _ bone _; as,

- _ foll-ah, _
- _ o-rah, _

 crowd;
 hour.

_ U _ is sounded like _ oo _ in the English word _ ooze _; as,

- _ oo-so, _
- _ too-to, _

 use;
 all.

When these vowels are at the end of words marked with an accent, they have a quick and sharp sound, which very seldom occurs in the English language; as,

- _ bon-tah', _
- _ ak-fay', _
- _ bah-lee', _
- _ fah-lo', _
- _ tree-boo', _

 goodness;
 in truth;
 bailiff;
 bonfire;
 tribe.

[For Rules how to Determine when the vowels _ E, O_, are Pronounced _open_,
or _close_, see Appendix, A.]

CHAPTER II.

PRONUNCIATION OF THE CONSONANTS.

ITALIAN consonants, except _ C, G, R, S, Z_, are pronounced as in English.

**C** followed by the vowels _ e, i_, is pronounced like _ ch_ in the English words _ cherry, chilly_; as,

- _ céna, _
- _ cibo, _

 supper;
 food.

**G** followed by the vowels _ e, i_, is pronounced like _ j_ in English; or like _ g_ in the English words _ gem, singer_; as,

- _ ejo, _
- _ eiro _

 frost;
 turn.

**R** in the beginning of words, or in the middle
CONSONANTS.

when it begins a syllable, is pronounced like \( r \) in the English words ruin, marine; as,

\[
\text{ru} \text{pe}_t, \quad \text{ro} \text{o} \text{r} \text{ay}, \quad \text{rek};
\]
\[
\text{ma} \text{h} \text{r} \text{ay}, \quad \text{bea}.
\]

But at the end of words, or when it ends a syllable, or when preceded by another consonant, or when doubled, it has a rolling sound to which there is nothing similar in the English language, and which can be acquired only by oral instruction; as,

\[
\text{pe} \text{r}, \quad \text{payr}, \quad \text{for};
\]
\[
\text{ér} \text{to}, \quad \text{ayr} \text{-to}, \quad \text{steep};
\]
\[
\text{ó} \text{tr} \text{o}, \quad \text{ak} \text{-tro}, \quad \text{black};
\]
\[
\text{ó} \text{rr} \text{ido}, \quad \text{or} \text{-reo-do}, \quad \text{horrid}.
\]

in the beginning of words, or when preceded or followed by another consonant, or when doubled, is pronounced sharp, like \( s \) in the English words saint, pulse, discount, assembly; as,

\[
\text{sán} \text{to}, \quad \text{sah} \text{m} \text{-to}, \quad \text{sa} \text{int};
\]
\[
\text{gé} \text{sa}, \quad \text{jai} \text{yl} \text{-sah}, \quad \text{mulberry};
\]
\[
\text{é} \text{sc} \text{a}, \quad \text{af} \text{-skah}, \quad \text{bait};
\]
\[
\text{lé} \text{so}, \quad \text{lai} \text{yl} \text{-so}, \quad \text{boiled}.
\]

Between two vowels, and in the last syllable of all substantive and adjective nouns that end in \( ës \), \( ûs \), \( ûs \), it is pronounced flat, or soft like \( z \); or like \( s \) in the English word rose; as,

\[
\text{vís} \text{o}, \quad \text{vee} \text{-zo}, \quad \text{vi} \text{mage};
\]
\[
\text{pál} \text{ése}, \quad \text{pah} \text{-lai} \text{yl} \text{-zay}, \quad \text{manifest};
\]
\[
\text{abúso}, \quad \text{ah} \text{-boo} \text{-zo}, \quad \text{abue}.
\]
\[
\text{có} \text{n} \text{fú} \text{s} \text{a}, \quad \text{con} \text{-foo} \text{-zah}, \quad \text{confounded}.
\]

In the last syllable of all adjective nouns ending in \( ës \), \( ûs \), it is pronounced sharp; as,

\[
\text{virtuós} \text{o}, \quad \text{veer} \text{-too}, \text{-zo}, \quad \text{virtuous};
\]
\[
\text{máestós} \text{a}, \quad \text{mah} \text{-ay-sto} \text{-zo}, \quad \text{majestic}.
\]

Z cannot be submitted to certain rules. It can only be said, that, in the beginning of words, or when single, it is pronounced flat, or soft like \( dz \) in the English word Windsor; as,

\[
\text{zod} \text{iaco}, \quad \text{ds} \text{o-dec}, \text{ah} \text{-ko}, \quad \text{zodiac};
\]
\[
\text{zan} \text{zá} \text{ra}, \quad \text{ds} \text{a} \text{h}-\text{ds} \text{a} \text{h} \text{-rah}, \quad \text{gnat}.
\]
PRONUNCIATION.

When preceded by a consonant, or when followed by two vowels, or when doubled, it is pronounced *sharp*, like *ts* in the English word *benefits*; as,

- cáltza, *kahlt'-tsah*, stocking;
- grázia, *grah'-tsje-ah*, grace;
- bellézza, *bayl'-lay'-tsah*, beauty.

In the last syllable of words ending in *ánza*, *énza*, *ónza*, it is pronounced something like *z* in the English word *razor*; as,

- dánza, *dahn'-zah*, dance;
- cleménza, *klay-mayn'-zah*, clemency;
- lónza, *lon'-zah*, panther.

[For a list of Words varying from the general Rules, respecting the Pronunciation of *z*, see Appendix, B.]

CHAPTER III.

OF *J* AND *II*.

*J* is considered as a vowel in Italian. It is used instead of *ii*, at the end of words, in the plural of some nouns; * and it is sounded like *ee* in the English word *free*, each *e* being distinctly pronounced; as,

- *témp1*, *taym'-pe, e*, temples;
- *stúdi*, *stoo'-de, e*, studies.

*H* has no sound. It is only used to denote the hard sound of the consonants *c, g*, before the vowels *e, i*; as, in

- chér1co, *kay'-ree-ko*, clerk;
- chitárra, *kee-tahr'-rah*, guitar;
- ghézzo, *gay'-tsao*, Moor;
- ghío, *gee'-ro*, dormouse:

* We very often in books meet with words in which *j* is used instead of *i*, either at the beginning or in the middle of words; as in *séri* instead of *iéri*, *yesterday*; _surdico_ instead of _surdico_, *lawful*; *nóza* instead of *nóia*, *vexation*; _librázo_ instead of _librázo_, *bookseller*; but this use is disapproved by correct writers.
DOUBLE CONSONANTS.

To prolong the sound of the vowels a, e, i, o, u, in the interjections,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ah}! & \quad \text{ah}! & \quad \text{ah}! \\
\text{deh}! & \quad \text{dəy}! & \quad \text{alas}! \\
\text{ih}! & \quad \text{ēē}! & \quad \text{ih}! \\
\text{poh}! & \quad \text{pō}! & \quad \text{pooh}! \\
\text{uh}! & \quad \text{ōō}! & \quad \text{uh}!
\end{align*}
\]

To distinguish the words,*

I have, \( \text{hō}, \) \( \text{o}, \) \( \text{o}, \) or;

thou hast, \( \text{hāi}, \) \( \text{ah'ee}, \) \( \text{ō}, \) \( \text{to the}; \)

he has, \( \text{hā}, \) \( \text{ah}, \) \( \text{ā}, \) \( \text{to}; \)

they have, \( \text{hānno}, \) \( \text{ahn'-no}, \) \( \text{ānno}, \) \( \text{ahn'-no}, \) \( \text{year}. \)

And in each case it is a sign, a mark of distinction rather than a letter.

CHAPTER IV.

DOUBLE CONSONANTS.

**Ce** followed by the vowels e, i, is pronounced like *tch* in the English word *match*; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{accénto}, & \quad \text{aht-chayn'-to}, & \quad \text{accent}; \\
\text{accidio}, & \quad \text{aht-chee-dee}, & \quad \text{slaughter}.
\end{align*}
\]

**Gg** followed by the vowels e, i, is pronounced like *dg* in the English word *lodge*; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{occénto}, & \quad \text{od-jayn'-to}, & \quad \text{object}; \\
\text{occidi}, & \quad \text{od-jee-dee}, & \quad \text{now-a-days}.
\end{align*}
\]

**Ch** followed by the vowels e, i, is pronounced like *k* in the English words, *kept, keep*; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{chénto}, & \quad \text{kayn'-to}, & \quad \text{quiet}; \\
\text{cmino}, & \quad \text{kēn'-no}, & \quad \text{inclined}.
\end{align*}
\]

* Some use the grave accent instead of k to distinguish these words, writing ą, 'I have'; āi, 'thou hast'; ā, 'he has'; ānno, 'they have'; in the same way that we distinguish the words ē, 'it is'; īa, 'there'; āi, 'neither'; from ē, 'and'; īa, 'the'; nē, 'of it'; ēnō, which mode seems to be preferable, as it simplifies the orthography of the words, and dispenses with a useless letter.

2*
Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, it is pronounced like *ki* in the English word *kind*; as,

- chioue, k.yah'-vay, key;
- chioua, k.yay'-sah, church;
- chioma, k.yo'-mah, head of hair;
- chiusa, k.yoo'-sah, hedge.

*Gh* followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *g* in the English words *get, giddy*; as,

- chémbo, gaym'-bo, crooked;
- chiro, gee'-ro, dormouse.

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, it is pronounced like *gui* in the English word *guide*; as,

- chiánda, g.yahn'-dah, acorn;
- chiéra, g.yay'-rah, quiver;
- chiidòto, g.yo'-tah, glutton;
- tegheniùza, tayg-g.yoo'-sah, baking-pan.

*Gl* followed by the vowel *i*, and in all words in which *i* is followed by another vowel, is pronounced like *ll* in the English word *brilliant*; as,

- gli, 1.yee', the;
- égli, ay'-l.yee, he;
- voélia, vo'-l.yah, desire;
- cielio, chee'-l.yo, eye-brow:

But in all words in which *gli* is followed by a consonant, it is pronounced like *gl* in the English word *glimmer*; as,

- negligénte, nay-glee-jaym'-tay, negligent;
- anglicano, ahrn-glee-kahl'-no, Anglican.

It has the same sound in the words,

- anglí, ahrn-glee, Englishmen;

*Gn* followed by the vowels *a, e, i, o, u*, is pronounced something like *ni* in the English word *minion*; as,

- magóna, mah-gah'-n.yah, blemish;
- animélo, ah-n.yayl'-lo, lamb;
SYLLABLES.

incéntio,  een-ko'-nyee-to,  unknown;
biséno,  bee-so'-nyo,  need;
ignudo,  ee-n,yoo'-do,  naked.

Sc followed by the vowels e, i, is pronounced like sh in the English word shell, ship; as,
scéna,  shay'-nah,  scene;
scinia,  shec'-mek,  ape.

Sch followed by the vowels e, i, is pronounced like sk in the English words sketch, skill; as,
schéno,  skay'-no,  mockery;
schíps,  skee'-fo,  skiff.

Followed by the vowels ia, ie, io, iu, it is pronounced like sk in the English word sky; as,
schiávo,  sk,yah'-vo,  slave;
schiéna,  sk,yay'-nah,  the back;
schióppo,  sk,yop'-po,  musket;
schiúma,  sk,yoo'-mah,  froth.

CHAPTER V.

OF SYLLABLES.

CíA', ció, ciú, are pronounced like cha, cho, choo, in the English words charm, chop, choose; as,
ciálida,  chahl'-da,  wafer;
ciómpo,  chom'-po,  clown;
ciórma,  choor'-mah,  crew.

GíA, gó, giú, are pronounced like ja, jo, ju, in the English words jar, jove, jury; as,
áiullo,  jahl'-lo,  yellow;
giórno,  jor'-no,  day;
gótsó,  ju'-sto,  just.

ScíA, sció, sciú, are pronounced like sha, sho, shoo, in the English words shall, shop, shoot; as,
sciáme,  shah'-may,  swarm;
scióito,  shol'-to,  loose;
sciugáto,  shoo-gah'-to,  wiped.
PRONUNCIATION.

Guá, gué, gui, are pronounced like gua, gue, gui, in the English words language, languet, languid; as,

quánica,     gwah-n'-chah, cheek,
quèrra,      gwair'-rah, war;
quída,        gee'-dah, guide.

Quá, quá, qui, guó, are pronounced like qua, que, qui, quo, in the English words quality, question, quibble, quote; as,

quánto,     kwahnt'-to, how-much;
quesito,    kway'-sto, this;
quinto,     kween'-to, fifth;
quotidiano, kwo-tee-dee,ah'-no, daily.

CHAPTER VI.

DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS.

Italian diphthongs are so pronounced as to give to each vowel its proper sound. They are generally divided into two classes, the long and the short.

Long diphthongs are those, in which each vowel is as distinctly pronounced as if they formed each a separate syllable; as,

áe     áere,     ah',ay-ray, air;
ái     mái,      mah',ee, never;
áo     páolo,    pah',o-lo, a paul;
áu     áura,     ah',oo-rah, breeze;
ea     bórea,    bo'-ray,ah, the north-wind;
ee     veeménza, vay,ay-mayn'-zah, vehemence;
éi     éi,       lay',ee, her;
éo     éolo,    ay',o-lo, Æolus;
éu     feudo,   fay',oo-do, feud;
óì     vóì,      vo',ee, you;
óo     córte,    ko,or'-tay, cohort;
úi     colúi,    ko-loo',ee, that-one.
GENERAL RULES.

Short diphthongs are so pronounced, that, of the two vowels, one is so faintly heard as to seem blended with the other; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{id} & \quad \text{fia'to,} & \quad \text{see,ah'lo,} & \quad \text{breath;} \\
\text{it} & \quad \text{ciel'o,} & \quad \text{chee,ay'lo,} & \quad \text{heaven;} \\
\text{ió} & \quad \text{próva,} & \quad \text{pee,ö'vah,} & \quad \text{rain;} \\
\text{iu} & \quad \text{pi'óma,} & \quad \text{pee,oo'mah,} & \quad \text{feather;} \\
\text{ud} & \quad \text{gu'ánto,} & \quad \text{kwaahn'to,} & \quad \text{how-much;} \\
\text{ué} & \quad \text{guèfsa,} & \quad \text{gwayf'sah,} & \quad \text{cage;} \\
\text{uí} & \quad \text{quina'to,} & \quad \text{kween'to,} & \quad \text{fifth;} \\
\text{ud} & \quad \text{tróno,} & \quad \text{too,ö'no,} & \quad \text{thunder.}
\end{align*}
\]

Triphthongs are generally classed with the short diphthongs, and are pronounced,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{áio} & \quad \text{gáio,} & \quad \text{gah'yo,} & \quad \text{gay;} \\
\text{iéi} & \quad \text{miëri,} & \quad \text{mee,ay'ee,} & \quad \text{mine;} \\
\text{uóí} & \quad \text{buoir,} & \quad \text{boo,ö'ee,} & \quad \text{oxen;} \\
\text{uóio} & \quad \text{guáio,} & \quad \text{gwaah'yo,} & \quad \text{wailing;} \\
\text{uíó} & \quad \text{cuóio,} & \quad \text{kwoh'yo,} & \quad \text{leather;} \\
\text{uóí} & \quad \text{lacciuóí,} & \quad \text{lait-choo,ö'ee,} & \quad \text{snares.}
\end{align*}
\]

CHAPTER VII.

GENERAL RULES ON THE ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.

ITALIAN words are pronounced exactly as they are written, there being no silent letter except h.

Every vowel always preserves its proper sound, independently of the consonants which accompany it.*

* There is, perhaps, no greater difficulty for foreigners in pronouncing Italian, than that of the vowels E, O, whose sound, either open or close, often determines the signification of words; as in mêle, pësca, témía; cîllo, fîrò, bôto, which pronounced with E and O open, mean, 'honey', 'a peach', 'theme'; 'neck', 'the bar', 'void'; and pronounced with E and O close, signify, 'apples'; 'shaking', 'fear'; 'with the', 'a hole', 'row'.

[For a list of Words of Similar Orthography, but of Different Signification, distinguished by the Different Sound of E, O, see APPENDIX, A. (9)]
When consonants are doubled, each of them is separately pronounced;* as,

\begin{align*}
\text{fratéllo,} & \quad \text{frah-tayl'-lo,} & \text{brother;} \\
\text{addóbbo,} & \quad \text{ahd-dohb'-bo,} & \text{ornament;} \\
\text{erróre,} & \quad \text{ayr-ro'-ray,} & \text{error;} \\
\text{attrézzi,} & \quad \text{aht-trayz'-see,} & \text{utensils.}
\end{align*}

If a word ends with a consonant, and the following word begins with a vowel, the consonant of the former, in the pronunciation, is joined to the vowel or first syllable of the latter; as,

\begin{align*}
\text{per amóre,} & \quad \text{pe-r_ a-móre,} & \text{pay-rah-mo'-ray,} \\
\text{for love sake;} & \quad \text{} & \\
\text{quál angóscia,} & \quad \text{qua-l_ an-góscia} & \text{kvaah-lahn-go'-shah,} \\
\text{what anguish;} & \quad \text{} & \\
\text{grand' invitó,} & \quad \text{gran-d_ in-vitó,} & \text{grahn-deen-vee'-to,} \\
\text{great invitation.} & \quad \text{} & \\
\end{align*}

When gli precedes a word beginning with a vowel, the vowel or first syllable of the latter is joined to gli, so as to form a single syllable; as,

\begin{align*}
\text{gli onóri,} & \quad \text{gli o-nóri,} & \text{lyo-no'-ree,} & \text{the honors;} \\
\text{béèli occhi,} & \quad \text{be-gli oc-chi,} & \text{bay-lyok'-kee,} & \text{beautiful eyes.}
\end{align*}

In all Italian words of more than one syllable, there is always one, upon which the voice, in pronouncing the word, is heard stronger than upon the others. This, which is generally effected by raising the voice upon that syllable and letting it fall upon the rest, is commonly called the tonic accent of the word. The syllable upon which the tonic accent falls, is pronounced longer than the other syllables; each of which is not to

* The importance of the observance of this rule will at once be perceived by the learner, when, in advancing in the study of the language, he observes a great number of words written with a double consonant, whose signification would be entirely altered by pronouncing them with a single consonant; as in cănna, fòcco, pèssò, ròssà, sènna, sòno, 'car', 'tassel', 'near', 'red', 'raw', 'sleep'; which pronounced with a single consonant, cănno, fòcco, pèssò, ròssà, sènna, sòno, signify ' dear', ' hoarse', ' taken', ' rose', ' evening', ' I am'.

[For a list of Words, whose Signification is determined by the Pronunciation of double Consonants, see APPENDIX, C.]
EXERCISE.

occupy more than half the time employed in pronouncing the accented syllable; as,

önda,  ön-däh,  wave;
uccélllo,  ööt-cháyl-ló,  bird;
Ébano,  áy-bäh-nó,  ebony;
amistá,  áh-méé-stáh,  amity.

EXERCISE ON THE PRONUNCIATION.

Cédro, citron; cénere, ashes; célèbre, celebrated; cicatrice, scar; cicalátta, chit-chat; cipólla, onion; ciánica, story; ciarláre, to prate; ciállda, wafer; ciélo, heaven; ciéco, blind; cioccoláte, chocolate; ciócco, stump; ció, this; fanciúllo, child; ciúrna, crew; ciúffo, a tuft of hair; génte, people; gérner, gender; giro, turn; gigánte, giant; ginócchio, knee; giardinó, garden; giammái, never; giállo, yellow; giórno, day; giógo, yoke; gio- cándo, merry; giovane, youth; giúgno, June; giúlio, gay; giúdice, judge; giudicáre, to judge; ráme, copper; rovina, ruin; orróre, horror; parláre, to speak; férro, iron; órlo, border; mercé, reward; bárdo, bard; arrovelláre, to be angry; irrettire, to ensnare; crudéle, cruel; fórza, force; território, territory; tartáreo, tartarcan; saláte, health; sérvo, servant; sórte, fate; síre, sire; sópra, above; cost, so; singoláre, singular; sóle, sun; su, upon; superáre, to surmount; palése, manifest; cortése, courteous; spéso, expended; résò, rendered; rósa, rose; spósa, spouse; rísa, laughter; músa, muse; virtuósó, virtuous; confúso, confounded; zólla, clod; zio, uncle; zúppa, soup; zerbino, a spark; zimárra, night-gown; pòzzo, a well; carézze, caresses; carrózza, couch; tázza, cup; ammazzáre, to kill; pizzico, pinch; órzo, barley; zizzánia, tare; rézzo, shade; vizió, vice; zótico, rude; lettizia, joy; nazión, nation; témij, temples; stúdi, studies; estémij, examples; vísí, vices; eccidij, slaughters; augúrij, auguries; ho, I have; hái, thou hast; ha, he has; hánno, they have; ah! ah! deh! alas! ih! ih! pooh! pooh! uh! uh! acciáio, steel; accénto, accent; accidíóso, sluggish; lácchio, noose; fác-cia, face; lacciúllo, snare; oggéttó, object; soggiórno, abode;
pioggia, rain; raggio, ray; aggiunta, addition; oggi, to-day; chéto, quiet; chino, inclined; cherubino, cherubim; chimico, chymist; chérmes, cochinial; chiméra, chimera; chichessa, whosoever; chiave, key; chiostro, cloister; chiusa, hedge; chiaramare, to call; chiésa, church; chiodo, nail; chétrico, clerk; ghémbo, crooked; ghermine, to grieve; ghiro, dormouse; ghiribizzo, whim; gherione, gore; ghirlànda, garland; ghíata, gravel; ghíaccio, ice; lusinghière, flattering; preghiera, prayer; ghiotto, greedy; tegghiúzza, baking-pan; figli, children; figli, leaves; pigliare, to take; famiglia, family; moglie, wife; orgoglio, pride; imbroglio, embarassment; fogliuto, leafy; figliuolo, son; negligenza, negligence; neglìtto, neglected; angli, Englishmen; anglia, England; anglicano, Anglican; campagna, the country; magnánimo, magnanimous; ingegnere, engineer; spignere, to push; magnífico, magnificent; signore, sir; légno, wood; ignudo, naked; scésa, descent; scemáre, to diminish; scéttro, scepter; scimia, ape; scisma, schism; sciagura, misfortune; scismé, swarm; sciancato, hipped; sciénza, science; coscienza, conscience; sciocco, foolish; scórre, to loose; sciugatóio, towel; sciugare, to wipe; sciávo, slave; schiantare, to tear; schiéra, the back; schiètto, candid; schioppo, musket; schiúma, froth; guadagnare, to gain; guerra, war; guardáre, to look; guerire, to beat; guércio, squint-eyed; guida, guide; guidáre, to guide; quattro, four; quality, quality; quádro, picture; quâle, which; quësto, this; quercia, oak; quiêt, quiet; quindici, fifteen; quivi, there; quotidiáno, daily.
PART II.

ITALIAN ANALOGY.

PARTS OF SPEECH.

(Variable) (Invariable)
L' Articolo, the Article; L' Avvérbio, the Adverb;
Il Nóme, the Noun; La Preposizione, the Preposi-
Il Pronóme, the Pronoun; La Congiunzione, the Conjunc-
Il Vérbo, the Verb; L' Interiezione, the Interjec-
Il Particípio, the Participle:

CHAPTER I.

ARTICLES.

There are three articles in Italian; il, lo, la, 'the', in
the singular; i or li,* gli, le, 'the', in the plural number.

Il, lo, and i or li, gli, are used with masculine, la and
le, with feminine nouns.

Il, and i or li, are put before masculine nouns begin-
ning with a consonant, except x, or s followed by an-
other consonant; as,

Il fratello, the brother;
Il marito, the husband;

* We meet with li frequently in the Classics, especially in poetry; but modern
writers generally use i in preference to it.
ANALOGY.

Lo and gli, are put before masculine nouns beginning with z, s followed by another consonant, or a vowel; as,

Lo zio, the uncle;  gli zeffi, the zephyrs
Lo strépito, the noise; gli spróni, the spurs;
Lo innocente, the innocent man; gli occhi, the eyes.

EXCEPTIONS.

The noun Dio, 'God', before its plural, Déi, 'Gods', takes the article gli; as,

Gli Déi, the Gods.

After the preposition per, 'for, by, or through', whether the nouns begins with z, s, or any other consonant, the article lo is more properly used; as,

Per lo amore, for the love; per lo bráccio, by the arm.

In the plural, however, if the noun begins with any consonant but z, or s followed by another consonant, we may use indifferently, either gli or li; as,

Per gli bóschi, through the woods;
Per li regni, through the regions.

La and le, are put before all feminine nouns beginning either with a consonant, or a vowel; as,

La reina, the queen; le cortesie, the courtseies;
La sorèlla, the sister; le mádri, the mothers;
La nobiltà, the nobleness; le ánime, the souls.

The articles lo, la, before a noun beginning with a vowel; and gli, le, before a noun beginning with i, e;

* Poets very often use lo before nouns beginning with other consonants than z, or s followed by another consonant; and il before nouns beginning with those consonants; as,

Lo giorno es n'andava e l'der brúno; (Dant. Inf. 2.)
Seguíelo appresso il spléndido, e on- 
 orándo—Pricivale; (Bocc. Vis. 1.)
Gli rami schiante, adáticas, e pórtas 
 fuóri; (Dant. Inf. 9.)
but in prose this usage is, by all good writers, carefully avoided.

The day was closing, and the dusky air;
Next followed the splendid and honor-
able Pricivale;
Tears off the boughs, beats down, and hurle away;
ARTICLES.

generally drop o, a, i, e, and take an apostrophe instead of them,* as,

L' uomo, \{the man;\} (for LO uño), \{the infirm;\} (for GLI inférmì),
L' ánima, \{the soul;\} (for LA ánima), \{the herbs.\} (for LE Érbe),

Sometimes the article il drops the i after a word ending with a vowel, and takes an apostrophe instead of it; as,

E' l viso, \{and the coun-
(131) tenance;\} (for E IL viso), \{the blow\} (for USCIO IL colpo), \{issued.\}

EXA^MPLES.

L'un fratello l'altro abbandonò, e la sorella il fra-
thello, e spesso volle la donna il suo marito. (Bocc. Intr.)

E che maggior cosa è, li Pá-
(253) dri e le madri, i figliuîoli di visitâre e di servire schiavâno. (Bocc. Intr.)

LA REINA non si sapéva sazi-
(253) ëre d'udire la nobiltà e le cortesie del giovane re. (Nov. ant. 35.)

Non istette guári a levârsi il
(253) re, il quale lo strépito déi ca-
ricantì e delle bèstie avéva désto. (Bocc. g. 7. Froem.)

A' évavol inòcènte per fà-
sa suspicìone accusâto. (Bocc.
(253) g. 8. n. 7.)

E con amó si lânya—Ch' ha
(253) si cálni gli spîron, et dúro il
fréno. (Petr. s. 140.)

Lucèvav gli ócchi suóí più
(253) che la stèlìa. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Al têmpo dégli déi fâsì e
(253) bugiârdì. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

One brother abandoned the other, and the sister the broth-
er, and oftentimes the wife her husband.

And what is more, the fathers and the mothers shunned to visit and serve their chil-
dren.

The queen could not be satisfied with hearing of the nobleness and the courtesies of the young king.

The king was not long in getting up, whom the noise of the beasts and of those who loaded them had already awakened.

They had accused the innocent man on a false suspicion.

And complains of love, that has so sharp spurs, and so hard a bit.

Her eyes shone more than the star.

In the time of fabled and false deities.

* Le drops the e sometimes, and takes an apostrophe instead of it, chiefly in poetry, even before words beginning with any other vowel; as,

Ex sôr fra l' ânime pìù nérè. (D. Inf. 6.) They are amidst blacker souls.

Cânto l' armi piktòse. (Tass. Ger. 1.) I sing the pious arms.
ANALOGY.

Sempre tenéndo per lo brác-cio lo inferma. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Per lo suo amore adunque a noi ti piéga. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

Lasciane andare per li tuoi sétte régni. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

L'anima tua è da viltàt offesa,—la qual motte fiâtè l' uomo ingombra,—Sicché d' onrata im-présa lo rivolte. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I pensier son saetté e' l viso un sòle—E' l desir foco. (Petr.)

Zéfiro tórna, e' l bel tempo rimèna,—E i fiori, e l'érbe, suá dolce famiglia. (Petr. s. 269.)

Dáglì öcchi vostri uscìo 'l còlpo mortàle. (Petr.)

Del bel paese là dòve 'l si suóna. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Holding always the sick man by the arm.

Then for her love condescend to our desires.

Let us pass through thy seven regions.

Thy soul is by vile fear assailed, which oft,—So overcast a man, that he recoils,—From noble undertaking.

The thoughts are arrows, and the countenance a sun,—and the desire fire.

Zephyr returns, bringing back flowers, and herbs, his sweet family.

From your eyes the mortal blow issued.

Of that fair land where si is spoken.

When the articles il, lo, la; i or li, gli, le, are immediately preceded by the prepositions di, 'of'; a, 'to'; da, 'from or by'; in or ne, 'in'; con, 'with'; per, 'for, by, or through'; su, 'upon'; fra or tra, 'amongst'; in order to avoid the harshness of sound produced by two monosyllables coming together, they are united to them, so as to form a single word; as,

a i, ài, to the; da gli, dàglì, from or by the;
su la, sullà, upon the; tra le, tràlle, amongst the.

Union of the Prepositions di, a, da, in or ne, con, per, su, fra or tra, with the Article

IL, the;

di il, del, of the;
a il, al, to the;
da il, dal, from or by the;
in or ne il, nel, in the;
con il, col, with the;
per il, pel, for, by or through the;
### ARTICLES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>su il,</th>
<th>SUL,</th>
<th>upon the;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>fra il,</td>
<td>FRAL,</td>
<td>amongst the.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tra il,</td>
<td>TRAL,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### I OR LI, the,

| di i or di li, | DÉI or DÉLLI,* | of the; |
| a i or a li, | ÁI or ÁLLI, | to the; |
| da i or da li, | DÁI or DÁLLI, | from or by the; |
| in or ne i, or in or ne li, | NÉI or NÉLLI, | in the; |
| con i or con li, | CÓI or CÓLLI, | with the; |
| per i or per li, | PÉI or PÉLLI, | for, by or thro.' the; |
| su i or su li, | SÚI or SÚLLI, | upon the; |
| fra i or fra li, | FRÁI or FRÁLLI, | amongst the. |
| tra i or tra li, | TRÁI or TRÁLLI, | |

#### LO, the;

| di lo, | DÉLLO,* | of the; |
| a lo, | ÁLLO, | to the; |
| da lo, | DÁLLO, | from or by the; |
| in or ne lo, | NÈLLO, | in the; |
| con lo, | CÓLLO, | with the; |
| per lo, | PÉLLO, | for, by or thro.' the; |
| su lo, | SÚLLO, | upon the; |
| fra lo, | FRÁLLO, | amongst thee. |
| tra lo, | TRÁLLO, | |

#### GLI, the;

| di gli, | DÉGLI,* | of the; |
| a gli, | ÁGLI, | to the; |
| da gli, | DÁGLI, | from or by the; |
| in or ne gli, | NÈGLI, | in the; |
| con gli, | CÓGLI, | with the; |
| per gli, | PÉGLI, | for, by or thro.' the; |
| su gli, | SÚGLI, | upon the; |
| fra gli, | FRÁGLI, | amongst the. |
| tra gli, | TRÁGLI, | |

---

*N* Poets very often use them separate; as,

N'é mai nascose il cieli si folla nibbia.—Che, sopraggiunta dal furor dei venti.—Non fuggisse da i poggii e da la valle. (Petr. C. 14.)

Da l'érba, e da li fior dentro a quel séno—Poi, ciascun cara di color vinto. (Dant. Purg. 7.)

'Al Padre, al Figlio, a lo Spirito Santo'—Cominciò 'gloria' tutto il Paradiso. (Dant. Par. 27.)

Nor ever did the sky conceal so thick a cloud, that, overtaken by the fury of the wind, it would not flee from the hills, and the valleys;

By the herbs and flowers, placed in that recess, in color all would be surpassed;

'Glory to the Father, to the Son,—And to the Holy Spirit,' rang aloud—Throughout all Paradise.

---

*²*
ANALOGY.

LA, the;

Di la, della, of the;
a là, alla, to the;
da la, dalla, from or by the;
in or ne la, nella, in the;
con la, colla, with the;
per la, pëlla, for, by or through the;
su la, sùlla, upon the;
fra la, fràlla, amongst the;
tra la, tràlla, among the.

LE, the;

Di le, della, of the;
a le, alla, to the;
da le, dalla, from or by the;
in or ne le, nella, in the;
con le, colle, with the;
per le, pëlle, for, by or through the;
su le, sùlle, upon the;
fra le, fràlle, amongst the;
tra le, tràlle, among the.

Dëi, ái, dái, nèi, cói, pëi, sùi, frài or trài, followed by a noun beginning with a consonant, drop the i, and take an apostrophe instead of it; as,

dë' pràti, of the meadows;  
a' cánti, to singing;

da' parênti, by the relations;  
nè' giardini, in the gardens;
cò' raggi, with the rays;  
pë' monti, through the moun-
tains;

sò' libri, upon the books;  
trà' fìori, amongst the flow-
ers.

Pel, pëllo, pëlla, and pëlli, pëgli, pëlle, in elegant style are better written per lo, per la, and per li, per gli, per le; as,

Per lo Dùca, by my guide;  
Per la pietà, through pity;

Per gli occhi, through the [eyes;  
Per le frôndi, on account of [the leaves.
ARTICLES.

And scrupulous writers before nouns beginning with s or s followed by another consonant, use collo, trálo, cólla, trálle, and cógli, trágli, cólle, trálle, and súgli, always separated;* as,

**CON LO splendore, with the** [splendor;

**CON LA zázzera, with the** [head of hair;

**SU LO smállo, upon the** [enamel;

**SU ELI sciócchi, with the** [ignorant;

**TRA LE stélle, among the** [stars;

**SU ELI scúdi, upon the** [shield.

**EXAMPLES.**

Cóme NÉ' Lúcidi seréni sóno le stélle ornamento del cielo, e nell'a primavéra i fiori dá'.

PRATI, e dá' cólli i rivestiti arbescélli; cosí dá' laudévoli costúmi, e dá' ragionamenti bélli sóno i leggiadri mútti. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

E divenuti più liéti, su si le-várono, ed h' suóni, ed h' canti ed h' balli da cápo si diérono. (Bocc. g. 3. Poem.)

Oh, sventuráta! che si dirà dá' tuoi fratélli, dá' parénti, dá' vicini, quando si saprà, che tu sii qui trovátà? (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Quando NÉ' giardíni entráte, distésa la dilícàta máno, cogliete le rosé, e lasciáte le spine stáre. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Ombróse sélve, onde percéte il séle,—Che vi fa có' suói raggi álter e supérbe. (Petr. s. 129.)

As in the bright clear sky, the stars are the ornament of the heavens, and in the spring the flowers are of the meadows, and the verdant shrubs of the hills, so witty sayings are the ornaments of praiseworthy manners and fine conversations.

And having become more gay, they arose and gave themselves once more to playing, singing, and dancing.

Oh, unfortunate woman! what will be said by thy brothers, by thy relations, by thy neighbors, when it shall be known, that thou hast been found here?

When you enter into the gardens, extending your delicate hand, you pull the roses, and leave the thorns.

Shady woods, where strikes the sun, which renders you with its rays so lofty and noble.

* And in poetry even before nouns beginning with any other letter; as,

**Ecco la fíra con la códa agúzza.**

(Dant. Inf. 17.)

**Pidi Solón—Con aúl aüri aëi di cui Grécia si vánta.** (Petr. Tr. Fam.)

Behold the beast with sharpened tail;

I saw Solon with the other six of whom Greece boasts.
E quindi passai in terra d’Abruzzi, dove gli uomini e le femmine vanno in zoccoli su fe’ monti. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Lascio lo féle, e vo fe’ dolci pomi—Promessi a me per lo verace duca. (Dant. Inf. 16.)

Così avesti riposti—Dé’ béi vestigi sparsi,—Ancor tra’ fiori e l’érba. (Petr. c. 26.)

Per gli occhi mi passò dentro la mente. (Rim. ant. p. 49.)

Era ’l giorno ch’al Sol si scoloráro—Per la pietà del suo Fattore i rai. (Petr. s. 3.)

Giunse nel bosco per le frondi ombróso. (Bocc. Tes. 5. 33.)

Con lo splendór che sua bellezza addúce. (Incer. c. 4.)

Non errar con gli sciócchi. (Petr. c. 47.)

And then I passed to the land of Abruzzi, where men and women go in wooden shoes up over the mountains.

I leave the gall, in quest of the sweet fruit, which has been promised to me by my faithful guide.

Thus would that thou, (O heart,) hadst still preserved some of the beautiful footsteps here and there, amongst the flowers and the grass.

It passed through my eyes to my mind.

It was the day when the rays of the sun grew pale, through pity for his Maker.

He arrived in the wood, shady on account of its leaves.

With the splendor which brings her beauty.

Do not wonder in error with the ignorant.

The English indefinite article a, an, is expressed in Italian by the indefinite pronouns un, uno, una, according to the rules already given with regard to the articles il, lo, la, ‘the’; as,

un mercatante, a merchant;  uno spiráglìo, a breathing-hole;  una fiámma, a flame;  una zéba, a goat.

Uno, like lo, before a noun beginning with a vowel, drops the o, but takes no apostrophe instead of it; una drops the a and takes an apostrophe; as,

un uòmo, a man;  un’ombra, a shade;
un amòre, a love;  un’hora, an hour.

When a noun is taken in a partitive sense, the English adjectives some and any are expressed by the
ARTICLES.

words del, dello, délla, in the singular; and déi, dégli, delle, or alcuni, alcune, in the plural; as,

DEL PÁNE, some bread; DELL’ òlio, some oil;
ALCÚNE cósé, some things; ALCÚNI uomini, some men;
DEGLI stroménti, some instru-
ments;
DELLE aránce, some oranges.

EXAMPLES.

In Parigi fu un gran merc-
cátante. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

Éra Arriguccio un fiéro uó-
mo, e un fórte. (Bocc. g. 7.
n. 6.)

Nèlla quál grótta dáva alquán-
to lúme ÚNO SPíRÁGLIO, fáilo nel
monte. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Un volére, un amóre ci ha
sémpre tenúti legáti e congiúnti,
ed un medésimo giorno ci diéde
al móndo; piácciali, poiché un’
óra ci tógliè, che similèmente
ÚNA medésima fíammà ci con-
súmi. (Bocc. Filoc.)

Gli diédi DEL PÁNE E DEL cá-
cio. (Firenz.)

Úno òm’ famigliári di Mes-
sér Néri accesé il fuóco, e pós-
sta la padélle sòpra il treppié,
e DELL’ òlio mésovi, cominciò
ad aspettãre, che le gioná gli
gitássero dél pésc. (Bocc. g.
10. n. 6.)

Di niúna cósé servíe, che di
pórgero ALCÚNE cósé dagl’ in-
férmì addómandáte. (B. Intr.)

There was in Paris a great merchant.

Arriguccio was a haughty
and strong man.

In which grotto came some
light through a breathing-hole,
opened in the mountain.

One will, one love, has al-
ways kept us bound and united,
and the same day gave us to
the-world; may it please you,
then, since the same hour takes
us from it, that one same flame
should consume us.

I gave him some bread and
some cheese.

One of the domestics of Mes-
sér Neri kindled the fire, and
having put the frying-pan up-
on a trevêt, and having put
some oil in it, he began to wait
that the young women should
throw into it some fish.

They rendered no service,
but to reach some things called
for by the sick.
EXERCISE I.

[Let the learner here put the right Article according to the gender marked, against the Italian nouns, and the number of the same, as indicated by the English words.]

The sacred Tiber, the Egyptian obelisks, the temples sàcro Tèvere, m., Egiziàni obelischi, m., tempj, m. still dark with the vapor of the sacrifices, the Flavian ancóra fóschi vapòre, m. sacrifici, m., Flávio Amphitheatrò, m.* il quale giàce còme sbrañato gigànte, m., columns which describe the customs of the soldiery, colòmne, f. che descrivono costumanze, f. múlizia, f.,

the triumphal arches, the space of the Forum, the trionfali árchi, m., spàzio, m.: Forò, m.,

mausoleums, the majestic ruins of the circuses and of the mausóleí, m., maestòsè ruine, f. circhi, m. e baths, and all the remains of the Roman splendor, térti, e tòtti avànzi, m. Romàno splendidezza, f., fill the mind | with† | delightful wonder. èmpione ánimo, m. di soave maraviglia.

Nero to appease them, ordered that the fasces of the Neróne per appaciâr, li† bandì che fàsci, m.

emperor should be borne with the laurel. The imperatóre, m. | si portassero allôro, m.

senators complained against the insolence of the senatóri, m. si dolévano di insòlenza, f.

plebeians, and the plebeians against the avarice of the plebèi, m., e plebèi, m. | di avarìzia, f.

magistrates and of the great. magistratì, m. e grandi, m.

* In this and the following Exercises, the numbers affixed to the Italian words are intended to denote the order in which they are to be placed; as, 'Flávio Antiteatro',—anfiteatro Flávio.

† When an English word or phrase cannot be rendered literally, but by an equivalent Italian word or phrase, they are both included between brackets [ ]; as, 'with con; di, 'of'.

‡ The sign †, is used to denote, that the words under which it is found, are to be joined in one; as, per appaciar li,—per appaciârti.
ARTICLES.

He proposed that (the) honors should be rendered to Galba, — Propôse che gli onori, si rendessero a Gaiba, and that the memory of Piso also should be celebrated. e che la memoria Pisone anche si celebrasse.

He departed to carry to the temple of (the) — Parti per portare in tempio.

Cencord the standards of the empire. (The) princes Concòrdia, insigne, império, principi, do more with their reputation and with their advice, than with their hand and with their arms. consiglio, che con la mano e con le armi.

Not pardoning, as in (the) other armies, the first fault, Non perdondando, come in altri eserciti, prima fatta,

nor the second, but he who left the standard was immediately beheaded. It appeared to him that he heard nè seconda, ma chi lasciava insenзу was immediately beheaded. It appeared to him that he heard

about (the) mid-night people descend in the house. In su mezzanotte, persone scendere casa.

Having entered into the tower, she began to weep. For Entrata è torre, cominciò a piangere. Per

the pain he felt, he began to roar, so that he seemed a lion. Fleeing through the woods. Vede, Fuggendo per boschi.

He was seen by a companion of his. — Fu veduto da compagno, suo.

caused him to come to a gossip of hers. He gave to him a purse with some florins, in it. Fatto lo venire da comare, gli borsa con florini.

Having found in the garden some capons, some wine, and some eggs, he supped entirely at his ease. Trovati orto, capponi, vino, e uova, cenò a suo bolo agio.

Such words, as, though necessary in English, are not to be expressed in Italian, are in this part marked with a dash; and such words as are necessary in Italian, but are not expressed in English, are in this language introduced in italics, and included between parentheses; as, 'He proposed that (the) honors should be rendered,' — Propôse che si rendessero gli onori.
CHAPTER II.

SUBSTANTIVE NOUNS.

All Italian substantives end with one of the vowels o, a, e, i, u.* It is these vowels that show their gender and number.

GENDER.

Nouns ending in o are of the masculine gender; as,

libro, book; spéccchio, mirror;
oriúlo, watch; scríttóio, scrutoire.

EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of women; as,
Sáffo, Sappho; Ero, Hero; Calisto, Calisto;
Eráto, Erato; Jtrópo, Atropos; Aléto, Alecto:

Some contracted nouns, generally used in poetry; as,
immágo, (for) image; testúdo, (for) tortoise; Cartágo, (for) Car-
immáginæ; testúdine; Cartágínæ; thage;

And the nouns,
máno, hand; éco, echo.

are feminine.

Some nouns of animate beings ending in o, in the feminine change o into a; as,
colómbo, pigeon; colómba, hen-dove;
cavállo, horse; cavállia, mare;
gáutto, cat; gáttia, she-cat.

* Lápiz, ‘pencil’, and some very few foreign nouns, as, ribés, ‘currants’, chérmes, ‘cochineal’; &c., are the only exceptions to this rule. But, then, we meet in Italian with many nouns, which, in composition, are made to end with a consonant; and this on principles, which will be explained in Part IV, when treating of Italian Orthography.
SUBSTANTIVES.

Nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender; as,
- *casa*, house;
- *strada*, street;
- *porta*, door;
- *chiesa*, church.

**EXCEPTIONS.**

Proper names of men; as,
- *Enea*, Æneas; *Andrez*, Andrew; *Tobia*, Toby;

Nouns of professions exercised by men; as,
- *artista*, artist;
- *scriba*, scrivener;
- *alchimista*, alchymist;
- *legista*, lawyer;
- *poeta*, poet;
- *ebanista*, cabinet-maker.

Nouns of dignity; as,
- *papa*, pope;
- *duca*, duke;
- *gerarca*, high-priest;
- *patriarca*, patriarch;
- *monarca*, monarch;
- *demarca*, demarch.

Nouns derived from the Greek, ending in *ma*, *mma*; as,
- *clima*, climate;
- *diadem*, diadem;
- *poema*, poem;
- *prisma*, prism;
- *enigma*, enigma;
- *programma*, programma.

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun; as,
- *pascibetola*, logger;
- *santinfizza*, hypocrite;
- *guarderoba*, the master of the wardrobe.

And the following,
- *sofà*, sofa;
- *serra*, ———;
- *canapa*, hemp;
- *bacalà*, cod-fish.

are masculine.

The nouns,
- *idiota*, idiot;
- *eremita*, hermit;
- *anacoretta*, anchorite;
- *ipocrifa*, hypocrite;
- *apostata*, apostate;
- *patriota*, patriot;
- *deicida*, deicide;
- *parricida*, parricide;
- *regicida*, regicide;
- *omicida*, homicide;
- *matricida*, matricide;
- *antagonista*, antagonist;
- *regalista*, royalist;
- *monopolista*, monopolist;
- *Deista*, Deist;
- *ateista*, atheist;
- *Calvinista*, Calvinist;
- [list;]

are of the common gender.
Some names of animate beings ending in *a* in the masculine change *a* into *e*; as,

- *cérva*, doe;  
- *lúpa*, she-wolf;  
- *órza*, she-bear;  
- *cérvio*, stag;  
- *lúpo*, wolf;  
- *órso*, bear.

The nouns, *ténna*, pianeta, *drámma*, *podestà*, in the signification of 'theme', 'planet', 'drama', 'civil magistrate', are masculine; and in the signification of 'fear', 'cope', 'drachm', 'power', are feminine.

**Examples.**

*Galeotto fu il libro e chi lo scrisse.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

*Ora che debbo dire di que'lli che escono dallo scrittorio fra la gentile collo pennant'or nocchio.* (Casa Galat. 86.)

*Gl'abitatori di questo castello con armata mano pervenne al lido.* (Guid. 60.)

*Tuolo che di lontano—Nelle valli éco trista risuonera.* (Bocc. Tes. 11, 30.)

*Vério dirò forse, e parrà menzogna—Ch' i senti trármn della pròpria immaga* (Petr. c. 4, 8.)

*Siccome quando il colombo si pone—Préss al compagno.* (Dant. Par. 26.)

*Niuna gloria a un' áquila è l'avér vinto una colomba.* (Bocc. g. n.)

*In casa tua sei orgoglioso e incomportabile; a case altrui, umile e dimesso.* (Varch. Sen. ben. 3, 28.)

*Mise dissensione nella chiesa, tenendo sé in contro al Pápa con certi cardinali ed altri chiérici.* (Giov. Vill. L. 4, 21, 1.)

The book and he who wrote it were [to us] Galeotto.

Now what must I say of those, who come out of their study among the people with a pen over the ear.

The inhabitants of this castle with arms in their hands reached the shore.

Such that at a distance sounded in the valleys like a sad echo.

Perhaps I shall tell the truth and it will appear false, that I felt myself drawn away from my own body.

As when the dove alights by his mate.

No glory comes to an eagle from having conquered a dove.

In thy house thou art proud and insupportable; and at the houses of others, humble and submissive.

He put dissension in the church, plotting against the Pope with certain cardinals and other priests.
He was the greatest and the wisest lawyer, that had been seen until his time.

My master in liberality does not yield to that monarch.

And with such figuring of Paradise,—The sacred strain must leap, like one that meets—A sudden interruption to his road.

Ribald, hypocrite, mocker of God, who add five to that of others, and take out six.

Now finish that long discourse that thou hast begun about that man.

Words, which the Holy Ghost put into the mouth of the ignorant man.

And a she-wolf who seemed to be laden with wants of every kind.

When lo! near her, came out from a thick hedge a large and terrible wolf.

For my wide theme so urges me on.

That thou mayest be relieved from this fear.

The beautiful planet that invites to love, made all the orient laugh.

I bequeath, moreover, a cope of crimson silk stuff.

The drama is a poetical composition to be represented.

Without which, I did not rest a moment.

When shall come the Power adverse to them.
ANALOGY.

Góme piú tósto potè, n'andò a
colui, che in luogo del Podestà
véra. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

As soon as he could, he went
to him who filled the place of
Podestà.

Nouns ending in e are some of them masculine, and
some feminine; as,

càrme, m., poem;
colle, m., hill;
fibra, m., flower;

falcé, f., reaping hook;
sièpe, f., hedge;
néve, f., snow.

Those ending in ge, le, me, re, se, uie, are generally
masculine; as,

réce, king;
flusme, river;
armése, utensil;

viále, path;
chôre, heart;
ménte, mountain.

EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

légge, law;
indole, disposition;
bila, bile;
árme, arm;
scure, hatchet;
tórre, tower;
fráse, phrase;
ménte, mind;
corrénte, current;

fulangé, phalanx; laringe, larynx;
próle, offspring; pélle, skin;
valle, valley; épérbole, hyperbole;
fáme, hunger; spéme, hope;
pólvore, dust; népre, brier;
fébre, fever; madre, mother;
buióse, dungeons; gènte, people;
lénte, lens; paténte, patent;
sorgénte, source; seménte, seed;

are feminine.

Those ending in be, ce, pe, te, ve, ie, ine, one, are,
generally, feminine; as,

plébe, common people;
sièpe, hedge;
chíave, key;
immagine, image;
ragione, reason;

cicatrice, scar;
arte, art;
série, series;
incudine, anvil;
nazione, nation.
SUBSTANTIVES.

EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{álee,} & \quad \text{elk;} & \quad \text{pésee,} & \quad \text{fish;} & \quad \text{mántice,} & \quad \text{bellow;} \\
\text{códice,} & \quad \text{code;} & \quad \text{cállice,} & \quad \text{chalice;} & \quad \text{vórtice,} & \quad \text{vortex;} \\
\text{péps,} & \quad \text{pepper;} & \quad \text{presepé,} & \quad \text{stable;} & \quad \text{récpé,} & \quad \text{recipe;} \\
\text{váte,} & \quad \text{bar;} & \quad \text{látte,} & \quad \text{milk;} & \quad \text{límite,} & \quad \text{limit;} \\
\text{bréve,} & \quad \text{a brief;} & \quad \text{concláve,} & \quad \text{conclave;} & \quad \text{architráve,} & \quad \text{architrave;} \\
\text{corne,} & \quad \text{hair;} & \quad \text{cárdine,} & \quad \text{hinge;} & \quad \text{confine,} & \quad \text{confine;} \\
\text{disórdine, disorder;} & \quad \text{glútine,} & \quad \text{glue;} & \quad \text{pélítine,} & \quad \text{comb;} \\
\text{bastóne,} & \quad \text{stick;} & \quad \text{maltóne,} & \quad \text{brick;} & \quad \text{paragóne,} & \quad \text{comparison;} \\
\end{align*}
\]

are masculine.

The nouns,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{áere,} & \quad \text{air;} & \quad \text{cárcere,*} & \quad \text{prison;} & \quad \text{cénere,*} & \quad \text{ashes;} \\
\text{árbores,} & \quad \text{tree;} & \quad \text{jólgore,} & \quad \text{thunderbolt;} & \quad \text{frónte,†} & \quad \text{forehead;} \\
\text{fómente,} & \quad \text{fountain;} & \quad \text{fíne,†} & \quad \text{rope;} & \quad \text{tráve,} & \quad \text{beam;} \\
\text{grégge,*} & \quad \text{flock;} & \quad \text{consórte,} & \quad \text{consort;} & \quad \text{crédé,} & \quad \text{heir;} \\
\text{parénte,} & \quad \text{parent;} & \quad & & & \\
\end{align*}
\]

are of the common gender.

Names of animate beings, ending in e, are generally of the common gender; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{léprz,} & \quad \text{hare;} & \quad \text{sèrprz,} & \quad \text{snake.}
\end{align*}
\]

The noun dimáne, when it means 'to-morrow', is masculine; but when it signifies 'the beginning of the day', is feminine.

The noun márgine, when it means 'scar', is feminine; but when it means 'margin', 'extremity', is of the common gender.

The nouns fónte, and fíne, when they mean 'foot-soldier'; and 'aim' or 'design', are masculine: but when they mean 'servant'; and 'end' or 'termination', are of the common gender.

The nouns déte, and ordine, when they mean 'host', an 'inn-keeper'; and 'order', a 'command', are masculine: but when they mean 'host', an 'army'; and 'order', 'arrangement', or a 'religious order', they are of the common gender.

*Cárcere, cénere, and grégge, in the plural number, cárceri, 'prisons', cénéri, 'ashes'; and gréggi, 'flocks', are feminine only.
† Frónte and fíne, in prose, are feminine only.
ANALOGY.

EXAMPLES.

Ennio di quel cantò RÚVIDO cárme. (?etr. s. 153.)

Quèsta era molto bene affiusata, e con buona siépe. (Sacch. n. 91.)

Vidi gíente alla riva d'un gran fióme. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Un rivo d'acqua chiuriidîsima, il quale d'una montagnetta descenderà in òna valle ombrósa. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Serrâtâ la cella cólla chiáve, dirittamente sen andò alla càmera de l'ôlo Abât. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)

Venne dal cielo una colômba bianca e me nève, e, mèseo il bèco nel càliche, tutto l'ângue si bève. (Pasn. 136.)

Ed évvi, oltre a questo, l'âere essâi più frêisco. (Bocc. Intr.)

Ma poiché l'âere a divenir buôna incominciô. (Bocc. Amet.)

Ed entrâtâ nel chiáro fônte tâsta si mise nelle ácque. (Bocc. Amet.)

Dintórno âlla fônte si pôse-ro a sedère. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

Non crêdo un sèrpe, che ha 'l cor cotânto acérbî. (Dittam. 2. 12.)

Té non colômba, mà vélenôsa sèrpe conoscêndô, con tûtta la fórsa di perseguire intêndô. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Lo póllo sèmpe procrástina di far bêne, dîcêndô: 'Dimán ferô bêne'; è sèmpe l'un di mâne dimànda l'altro dimâne. (Albertan. c. 64.)

Ennius sang of him a rude song.

This was well fortified by a ditch, and by a good hedge.

I beheld a throng upon the shore of a great stream.

A stream of very clear water, which descended from a little hill into a shady valley.

Having locked the cell with the key, he went directly to the chamber of the Abbot.

There descended from Heaven a dove as white as snow, and, having put its beak into the chalice, it drank all the blood.

And there, besides this, the air is a great deal more fresh.

But when the air began to be good.

And having entered into the clear fountain, she plunged herself into the water.

They sat around the fountain.

I do not believe a serpent, who has a heart so cruel.

Knowing thee to be not a dove, but a venomous serpent, I intend to persecute thee with all my power.

The fool always delays to do good, saying: 'To-morrow I will do good.' And one to-morrow ever requires another.
SUBSTANTIVES.

When I awoke before the morning, I heard my sons sob in their slumber.

He recollected that she ought to have a scar, like a cross, above the left ear.

Its bed and sloping sides, and both the margins, were petrified.

After that she came to the margin of the high bank, we escaped by swimming.

Sending five hundred Ghibelline foot soldiers from the territory of Florence.

Wretched more than any other, thou art made a servant.

Giacomino had in his bosom an elderly servant maid.

A man who had come to a happy end.

This was the end of the Emperor Henry.

His host desiring to be paid, he first gave him that one.

Thus he fell in with our fortunate army.

He collected a fine, large and powerful army.

From Mr Annibal Ruccellai, you may hear the order which I have given to him.

If we should consider with sound mind the order of things.
ANALOGY.

Having made the arrangement among themselves, they revealed the subject to the duke.

I have always had a special devotion to your order.

In the times of the said Pope Innocent, was instituted the order of the Minor Friars.

Nouns ending in i are some of them masculine, and some feminine; as,

*cellasi, m., eclipse;*  *crisi, f., crisis;*  *tesi, f., thesis.*

Nouns of dignity, as,

*bail, bailiff;*  *padri, peer;*  *guardasigilli, keeper of the seal.*

The noun *di, 'day', and its compounds; as,

*buondì, good day;*  *mezzodì, noon;*  *oggidì, new-a-days.*

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun in the plural; as,

*lavaccoli, dunce;*  *graffiasanti, hypocrite;*  *guardaportóni, porter;*  *leccapiatti, glutton;*  *cacciadiavoli, exorcist;*  *cavadenti, tooth drawer.*

And the following,

*alcàli, alkali;*  *ambasci, ambs-aces;*  *zànni, merry-andrew;*  *abbicci, alphabet;*  *barbagiànni, owl;*  *soprattènì, delay;*  *cremì, crimson;*  *dëssi, diesis [in music];*  *appigiónasi, notice of a house to let.*

are masculine.

The noun *Génesi, 'Genesis', is of the common gender.*
SUBSTANTIVES.

Nouns ending in * are some of them masculine, and some feminine; as,

mèu, m. dill; grùf. crane;
ràgu, m. ragout; tribù, f. tribe;
soprappiù, m. overplus; gioventù, f. youth.

Examples.

Significava gran sècco nella segnente stàte, e poi nella opposizione di quell' ecclesi proso sopèrchio d' acquè. (Giov. Vill. 1. 11. c. 2.)

Quel, che i medici nostri chià- 
man cristi. (Bern. Rim. 1. 16.)

Cingono intorno i suoi famó- si pàri. (Ariost. Fur. 38. 79.)

Il medico si fice loro incinto 
dicéndo, che Iddio dèse lûro ii. 
buonì. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

IL maggior cacciadiávoli 
non è in Toscana. (Lor. Med. 
Arid. 2. 5.)

Ma tali cose hanno più del 
zànno, e von disoneste. (Demetr. 
Sang. 67.)

Cominceremo dal principio 
del gènesi. (Giov. Vill. 1. 11. 
c. 2)

Lasciasse loro un per cento 
di quanto hanno, e guadagnà-
sonsi quell' uno col sudore del 
vòlto, cómo comanda la gènesi. 
(Dav. Scism. p. 38.)

IL méu è caldo ed è èrba, il 
cui seme è detto con simigliante 
nome. (Cr. 0. 78. 1.)

Io ho giudicato, che egli sia 
oramai bene col qualche fréno 
ritenire i caldi imperti della 
sua gioventù. (Kirenez. Asin. 
178.)

It announced a great drought in the following summer, and afterward at the opposition of that eclipse, a great abundance of water.

That, which our physicians call crisis.

His famous peers surround him.

The physician went to meet them, wishing God would give them a good day.

A greater exorcist is not to be found in Tuscany.

But such things more become a merry-andrew, and are indecent.

We will commence from the beginning of Genesis.

That he should leave them one per centum of what they have, and that they should earn that one by the sweat of their brow, as is commanded in Gen- esis.

The dill is warm, and it is an herb whose seed is called by the same name.

I have thought, that it is now proper to moderate, with some restraint, the warm impulses of his youth.
ANALOGY.

Adjectives, verbs, adverbs, prepositions, when used substantively, are of the masculine gender; as,

*bello*, beautiful;  
*dove*, where;  
*cóme*, how;  
*st*, yes;  
*seguitare*, to continue;  
*quando*, when;  
*perché*, why;  
*no*, no.

The names of the days of the week, except *Dominga*, 'Sunday'; and those of the months, are masculine; as,

*Mercoledì*, Wednesday;  
*Sábado*, Saturday;  
*Aprile*, April;  
*Agosto*, August.

Names of trees are masculine; as,

*olmo*, elm-tree;  
*mirto*, myrtle-tree;  
*nóce*, walnut-tree;  
*limone*, lemon-tree.

**EXCEPTIONS.**

*Quercia*, oak-tree;  
*vite*, vine;  
*ginestra*, broom;  
*are feminine.*

Names of fruits are feminine*; as,

*péra*, pear;  
*suscita*, plum;  
*arancia*, orange;  
*cirègìa*, cherry.

**EXCEPTIONS.**

*Pére*, apple;  
*fig*, fig;  
*dattero*, date;  
*sedro*, citron;  
*pino*, pine;  
*limone*, lemon.

are masculine.

Some masculine nouns, when used to denote a feminine object, take a different termination; as,

*amico*, friend, m.;  
*cugino*, cousin, m.;  
*genitore*, father;  
*autore*, author;  
*poeta*, poet;  
*sacerdote*, priest;  
*dùca*, duke;  
*principe*, prince;  
*re*, king;  
*amica*, friend, f.;  
*cugina*, cousin, f.;  
*genitrice*, mother;  
*autrice*, authoress;  
*poetessa*, poetess;  
*sacerdotessa*, priestess;  
*duchessa*, duchess;  
*principessa*, princess;  
*regina*, queen.

---

* These are generally formed from the names of trees, changing *e* into *a*; as, *mándorio*, 'almond-tree'; *mándora*, 'an almond'; *gèleo*, 'mulberry-tree'; *géléa*, 'a mulberry.'
SUBSTANTIVES.

Some names of animate beings denote the feminine by a different word; as,

**uomo**, man;  
**donna**, woman;  
**toro**, bull;  
**vacca**, cow;  
**porco**, pig;  
**tomba**, sow;

Some in the feminine take a different termination; as,

**cane**, dog;  
**cagna**, bitch;  
**leone**, lion;  
**leonessa**, lioness;

And others are either masculine or feminine, and désignate both genders; as,

**corvo**, m., crow;  
**pantéra**, f., panther.

**EXAMPLES.**

*Le dône, quândo arriva no a quarântâ anni perdonò il bêllo dellà gioventùdine.* (Libr. Aen. Donn.)

*La regina a Filomena voltâta, le impôse il seguitâre.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*Il dôve so ho già pensato.* (Bocc. g. 2.)

*Sarti contento di sapere il quândo.* (Petr. s. 306.)

*Del comâ non ti câglio il perché ti dirô.* (Bocc. Filoc.)

*Son certa del si.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

*Ciascuno rispose del no.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

*Antôra il Mercoledì, e 'l Venerdì, e il Sârato.* (Maestruzz. 1. 33.)

*L'amôro somîrto—Crêscîs più volontîr nel cêpo intêro.* (Alam. Colt. 1. 16.)

*La vite âppo neâ è assai no-noscîuta.* (Cr. 4. I. 1.)

When women arrive at forty years they lose the beauty of youth.

The queen turning to Filomena, ordered her to continue.

I have already thought of the where.

I should be happy to know the when.

Do not trouble yourself about the how; I will tell you the why.

I am certain of the affirmative.

Every one answered in the negative.

Even Wednesday, and Friday, and Saturday.

The amorous myrtle grows better in the whole bush.

The vine among us is very well known.
ANALOGY.

I keep for thee mulberries, almonds, and plums.

He—am I, who fruit from evil garden brought;—And here my fig is with a date repaid.

And the author of this counsel was one who was named Polisse.

Woman is the generic name of the female of the human species.

I recollect to have made the lion eat of the flesh of the lionness.

Amongst many white doves a black crow adds more beauty than a white swan.

NUMBER, OR FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Masculine nouns, ending in o, a, e, form the plural by changing o, a, e, into i; as,

- libro, book;
- cavalo, horse;
- poeta, poet;
- clima, climate;
- fiori, flower;
- lepre, hare;

Feminine nouns, ending in o, e, form the plural by changing o, e, into i; as,

- mano, hand;
- arte, art;
- fonte, fountain;

Feminine nouns ending in a, form the plural by changing a into s;

- casa, house;
- mensa, table;
SUBSTANTIVES.

Nouns ending in i, u, or in ie, or with an accented vowel, do not change their termination in the plural; as,

\[ \text{éstasi}, \text{ extacy}; \text{ gru, crane}; \text{ spécie, sort}; \text{ re, * king}; \text{ città, * city}; \text{ virtù, virtue}; \]

\[ \text{éstasi}, \text{ extacies}; \text{ gru, cranes}; \text{ spécie, sorts}; \text{ re, kings}; \text{ città, cities}; \text{ virtù, virtues}. \]

The following nouns in the plural have an irregular formation:

\[ \text{Dio, God; uómino, man; bue, ox; Dèi, Gods; uòmini, men; buòi, oxen.} \]

**EXAMPLES.**

Allúni cavalli si dipulano a vetúra, altri a càrro. (Cr. 6. 9.)

El divisa la terra in sette clími. (But. Com. Dant.)

Ed è prová sul primo aprir de' fíori. (Petr. c. 38.)

Cólie me mani avrì già posto in terra—Quèste membra noiose. (Petr. s. 29.)

Qualcuna d'este viti—Chiu-da oman quèste d'è fónti di piánto. (Petr. c. 46.)

E di quello un mézzo bicchiér per uómino dèsse alle prime min-se. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)

E questo è essere in éstasi. (But. Com. Dant.)

Le grat hanno un loro re, e tutte lo sérmona. (Fior. Vt. c. 19.)

Dè quáli animálì sono quassi infinite le spécie. (Gell. Circ. 2. 23.)

Some horses are destined for burden, others to the carriage.

The earth is divided into seven climates.

And I experienced it at the first blooming of the flowers.

I should have already with my own hands laid in the ground these wearisome limbs.

Let one of these nights close these two fountains of tears.

And of that [wine] he should give half a tumbler to each man at the first course.

And this is to be in extacy.

The cranes have a king, and all serve him.

Of which animals, the species are almost infinite.

* Such nouns are generally contracted; as re from rége, città from citta, virtù from virtude; and when th y are used entire, that is, without the suppression of any syllable rége, citta, virtù, they change their termination, and make in the plural régia, 'kings'; città, 'cities'; virtù, 'virtues' according to the general rule.
ANALOGY.

Cities are unfriendly, the woods are friendly to my thoughts.

All the kings in the world are inferior to your husband.

Soon the gods of the Abyss in different bands, rush from all sides to the lofty gates.

Seeing many men frequent the court of her father.

Wherefore it happened, that the oxen, the asses, the goats, went astray through the fields.

Many nouns in o in the plural end in i, and more elegantly in a; as,

- anel1o, ring;
  - (or anél1a,
  - láb1ro, lip;
  - (or láb1ra,
  - píg1no, fist;
  - (or píg1na,

Some have only the termination in a in the plural; as,

- migli1o, mile;
- stá1io, bushel;
- úvo, egg;

[For a list of Words in o, making the plural in i or a, see Appendix, D.]

Riso, 'laughter'; mémbr0, 'limb', or 'member of the human body', form their plural in i and a; risti, rista, 'laughter'; mém0, mémbr0, 'limbs': but riso, 'rice'; mémbr0, 'member of a corporation or political body', form their plural in i only; risti, 'rice'; mémbri, 'members'.

Gést0, 'exploit'; frut1to, 'the fruit of a tree'; légno, 'firewood,' form their plural in i and a; gés1ti, gés1ta, 'exploits'; frut1ti, frut1ta, 'fruits'; lég1ni, lég1na, 'wood': but gés1t0, 'gesture'; frút1t0, 'production of the earth, or 'income'; lég1no, 'the hard substance of a tree', 'a ship,' or 'a coach,' form their plural in i only; gés1t0, 'gestures'; frút1ti, 'produce' or 'income'; lég1ni, 'billets of wood,' 'ships,' or 'coaches'.
SUBSTANTIVES.

O'sso, 'bone', has a treble termination in the plural, making óssi, ósse, óssa, 'bones'.

When these nouns take the termination in a in the plural, they become feminine, and receive the article le before them; as, le anélía, 'the rings'; le miglia, 'the miles'; le frütta, 'the fruits'; le ósse or le óssa, 'the bones.'

Finally there are, in Italian, as well as in all other languages, some nouns which have only the singular number; as, all proper names,* names of metals, and the words próle, 'generation'; progénie, 'progeny'; stirpe, 'race'; māne, 'morning'; mièle, 'honey,' &c.; and others which have only the plural; as, lāri, 'household gods'; annálī, 'annals'; calzóni, 'breeches'; vānni, 'wings'; fóbici, 'scissors'; nónze, 'nuptials'; est'éque, 'exequies'; rēnī, 'the reins'; mollé or mollī, 'tonges'; spézie or spézi, 'spices'; frōge, 'the skin over the nostrils of a horse'; &c.

**EXAMPLES.**

Fáttei prestáre a Madóna Giacomina un dí suó anélí, quàri per sua miglie sposó la Cáturina. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

La lúnga gufra—Che del-l'anélíà fè si 'lète spéglie. (Dant. Inf. 26.)

E'lla fèce portáre i dúe cap-póni lési, e mólte úova frésche. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

Lasciárono andár Calandrino con le maggjor nísa del móndo. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

Lo spirto dálle bélle mém-brà sciólto. (Petr. s. 259.)

Tánto piú celebrió Tibério sué gësta in senáto. (Dav. Tac. ann. l. 2.)

Vivéano quásí cóme béstie di früttà, e di ghiande. (Giov. Vill. l. 1. c. 23.)

Having asked Madonna Giacomina to lend him one of her rings, there took Catharine to wife.

That long war, in which was made the rich booty of the rings.

She caused to be brought the two boiled capons, and many fresh eggs.

They let Calandrino go with the greatest laughter in the world.

The spirit freed from the beautiful limbs.

Tiberius celebrated so much the more his exploits in the senate.

They lived like beasts on fruit and mast.

*When proper names of persons, however, are taken as common, they are used also in the plural; as, i Chiabréca, i Fițíchia, i Rédiz, i Menzini, i Guidi, i Frugóni, e tanti áltri sublimi e propriissimi ingégni, i the Chiabreras, the Flíticaus, the Redis, the Menzinias, the Guidis, the Frugonis, and so many other sublimes and most worthy geniuses.*
ANALOGY.

Il fuoco cresce per le legna, e quanto più ce ne metti maggiore si fa. (Fr. Giord. 146.)

Fu non volentieri ucciso, ma fino all'ossa divorato. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

La stirpe non fa le singolari persone nobili, ma le singolari persone fanno nobile la stirpe. (Dant. Conv.)

Cristo volle per sua presenza omorar le nozze di Cana Galilea e qui è nato il primo miracolo. (Cavalc. Espos. simb. 1.)

Fire is increased by wood, and the more you put on, the larger it becomes.

He was not only killed, but devoured even to the bones.

Family does not make extraordinary persons noble, but extraordinary persons render their family noble.

Christ wished to honor with his presence the nuptials of Cana of Galilee, and there to work the first miracle.

Independently of the change of termination, there are in Italian many nouns, which in the plural undergo a certain change of orthography.

Thus all nouns ending in ca, ga, in order to preserve in the plural before the vowels i, e, the same sound which c, g, have in the singular before the vowel a, take an h, in the plural after the consonant c, g; as,

monarca, monarch; collégia, college; monaca, nun; vérba, rod; monarchi, monarchs; colléghi, colleagues; monache, nuns; vérghe, rods.

Nouns ending in co, go, consisting of two syllables, also take an h in the plural after c, g; as,

giudico, sport; luogo, place; giudici, sports; luoghi, places.

EXCEPTIONS.

Gréco, 'Greek'; póreo, 'hag'; in the plural make, Gréci, 'Greeks'; pórici, 'hogs.' Mágico, 'magician', in the plural makes either mágii, or mági, 'magicians'.
SUBSTANTIVES.

Nouns in co, go, of more than two syllables, if co, go, are preceded by a consonant, take an h in the plural; and if they are preceded by a vowel they are written without h; as,

- bisőco, laborer;       bisőch, laborers;
- albėrco, inn;          albėrgni, inns;
- médico, physician;     médici, physicians;
- teôloco, theologian;   teôloer, theologians.

EXCEPTIONS.

The following nouns,

- cárico, charge;         óblîgo, obligation;
- fôndaco, warehouse;     ripïego, expedient;
- párroco, parson;        catálogo, catalogue;
- stómaco, stomach;      impîego, employment;
- máncico, handle;        gastîgo, punishment;
- tràffico, trading;      intrîgo, intrigue;

in the plural make,

- cárici, charges;        óblîgni, obligations;
- fôndaci, warehouses;    ripîegni, expedients;
- párrochi, parsons;      catálogni, catalogues;
- stómaci, stomachs;      impîegni, employments;
- mánci, handles;         gastîgni, punishments;
- tràffici, tradings;     intrîgni, intrigues.

Several other nouns in co, go, are indifferently written with or without the h; as,

- mendíco, beggar;        { mendîchi, beggars;
  or mendîci, }
- equívoco, equivoque;    { equivochi, equivoques;
  or equivoci, }
- diáloco, dialogue;      { dialogni, dialogues;
  or diáloai, }
- apólôgo, apologue;      { apólôgni, apологues;
  or apólôai, }

[For a list of Nouns ending in co, go, and making the plural in ci, gi, or sî, sî, see Appendix D. (2.)]

5*
ANALOGY.

Nouns ending in cia, gia, and ccia, ggia, unaccented, form their plural by changing a into e, and suppressing the i; as,

lância, lance;  
lânce, lances;
frância, fringe;  
frânge, fringes;
fréccia, arrow;  
fréce, arrows;
piâggia, strand;  
piâsse, strands.

Nouns ending in cio, gio, and ccio, ggio, unaccented, form their plural by changing o into i, and suppressing the i that they have in the singular; or what is the same, by suppressing only the o; as,

bâcto, kiss;  
bâci, kisses;
frésio, honor;  
frési, honors;
lâccio, snare;  
lâcci, snares;
râgio, ray;  
râggi, rays.

But if cia, gia, and ccia, ggia, or cio, gio and ccio, ggio are accentuated, the i is never suppressed; as,

eleâcia, elegy;  
elegie, elegies;
farmâcia, pharmacy;  
farmacie, pharmacies;
leggâció, reading-desk;  
leggiti, reading-desks.

Nouns ending in chio, ghio, glio, form the plural by suppressing the o; as,

ócchio, eye;  
occhi, eyes;
múghio, bellowing;  
múghi, bellowings;
scóglio, rock;  
scógli, rocks.

Nouns ending in âio, * ôio, also form their plural by suppressing the o; as,

fornâcio, baker;  
fornâti, bakers;
filâtâlio, spinning-wheel;  
filâtâti, spinning-wheels.

All other nouns ending in io, if io is unaccented,
form their plural by changing io into j; but if io is accented, they form it by changing the o of io into i; as,

studio, study;  
studi, studies;  
beneficio, benefit;  
benefizzi, benefits;  
rio, rivulet;  
ri, rivulets;  
desio, desire;  
deni, desires.

The noun moglie, 'wife', forms the plural by suppressing the e; mogli, 'wives'.

EXAMPLES.

La contessa Matilda fondò un nobile monastério di monache. (Giov. Vill. 1. 4. c. 20.)

Il dì che costei nacque eran le stelle—in luoghi alti ed elletti. (Petr. c. 44.)

Tra brutti rócri più dègni di gálle,—che d' altro cibo fatto in umán uso. (Dant. Purg. 14.)

I sàvvi si partirono, e tornàrsi à lóro alberghi. (Novant. 6.)

Si suol ricorrere né màlì pericolosi à médici eccellenti. (Casa. lett. 49.)

Ponendo lóro grandissimi càrichi di montète. (Stor. Fist. 170.)

Le rispòste vive, le novél'e-vi érano, e gli apólogi. (Pros. Fior. 6.)

Spárî costóro per la piccola càsà, pàrte n' andò nellà còrte, e pòste giù lor lâncce, avvenne che uno di lóro gîltà la sua lância nel fiênò. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

The countess Matilda founded a noble convent of nuns.

On the day when this lady was born, the stars were in high and chosen places.

'Midst brute swine—Worthier of acorns than of other food—Created for man's use.

The sages went away, and returned to their dwellings.

In dangerous diseases we are accustomed to have recourse to excellent physicians.

Laying upon them very great imposts of money.

There were witty answers, stories, and fables.

These having spread themselves through the small house, and having laid down their lances, it happened that one of them threw his lance into the hay.

* Many nouns in zio, end also in cio or gio; as, beneficio or beneficis, servizio or servizios; but, however they may end, constantly form the plural in j; as, benefits or benefits, 'benefits'; servizis or servizis, 'services'.
Già nella sommità dei più alti monti apparivano i raggi della sorgente luce. (Bocc. g. 8. proem.)

Le gioconde odi, e le lascive elegie, a tutte le altre studiòse arti antipogono. (Dav. Tac. Perd. Eloq.)

Io solèva esser uno degli occhi del cappo vostro. (Pecor. g. 4. n. 2.)

Mi parea per tutto, dove che a me volgesi, sentire mugghi, urlì, e strida di diversi e ferociissimi animali. (Lab. 29.)

Che giovà dunque, perchè tutta spalme—La mia barchetta, poiché infra gli scoli—E' ritenuta. (Petr. c. 39.)

Dómmi, noi siámo giovani forniti.—Dell' arte nostra buon maestri assai. (Cant. Carn. 34.)

Il quale, nel liberàlib stúdi ammaestrato, sommamente i valorosì umìni onorava. (Bocc. Vit. Dant.)

Appresso costórò le sirúcchie e le múgli loro, tutte di brùno vestite, vènnero. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Already on the summit of the highest mountains appeared the rays of the rising light.

They prefer the merry odes and the lascivious elegies to all the other studious arts.

I used to be one of the eyes of your head.

I seemed to hear, wherever I turned, the bellowings, the howlings, and the cries of different and very ferocious animals.

What does it avail to spread all the sails of my bark, if she is impeded among the rocks.

Ladies, we are young bakers very well skilled in our art.

Who, being well skilled in liberal pursuits, greatly honored learned men.

After them came their sisters and their wives, all dressed in mourning.

VARIATION OF NOUNS.

Italian nouns are varied by means of certain prepositions placed before them; viz. di, 'of', in the genitive, or relation of possession; a, 'to', in the dative, or relation of attribution; da, 'from or by', in the ablative, or relation of derivation. The nominative, or subjective, and the accusative, or objective, are distinguished by the place they occupy in the sentence.

Proper nouns are generally varied with the prepositions only: common nouns with the prepositions and the ar-
ticles *il*, *lo*, *la*; *i* or *li*, *gli*, *le*, 'the'. When common nouns are used in an indefinite sense, they are varied with the *prepositions* and the pronouns *uno*, *una*, 'a' or 'an'; *alcuni*, *alcune*, 'some'.

---

**Variation of a Proper Noun.**

Subjective (N.) — . . . . . *Cesare*, *Cæsar*;

Possession (G.) — *di Cesare*, of *Cæsar*;

Relation of Attribution (D.) — *a Cesare*, to *Cæsar*;

Derivation (Ab.) — *da Cesare*, from or by *Cæsar*;

Objective (Ac.) — . . . . . *Cesare*, *Cæsar*.

Before a noun beginning with a vowel, the preposition *di* drops the *i* and takes an apostrophe in its stead; and the preposition *a* takes a *d* after it; as,

*Di Antonio*, *of Anthony*;

(*for Di Antonio*),

*Ad Antonio*, *to Anthony* (*for A Antonio*).

---

**Variation of Common Nouns.**

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied with the article *il*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective (N.)</th>
<th><em>il libro</em>, the book</th>
<th>Plural</th>
<th><em>i</em> or <em>li libri</em>, the books</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.) — <em>del libro</em>, of the book</td>
<td><em>dei libri</em>, of the books</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Atr. (D.) — <em>al libro</em>, to the book</td>
<td><em>di libri</em>, to the books</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.) — <em>dal libro</em>, from the book</td>
<td><em>dai libri</em>, from the books</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.) — <em>il libro</em>, the book</td>
<td><em>i libri</em>, the books</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*To facilitate the Variation of these and other nouns, to those who are accustomed to the Latin Declension, we have added to each relation the Initial of the name of the corresponding case in Latin; thus (N.) stands for nominative; (G.) for genitive; &c.*
ANALOGY.

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied with the article lo.

Singular.
Subjective (N.)—lo spéccio, the mirror;  
Poss. (G.)—déllo spéccio, of the [the mirror;  
Attr. (D.)—ållo spéccio, to the [the mirror;  
Der. (Ab.)—déllo spéccio, from the [the mirror;  
Objective (Ac.)—lo spéccio, the mirror;  

Plural.

gli spécchi, the mirrors;  
délgi spécchi, of the [mirrors;  
délgli spécchi, to the [mirrors;  
délgli spécchi, from the [mirrors;  
gli spécchi, the mirrors.

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

Singular.
Subjective (N.)—l’amico, the friend;  
Poss. (G.)—dell’amico, of the [friend;  
Attr. (D.)—all’amico, to the [friend;  
Der. (Ab.)—dell’amico, from the [friend;  
Objective (Ac.)—l’amico the friend;  

Plural.

gli amici, the friends;  
délgi amici, of the [friends;  
délgli amici, to the [friends;  
délgli amici, from the [friends;  
gli amici, the friends.

Feminine Noun, beginning with a Consonant.

Singular.
Subjective (N.)—la cása, the house;  
Poss. (G.)—délla cása, of the [house;  
Attr. (D.)—állla cása, to the [house;  
Der. (Ab.)—délla cása, from the [house;  
Objective (Ac.)—la cása, the house;  

Plural.

le cásse, the houses;  
délle cásse, of the houses;  
alle cásse, to the houses;  
délle cásse, from the [houses;  
le cásse, the houses.
SUBSTANTIVES.

Feminine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Subjective (N.) — <em>l’ ánima</em>, the soul</td>
<td><em>le ánime</em>, the souls</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.) — <em>dell’ ánima</em>, of the [soul]</td>
<td><em>delle ánime</em>, of the souls</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. (D.) — <em>all’ ánima</em>, to the [soul]</td>
<td><em>álle ánime</em>, to the souls</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.) — <em>dall’ ánima</em>, from [the soul]</td>
<td><em>dálle ánime</em>, from the [souls]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.) — <em>l’ ánima</em>, the soul</td>
<td><em>le ánime</em>, the souls</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

—

**Variation of Common Nouns used in an Indefinite Sense.**

Masculine Noun.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Subjective (N.) — <em>un uccello</em>, a bird</td>
<td><em>alcúni uccellí</em>, some birds</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.) — <em>d’ un uccello</em>, of a [bird]</td>
<td><em>d’ alcúni uccellí</em>, of some [birds]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. (D.) — <em>ad un uccello</em>, to a [bird]</td>
<td><em>ad alcúni uccellí</em>, to some [birds]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.) — <em>da un uccello</em>, [from a bird]</td>
<td><em>da alcúni uccellí</em>, from some [birds]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.) — <em>un uccello</em>, a bird</td>
<td><em>alcúni uccellí</em>, some birds</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

—

Feminine Noun.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Subjective (N.) — <em>una méla</em>, an apple</td>
<td><em>alcúne méle</em>, some apples</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.) — <em>d’ una méla</em>, of an [apple]</td>
<td><em>d’ alcúne méle</em>, of some [apples]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. (D.) — <em>ad una méla</em>, to [an apple]</td>
<td><em>ad alcúne méle</em>, to some [apples]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.) — <em>da una méla</em>, [from an apple]</td>
<td><em>da alcúne méle</em>, from some [apples]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.) — <em>una méla</em>, an apple</td>
<td><em>alcúne méle</em>, some apples</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
E X E R C I S E II.

[The learner will supply the article according to the Gender of the nouns, and will form their Plural and vary them, according to the preceding rules.]

The study of (the) belles lettres. The country of the studio bélla lettera. patèse

Amazons. The fable of the frogs. The virtues of the Amázone. fávola rána, virtù

Romans. The hatred of the enemies. The poets of (the) Románo. ódio nemico. poèta

Latium. Lázio.

He gave praise to the valiant,* consolation to the infirm,* example to all.* He has bought the horse of the prince for esémpio tutto. — Ha comprátio cavállo príncipe per a small sum of money. -(The) fortune is sometimes piccola sómma danáro. fortúna è qualche volta unjust. towards (some) unhappy creatures, who deserve ingiusta vérso alcuni infelice, che méritano a better fate. He proposed the model of the future migliór sòrte. — Propóse modéllò avvenire² government, avoiding all the things, which had governò¹, scanzándo tutte cosá, che érano lately displeased. The prince took the public frescaménte spiaciùte. príncipe tólse públic³ books | from the | hands | of the | questors, and libro³ | di | máno¹ | ái² | questóre², e | entrusted | them | to the | pretors. | diédé cúra² | ne¹ | preítoré.

The cries and (the) howlings of the savages spread (the) strido e úrlo salvágio spársero terror among the Europeans. Thousands of people, who terróre Européo. Migliáio gíntè, che were present at the speech of Regulus to the Romans, érano prés:niti a orazióné Régolo Románo,

* To the valiant, to the infirm, to all, here used in the plural number.
wept; and he departed to return to Carthage, as he
piangero; ed égli partissi per ritornare Carthagine, come —
had promised, amidst the acclamations of the multitude.
avéva promesso, fra acclamazione multiitudine.

Thetis, wishing to render Achilles invulnerable, dipped him
Tetide, bramando di rendere Achille invulnerabile, immerso lo
in the river Styx, holding him by one of his heels.
fiume Sige, tenendo lo per uno delle calcagni.
They conducted him to the spot, and by threats and
condussero Lo si situò, e con minacce e promises they disposed him to ascend the walls.
promessa — dispersero Lo a salire muro.

He led into the field twelve hundreds of buffaloes, nine
Menò a campo dodici centinaia di bufala, nove
hundred cows, many calves, and over a thousand hogs.
cento vacca, assai vitella, e oltre a mille porco.
She had her cheeks all burnt by the many tears she
— Aveva le guancia tutte arse per molte lagrime —
had shed. Weeping, she fell at his feet,
— Piangendo, — si lasciò cadere al pié dei,
and humbly asked his pardon for (the) past
ed umilmente domandò glί perdonanza dil passato
injuries. There was found in a city of Lycia, a
— Si trovò in città di Licia,
book, which had brass leaves, — (the) leaves of brass.
libro, che avea — — foglio d'argento
Calandrino waited all the following evening with his
Calandrino stette tutta vegnente sera con robi
contrivances to catch a bat.
artificio per pigliare vispistrélo.
CHAPTER III.

ADJECTIVE NOUNS — COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

ITALIAN Adjectives end with one of the vowels, o, a, e.

GENDER.

Adjectives ending in o, are masculine, and become feminine by changing o into a; as,

\[
\text{virtuoso,} \quad \text{virtuous; } \quad \text{vino virtuoso, m., virtuous man;}
\]
\[
\text{vita virtuosa, f., virtuous [young woman:}
\]
\[
\text{sincero,} \quad \text{sincere; } \quad \text{amore sincero, m., sincere love;}
\]
\[
\text{sincero,} \quad \text{blameless; } \quad \text{natura sincera, f., blameless na-[ture.}
\]

Adjectives ending in e, are of the common gender; as,

\[
\text{cortese, m. & f., courteous; } \quad \text{modo cortese, m., courteous [manner;}
\]
\[
\text{anima cortese, f., courteous [soul:}
\]
\[
\text{fedele, m. & f., faithful; } \quad \text{consiglio fedele, m., faithful [counsel;}
\]
\[
\text{guida fedele, f., faithful guide.}
\]

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Adjectives ending in o, e, form the plural by changing o, e, into i; as,

\[
\text{ameno,} \quad \text{delightful; } \quad \text{piacer ameno, s., delightful pleasure;}
\]
\[
\text{ameno,} \quad \text{luogo ameno, p., delightful places:}
\]
\[
\text{prudente,} \quad \text{prudent; } \quad \text{gente prudente, s., prudent people;}
\]
\[
\text{prudenti,} \quad \text{uomini prudenti, p.m., prudent men;}
\]
\[
\text{virgini prudenti, p.f., prudent virgins.}
\]
ADJECTIVES.

The adjective bella, 'handsome', 'beautiful', before nouns beginning with s followed by another consonant, z, or a vowel, makes bégli in the plural; as,

bégli spécehi,  
bégli zaffiri,  
bégli occhi,

beautiful mirrors;  
beautiful sapphires;  
beautiful eyes.

Adjectives ending in a, form the plural by changing a into e; as,

prezíosa, } precious;  
prezíose, } precious stones.

gióia prezíosa, s., precious jewel;  
píetré prezíose, p., precious stones.

Adjectives ending in co, go; ca, ga; cio, gio; cia, gia; chio, ghio, glio; and io, in the singular, follow, in the plural, the rules already given for the formation of the plural of Substantives.

AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

Italian adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number; as,

uómo dótto ed ammaestrátó, a learned and well-instructed man;

buóna e virtuósó génse, good and virtuous people;

valorósú uómini, béllé dónne, brave men, fair women, pretty youths,

leggìadri giováni,

EXAMPLES.

Grande intendimento è quello d’un uómo virtuóso, cóme fu costúi. (Fr. Sacch. n. 75.)

La Sibilla è bellíssima fan-ciúlla, bénne alleváita, e virtuósá. (Lasc. Sibill. 11.)

Great is the understanding of a virtuous man, as he was.

The Sibyl is a very beautiful young woman, well bred, and virtuous.
ANALOGY.

Sia manifesta la clemenza, e sincero amore, che il deitò re portava al nostro comune. (Giov. Vill. l. 1. c. 2.)

Questa natura al suo fatòre unita,—Qual fu creata, fu sincera e buona. (Dant. Par. 7)

O anima cortese Mantova-n. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

In dubbio stato si fedel consiglio. (Petr. c. 49.)

Presè a persuader Tiberio, ch'è rivissue fuori di Roma, in luogo amén. (Dav. Tac. am. 4. 95.)

Laonde, secondo ch'io posso far congiietturà, che è quello che i prudenti uòmini chiamano indovinare, tu mostrì d'essere innamoràta agraminte. (Fienz. Aen. 150.)

Vergine sagìgia, e del bel numero una—Delle beate vergini prudenti. (Petr. c. 49.)

In me movendo dé! degli occhi i rài—Cria d'amor pensieri. (Petr. a. 9.)

E trovò in quella cassà molte preziose pietre, e legate, e sciolte. (Bocc. g. 2 n. 4.)

Ricchi delle prede d'Firentini. (Giov.Vill. l. 9. c. 320.)

Molti chierici, eziandio da lúchi che partì, cominciarono a venir al servo di Dio. (Vit. S. Giov. Gualb. 295.)

D'un medesimo peccato al mondo ieri. (Dant. Inf. 15.)

Qu'esto arco d'argento,—Che stimerésti pieno di tesoro,—Spórate son pieno di vecchie vibe. (Tass. Am. 1. 2.)

Let the clemency, and sincere love, which the said king bore to our community, be manifest.

This nature with its Maker thus conjoined,—Created first was blameless, and good.

O courteous Mantuan soul.

In a doubtful condition so faithful counsel.

He undertook to persuade Tiberius, that he should live in some delightful place, out of Rome.

Therefore, as far as I can conjecture, which is what prudentmen call to guess, you appear to be greatly in love.

Wise Virgin, and one of the beautiful number of the blessed prudent virgins.

Turning the beams of her beautiful eyes to me, creates thoughts of love.

And she found in that chest many precious stones, some set, and some not set.

Enriched with the booty of the Florentines.

Many clergymen, even from distant parts, began to come to see the servant of God.

By one same sin polluted in the world.

Those chests of silver, which you would imagine to be filled with treasures, are baskets filled with empty bladders.
COMPARATIVES.

Comparatives are generally formed by prefixing to the adjective or positive the adverb più, 'more', to express a relation of superiority: meno, 'less', to express a relation of inferiority: and si or cosi; 'so', tanto, 'so', 'so much'; quanto, 'as', 'as much'; quanto più, 'the more'; quanto meno, 'the less'; altrettantò, 'as', 'as much'; to express a relation of equality, between the objects compared; as,

lieto, happy; piu lieto, more happy;
altéra, proud; méno altéba, less proud;
béllea, beautiful; si or cosi bellea, so beautiful;
sano, healthy; tánto sano, so healthy;
famóso, famous; quánto famóso, as famous;
altiéro, proud; quánto piu altiéro, the more proud;
nocénte, guilty; quánto méno nocénte, the less guilty;
conténte, pleased; alttrettánto con- tènti, as much pleased.

Comparatives of superiority and inferiority generally require before the second of the objects compared, or, what is the same, the second term of comparison, the
ANALOGY.

preposition di, 'than', if it be a substantive noun or pronoun, or a numeral adjective; and the conjunction che, 'than', if it be any other adjective, a verb, or an adverb;* as,

più lieto di me,
men bello del viso,
più di mille scogli,
più forte che sávio,
non meno odorifero che
ségnolo spezie,
più bella che mai,

more happy than I;
less beautiful than the face;
more than a thousand rocks;
more strong than wise;
not less odoriferous than are the
drugs;
more handsome than ever.

Sometimes these comparatives are formed by the adverbs meglio, 'better', and peggio, 'worse'; and then they always require di, or che, before the second term of comparison; according to the general rule;* as,

meglio d' altri dicitimia
dóbbre,
una delle peggio maritate
che sia,
better than another ten thousand pistoles;
one of the worst-married that there is.

Very often the second term of comparison is a verb understood or a pronoun and a verb, and then this second term of comparison always requires che before it; as,

scorgévasi più pómpa che
[scorgévasi] leátà,
più bella che [è] una lámia,
scappò péggio che [scáppa]
un tóró,
intendì meglio ch' io non
ragionò,

there was perceived more pomp than sincerity.
more beautiful than a lamia;
he fled worse (more violently) than a bull;

thou understandest better
than I can speak;

* This, however, is not without exception, as we not seldom meet, in the Classica, with expressions similar to these:

U'na dónna piú bélle assai che 'l sol. (Petr. c. 24.)

Respatiámei menó córe che tutti
l'éltere ! (Bocc. Intro.)

E se meglio che altro úno far
en che lo vóglio. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

A woman a great deal more beautiful than the sun.
Do we consider ourselves less dear
than all the others?
I know how to do what I wish, better
than any other man.
Comparatives of equality always require before the second term of comparison another adverb correlative to that by which they are formed. Thus,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{si or cosí} & \quad \text{so, as;} \\
\text{tánto} & \quad \text{so, so much;} \\
\text{quanto} & \quad \text{as, as much;} \\
\text{quanto piú} & \quad \text{the more;} \\
\text{quanto méno} & \quad \text{the less;} \\
\text{altrettanto} & \quad \text{as, as much;} \\
& \quad \text{requires} \\
\text{cómo,} & \quad \text{as;} \\
\text{quanto,} & \quad \text{as;} \\
\text{tánto,} & \quad \text{as;} \\
\text{tánto piú, or} & \quad \text{the more, or} \\
\text{tánto méno,} & \quad \text{the less;} \\
\text{tánto méno, or} & \quad \text{the less, or} \\
\text{tánto piú,} & \quad \text{the more;} \\
\text{quanto, or cómo, as:} \\
\end{align*}
\]

si lieta cómo bélla, as glad as fair; 
Tánto sánó quánto io, as healthy or strong as I; 
Quánto [égli] éra famoso, as much as he was famous, 
Tánto [élía] éra bellissima, she was beautiful; 
Quánto piú altiero, tánto méno amáto, the more proud, the less beloved; 
Quánto méno nocente, tánto piú impaziente, the less guilty, the more impatient; 
Altrettánto conténti, cómo se fosse venuto il Duca, as pleased as if the Duke had come.

Sometimes cómo, 'as', and quále, 'as', 'like', are used to form these comparatives, and then they require the correlatives cosí, 'thus', and tálé, 'such'; as,

cómo il fréddo mi offése, cosí il caldo mi fa nóia, as the cold injured me, thus the heat annoys me; 
quále [cólo] asino dà in pa-réte, tal [cólo] ricéve, the ass who kicks against the wall, receives such a blow as he gives.

Tánto, quánto, altrettánto, and quále, and their correlatives, sometimes are made to agree with the nouns with which they are used; as,

tánto vólte quántne, as many times as; 
quántne ne véggonó, tántne ne desiderano, as many as they see, so many they desire; 
cinquánta Paternóstri, e altrettántne Ave-Mariés, fifty Paternosters, and as many Ave-Marias; 
pagató di tálé monéta, quáli le derránté trano státe vendúte, paid in such money, as the provisions had been sold for.
ANALOGY.

Often the adverbs *così* and *tánito* are suppressed, and the comparative is formed by the use of their correlatives only; as,

[così] bianco cóme néve, white as snow;

t’attenderò [tánito] quánto I will wait for thee as long
vuoi, as thou wishest.

To increase or diminish the force of comparatives, we make use of the adverbs *troppo*, *móito* or *assái*, or *via* or *vie*, ‘far’, ‘much’, or ‘a great deal’, before *più*, and *men*; as, *troppo*, *móito*, or *assái* *più*— *via* or *vie*
*più*, ‘much’, or ‘a great deal more’; *troppo*, *móito*, or *assái* *men*— *via* or *vie* *men*, ‘much’ or ‘a great deal
less’; as,

*troppo* piú *bélià*, a great deal more beautiful;

*móito* piú *cérè*, much more dear;

*assái* piú *lucènte*, far more bright;

*vie* piú *fôrtè*, a great deal more strong;

*móito* *men* *fôrti*, much less able.

EXAM P L E S.

*La rividi piú bélià e *men* ALTERA.* (Petr. b. 261)

*I saw her again, more beau-
*tiful and less proud.*

*Nessún visse giammái piú DI ME LIÉTO.* (Petr. c. 7.)

*None ever lived more happy
*than I.*

*Deh! se non hâi DELL VÍSO IL cor MÉN BÉLLO.* (Ariost. Fur.
c. 4.)

*Ah! if thou hast not a heart less beautiful than thy
*face.*

*E sperándo venire in miglió
*pôrto—Pói mi condússe in piú* DI MÉLE SCÓGLI.* (Petr. c. 21.)

*And hoping to come to a bet-
*ter harbor, he conducted me up-
on more than a thousand rocks.*

*Sappiáte che quelle cárere só-
*mo non *men* ADORÍFERÉ, CHE* miéno i lóssoli delle *spézé*
della vísira bôttéga.* (Bocc. g.
8. n. 9.)

*Know that those chambers
*are not less odoriferous, than*
*are the boxes of drugs in your*
*shop.*

*Sarô piú CHE MÁI BÉLLA.*

*1 shall be more beautiful*
*(Petr.)*

*than ever.*

*Quello, che védle MÉGLO*
*(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)*

*d’ALTRE DÌECIMÍLÀ DÔBBRE.*

*That, which was more valu-
*able than another ten thousand
*pistoles.*
COMPARATIVES.

Io son pur una delle peggio maritate femine che sia al mondo. (Fureuz. Luc. 4. 1.)

Scorgévasi in questo parlare di Tiberio, più pompa che lealtà. (Dav. Ann. Tác. 1. 1.)

Ella è una giovane guagglie che è più bella che una lamia. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Peggio che un toro scappò dall'altare. (Dav. Storie.)

Sè sauro e 'ntendi mé' ch'i' non ragionò. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Volfà ver me si lieta côme bella. (Dant. Par. 2.)

Saio avéssì cosi bèlla còta côme élla. (Nov. ant. 25.)

Tanto il fàccia Dio sano delle réni quanto io. (Bocc.)

Quanto trá' cavaliéri èra il Marchese famoso, tanto la donna tra 'tte l' altre donne del mondo era bellíssima. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.)

Tanto più ciéco son io di te quanto più sono amante. (Guar. Past. Fíd. 3. 3.)

E'ssa tanto più impazientemente sosteneva queste nóia quanto meno si sentita nocente. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

Della venuta de' cavalieri, i Fiorentini furono altrettanto conténti, como se fosse venuto il dux in persona. (Giov. Vill. I. 10.)

Demétrio, nostro amico, suol dire, che altrettanto gli è del le parole dell'oltrélle gente, quanto a di suoi che fu il vénto. (Sen. Pist.)

I am indeed one of the worst-married women in the world.

There was perceived in this speech of Tiberius more pomp than sincerity.

There is a young woman here below more beautiful than a lamia.

He fled from the altar worse (more violently) than a bull.

Thou art wise, and understandest better than I can speak.

Turning to me with aspect as glad as fair.

If I had so beautiful a dress as she.

May God make him as strong in his loins as I am.

As much as the Marquis was famous among the knights, the lady was beautiful among the other ladies.

I am as much more blind than thou as I am more enamoured.

She bore this vexation so much the more impatiently, the less she felt guilty.

The Florentines were as pleased with the arrival of the knights, as if the Duke had come in person.

Demetrius, our friend, used to say, that it happens with the words of foolish persons, as it does with the sounds which the wind makes.
E còme il troppo fréddo questa notte mi offésc, così il caldo m'incomi rià a far grandissima nóia. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Assai dìe bastére a ciascuno, se 'quale ásino dá in paréte, tal ricéve', senza volere oltre ingiuride. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

Tántre volte quante elli nella memória mi vi ìnc. (Bocc. Filoc.)

Non sono i giovani d' una conténti, ma quante ne vég-gono, tántre ne desiderano. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

La mattina si vudle andáre al-la chiésa, e quivi dìre cinquán-ta Paterinionstri e altri-tánta Ave-marie. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.)

Videsi di tal monétà pagá-to, quáli le derrate éranó státe vendúte. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 5.)

Un vestímento di lino sottiles-simo, e bianco còme néve. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

Po volentieri — T'atende-ró quanto vuoi. (Maff. Mer. 4. 2.)

Tróppo piú bélle glì párvc, che stimáto non azéa. (Bo.c. g. 7. n. 7.)

Mólto piú bélle e piú càre, che nòi non siímono. (Bocc. Intr.)

Ond'é ella fész — Lucénte piú assáí di quel ch' el' éra. (Dant. Par. 5.)

Védi Sansone—Vie piú för-te che sávio. (Pet.Tr. Amor.)

Ellé sóno molto men fürti che gli umini a sostenére. (Bocc. Introd.)

And as the excessive cold last night injured me, thus the heat begins now to annoy me greatly.

It ought to be quite sufficient for any one, that 'the ass who kicks against the wall, receives such a blow, as he gives,' without wishing to cause any further injury.

As many times as she comes into my remembrance.

Young people are not satisfied with one; but as many they see, so many they desire.

In the morning we must go to church, and there say fifty Paternosters and as many Ave-Marias.

He saw himself paid in such money as the provisions had been sold for.

A garment of linen very fine, and white as snow.

I will wait for thee willingly as long as thou wishest.

She appeared to him a great deal more beautiful than he had imagined.

Much more fair and much more dear, than we are.

Whence she became far more bright than she had been.

See Sampson a great deal more strong than wise.

They are much less able than men to bear.
EXERCISE III.

He has no other—more children than him. I know not, who
— ha² Non¹ — figliuolo lúi. — so² Non¹ chi
could recover my property more properly than thou.
póssa riscuotere il mio convenevole te.

Peter, who had more desire of eating than of sleeping,
Pietro, che aveva voglia mangiare dormire,
asked whether there was anything for supper. We
domandava se vi fosse alcuna cosa da cena.

are less powerful than the Greeks, they have more
siamo poderoso Gríco, essi hanno
bravery, wealth, and wisdom than we. Who
prodézza, tesoro, e sapere noi. Chi
better than I, if that money* were mine? In this
me, se quel denaro fossero mìti? questo
season the nights are longer than the days. He began
stagione notte sono línco di. — Cominciò
to coast along (the) Barbary, robbing every-one who
a costeggiare — Barberia, rubando ciascuno che
| was less powerful than he. I do not say, that it
| potéva meno lui. | non dico, che éi
| is not a sin, but God pardons greater sins to
| stia² non¹ peccato, ma l’ádio perdôna (dè) grânde — a
| him who repents himself. It appeared that she was
| chi pente² st.¹ Pa. éa che ella fosse
| whiter than (the) snow. She afflicts more than she con-
| bianco nève. — Affligge — con-
soles (not).
sóla² non¹.

None in this wretched world was so miserable as I
Nó uno quéstò sciagurátò mondo fu misero io
am. Am I not as beautiful† as (is) the wife of
sóno² io³ Non¹ béllo stia mòglie.

Richard? Who commended him so much as thou?
Ricciardo? √ Chi commendò³ il¹ tu ?

* That money, in the plural number.
† Beautiful, in the feminine gender.
The master gave as much faith to the words of Bruno, as maestra diede fede parola Bruno,

was due to any truth. I began cominciai to flee as much as I could. I will defend her certainly a fuggi potè, l'o difenderò per certo as much as I shall be able. io potrò.

The more the heart is excited, the less can (the) cuore è commosso, può man express his feeling. The more crazy he is udono esprimere il suo sentimento, pazzo è than you, the more he is enamoured. As it came into his voi, è innamorato gli venne in mind, so he did. I wish to go to hear (the) mass, pensiero, fece. Io voglio andare messa, and recommend myself to God as much as I can. e raccomandarmi Dio possò.

His presence will make it appear to us much more jóiiful. La sua presenza celery fà parere
joyful. For (the) which object (the) fortune was a great allègro. A quale oggetto fortuna fu deal more propitious to him. This family is far greater, propizia gli. Questo famiglia è grande, and a great deal more known. A great deal more pure prayers than a white dove. candide colomba.

SUPRERLAVIVES.

Relative superlatives are formed by prefixing the articles il, i, or li, 'the', for the masculine, and la, le, 'the', for the feminine, to the comparative; as, più forte, more strong; il più forte, the most strong; più zevosi, more graceful; i più zevosi, the most graceful; meno fresca, less fresh; la meno fresca, the least fresh; più belle, more beautiful; le più belle, the most beautiful.
SUPERLATIVES.

When these superlatives are followed by a second term of comparison, and this is a noun or a pronoun, they require the prepositions _di_, 'of or in'; _fra_ or _tra_, 'amongst'; after them; as,

- _il più forte di tutti gli uomini_, the strongest of all men;
- _i più veggosi fanciulli del mondo_, the most graceful children in the world;
- _il più perfetto tra tantì_, the most perfect amongst so many.

If the second term is a _verb_, the superlative requires the conjunction _che_, 'that'; after it; as,

- _il più felice che si trovi sotto le stelle_, the happiest man that can be found under the stars;
- _il più savio uomo che fosse al mondo_, the wisest man ever was in the world.

When the object compared, or the _first term of comparison_, precedes the superlative, the article of this superlative is generally suppressed; as,

- _Il fiore [il] più bello_, the most beautiful flower;
- _l' età [la] men fresca_, the least fresh age.

Absolute superlatives are formed by changing the last vowel of the plural of adjectives, into _issimo_ for the masculine, and into _issima_ for the feminine; as,

- _béli, beautiful_; _bellissimo_, very beautiful;
- _ricché, rich_; _ricchissima_, very rich;
- _fedéli, faithful_; _fedéissimi, _very faithful.

A few adjectives take the termination _érrimo_, for the masculine, and _érrima_, for the feminine, in their superlative; as,

- _celebre, celebrated_; _celeberrimo_, very celebrated;
- _salubre, wholesome_; _saluberrima_, very wholesome;
- _acere, severe_; _acerrimo_, very severe.
These superlatives may be also formed by prefixing the adverbs tróppo, móltó, or assái, 'very', to the positive; as,

piène, full;  tróppo piène, very full;
ràre, rare;  móltó ràre, very rare;
vicini, near;  assái vicini, very near:

Or by making use of such expressions as, sópra ogni áltero, 'above every other one'; sènza módo, 'exceedingly'; sènza fine, 'extremely'; fuór di misúra, 'beyond measure'; &c.; as,

sòpra ogni áltero felice, happy above every other one;
grósso sènza módo, exceedingly coarse;
bèsta sènza fine, extremely blessed;
dolénte fuór di misúra, grieved beyond measure.

Very often we form them by repeating the adjective; as,

vivo, lively;  vivo vivo, very lively;
piccino, small;  piccino piccino, very small;
lénta, slow;  lénta lénta, very slow.

To increase the force of superlatives, we use the adverbs, più, 'more'; móltó, 'much'; tàntó, 'so much'; before them; and sometimes we raise the repeated adjective to the superlative degree;* as,

più nobilissimo, very noble;
móltó bellíssima, extremely beautiful;
tànó bellíssima, so very beautiful;
grándi grandíssimi, exceedingly great.

There are a few adjectives, which beside their regular

* This form of expression is found in the earlier classics, though very seldom adopted by modern writers.
SUPERLATIVES.

Italian form, retain in the comparative and superlative degree the irregular form which they have in Latin; as,

buono, { piu buono, } better; { bonissimo, } best;
[good; or migliore,]
cattivo, { piu cattivio, } worse; { cattivissimo, } worst;
[bad; or peggiore,]
grande, { piu grande, } greater; { grandissimo, } greatest;
[great; or maggiori,]*
piccolo, { piu piccolo, } smaller; { piccolissimo, } smallest;
[small; or minore,*]

* From these two comparatives are derived the substantives maggiori and minori, which, used in the plural, are equivalent — maggiori, to 'parents', 'ancestors'; 'superiors'; — minori, to 'inferiors'; as,

Disobbediente à' suoi maggiori; Disobedient to his parents.
(Parl.)

Chi fur li maggiori tuoi? (Dant. Inf. 10.) Who were thy ancestors?

E però non renda debita reverenza àlli maggiori, né debita mansuetudine àlli minori. (Bocc. Com. Dant., Inf. 8.) Therefore he neither treats with due reverence his superiors, nor with due mildness his inferiors.

to which may be added,

SUPERIORI, superior; { supremo, } highest;
INFERIOR, inferior; INFIMO, lowest.

EXAMPLES.

Raccóntano ancora, che tra loro fu Ercole, il più forte di tutti gli uomini. (Dav. Tac. Germ.)

E'ran i più belli, e i più vezzosi pancülli del mondo. (Bocc. g. 3.)

E di tortole ho preso una nidiata—Le più belle del mondo. (Bocc. Amet. 15.)

Tra tanti, e si beli volti il più perfetto. (Petr. s. 201.)

They relate also, that among them was Hercules, the strongest of all men.

They were the most beautiful and the most graceful children in the world.

And I have taken a nest-full of turtles, the most beautiful in the world.

The most perfect amongst so many, and so beautiful countenances.
I shall be the most happy and the most contented man, that can be found under the stars.

He was the most wise, and the most wary man ever was in the world.

The most beautiful flower of our age.

That fire, which I thought would be extinguished by maturer age.

This one suffered much in his time for the love of a very beautiful person.

Having caused to be made a very rich crown of gold and of precious stones, in order to crown himself king of Lombardy.

Through their singular piety towards this Holy See, and towards us all, its most faithful servants.

Archytas, a very celebrated architect amongst the ancients.

Rhubard is for them a very wholesome medicine.

The Duke of Ghelder, his most severe enemy.

Nor doubt I at all, that there are many, who will say, that the things which I have said are very full of words and idle stories.

News is very rare to be found.

And one day, very near that room, they began to talk among themselves.
SUPERLATIVES.

Estimava il príncipe sopra ogni altro felíce. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Uómo materiále, e gróssso senza módo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Fámmi, che puói, della sua grázia dégnno, senza fine o beatá. (Petr. c. 49.)

Dolénte fuór di miséra, senza alcun indúglio, ciò che il re domandava féce. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

E'bbé un cavállo, e dà suóí fanzi il féce vívo vívo scorticáre. (Nov. ant. 54.)

Bási, e diventó piccín piccínó. (Buonar. Fier. 2. 4.)

E'lla sen va notándo lénta lénta. (Dant. Inf. 17.)

Iddío féce l'úómo piú nobi-
líssimo che gli áltri animáli. (Crusca.)

Víde l'ombra suá mólto bel-
líssima. (Nov. Ant. 43.)

Appréssso i quáli Biancafóre veniva tánto bellíssima, che ogni comparazione ci sareva scérsa. (Bocc. Filoc. 7.)

O'nde próva néllo stómaco travágli grándi grandíssimi. (Red. cons. 1. 16.)

Io non potrúi trattáre per la salúte d' méi fratéllí con mag-
giór affézion d' ánimo, nè con migliór módo di quéllo, che ho io tratúa. (Casá. lett. 21.)

Col peggióré spirít di Ro-
mágná—Trovái un tal di vói, che per su' ópra—in ánima in Cócito gid si bágná. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

O'nde nel cércchio mínóre in etérne è consínto. (Dant. Inf. 11.)

He thought the prince happy above every other one.

An exceedingly coarse and uncouth man.

Make me, O you who can, extremely blessed lady, worthy of his favor.

Grieved beyond measure, without any delay, he did that which the king wished.

He had a horse, and caused it to be flayed all alive by his servants.

He came near dying, and became very small.

It went on sailing very slow.

God made man much more noble than the other animals.

He saw his shadow extremely beautiful.

Next whom came Biancafóre so very beautiful, that every comparison would fail.

Wherefore he experiences exceedingly great pains in his stomach.

I could not act for the welfare of my brothers with greater interest, nor in a better manner than that in which I have acted.

In company with the worst spirit of Romagna I found such an one of you, as, for his doings, even now in soul is plunged in Cocytus.

Whence in the smaller circle is eternally consumed.

7*
Il quale dalla parte superiore alla inferiore dà il suo dolce, e consonante suono.
(Declam. Quintil. C.)

Le volé piéne d' ottimi vini.
(Bocc. g. 3.)

Essendo stato in vita un péssimo uomo.
(Bocc. n. 1.)

La massima attività dé' raggi solari.
(Sag. Nat. esp.)

Le minime alterazioni del fréddo.
(Sag. Nat. esp.)

Which from the superior to the inferior part gives its sweet and harmonious sound.

The cellars full of the best wines.

Having been in his life a very bad man.

The greatest power of the solar rays.

The smallest alterations of cold.

EXERCISE IV.

Let the strongest of all the Romans come forward.

The rostra were immediately covered with the heads of the most illustrious patricians. He caused, in a short space of time, to be made one of the most beautiful, and of the largest, and of the richest palaces, which had ever been seen. I esteem him the most handsome, the most agreeable, the most graceful, and the most wise knight that can be found in the kingdom of France. He was the most amusing man in the world.

França. — Era soillazevole uomo mondo.

She is the most happy woman in the world. The planet most remote from the earth. The most furious

— Et felice dôna mondo.

— E' la più felice donna del mondo.

— E' la più felice donna del mondo.

— E' la più felice donna del mondo.

— E' la più felice donna del mondo.
enemies with their tall persons, and long spears strike nemico\(^3\) le loro \(\text{alto} \) perso\(n\)a, lungo \(\text{asta} \) sediscono

from a distance. da discosto.

Having taken a very large stone, she let it fall into the well. The stone in reaching (in) the water made a very great noise. They were dressed in a garment of very fine linen. She was a very beautiful woman, wise, and very virtuous. He is a very austere man. A very celebrated poet. They would commit themselves quite alive to the flames. You are exceedingly good.

I will be the best husband in the world. He was the worst man, that perhaps ever was born. Be sure, that I have a greater desire of it than you. The very great confidence which he has with us makes him say so. We have drunk of the best wine. He does not pardon him the smallest fault. The highest parts were wrapt in a dark cloud.
CHAPTER IV.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

AUGMENTATIVES.

There are three kinds of augmentatives; those that express bigness or grandeur; those that express vigor or beauty; and those that express contempt.

To express bigness or grandeur, we change the last vowel of nouns, if masculine, into òne, ózzo, and, if feminine, into òne, ózza; as,

- cappèllo, hat; cappèlìne, large hat;*
- forèsa, country girl; foresòzza, fine country girl;
- bèllo, handsome; bellòne, large and handsome;
- fresca, fresh; frescòzza, fine and fresh.

When a feminine noun takes the termination òne, in the augmentative, it becomes masculine; as,

- dòna, f., woman; donnòne, m., large woman;
- campàna, f., bell; campanòne, m., large bell.

To express vigor or beauty, we use òtto, òccio, for the masculine, and òtta, òccia, for the feminine; as,

- giovàne, youth; giovanòtto, handsome and [vigorous youth;
- bèlla, fair; bellòccia, very fair;
- grànde, large; grandòtta, handsome and [large;
- gràsza, large; grossòccia, very large and firm.

* It is impossible to give in any other tongue the full and exact meaning of Italian Augmentatives and Diminutives; the translations, therefore, throughout this chapter, must be regarded as attempts at expressing by several words, and as far as the English permits it, the change of signification which, in Italian, is effected by a simple change of termination, forming one of the striking beauties of this language.
AUGMENTATIVES.

To express contempt, we use the terminations accio, azzo, astro, for the masculine, and accia, azza, astra, aiglia, for the feminine; as,

libro, book; libraccio, bad book;
popoloto, people; popolazzo, populace;
giovane, young man; giovannastro, contemptible [young man; gente, folks; gentiglia, rabble.

We can join the augmentative termination of bigness to that which expresses contempt, and that of contempt to that of bigness; and thus form a double augmentative; as,

uomo, man; omaccio, bad man; omaccio'ne, a very [bad man;
ribaldo, ribald; ribaldone, great ribald; ribaldona'ccio, very [great ribald.

And sometimes by repeating the termination of contempt, we form a treble augmentative; as,

bianco, white; biancastro, whitish; biancastro'ne, slightly whitish; biancastronaccio, of a [dirty white.

EXAMPLES.

Per in capo cappelloni grandi alla Spagnuola. (Lasc. Sibill. 2. 2.)

E'ra una piacevole, e fresca foresozza. (Bocc. g. 8. u. 2.)

Non vidi mai uomini piu belloni. (Caro. lett. 2. 137.)

Vedi tu, donna mia, come le nostre sìno tutte frescozze? (Agn. Pand. 47.)

*g Alle guagni, tu sei un bel donnone. (Bern. rim. 2. 7.)

Having on their heads very large hats after the Spanish fashion.

She was a pleasant and fresh fine country girl.

I never saw more large, handsome men.

Dost thou see, my good woman, how ours are all fine and fresh?

In truth, you are a fine large woman.
Sonate il campanone. (Buonar. Fier. 2. 3. 9.)

Il valoroso, e già bel giovannotto Alcibiade fu molto famoso. (Matt. Franz. rim. 169.)

Oh! come ella è ora, e frescoccia, e belloccia. (Las. Spir.)

Io avea una còneca assai grandotta. (Mes. Bin. rim. 1. 202.)

E'lla è grossoccia, tarchiata, e giuliva. (Lor. Med. Nenc.)

Fec' egli di quelle un famoso libraccio. (Allegr. 92.)

Io non son nato della féccia del popolazzo. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Noi non temiamo di un giovannastro. (Dav. Tac. Ann. 1.)

Guidaeva, gli accottellanti Giuliano, le cijurme Appollindre, non cóme capitáni, ma licenziosi e pigri, cóme la lor gentaglia. (Dav. Tac. Stor. 3.)

Accadde, che questi omacchi furo no sconosciuti de' benefici ricevuti da Gióve. (Fir. dial. bell. donn.).

Quel ribaldonaccio del fratello ha consumato tanto. (Cecch. Dot. 1. 2.)

Essendo questo un certo biancastronaccio senza troppo barba. (Fir. nov. 7.)

Ring the large bell.

The valorous and handsome and vigorous youth Alcibiades was very famous.

Oh! how very fresh, and fair she is now.

I had a paw very handsome and large.

She is very large and firm, well-limbed, and gay.

He made of them a famous bad book.

I was not born of the dregs of the populace.

We do not fear a contemptible young man.

Julian led the gladiators, Appollinaris the rowers, not as captains, but as licentious, and slothful men, like their rabble.

It followed, that these very bad men were ungrateful for the benefits received from Jupiter.

That very great ribald of the brother has consumed so much.

This one being a certain man of a dirty white (pale) color and without much beard.
E X E R C I S E  V.

[This and the following Exercise on Diminutives, are introduced solely for the purpose of habituating the learner to the formation of such words; but as all nouns are not susceptible of the same modification, and as the employment of one termination in preference to the others depends entirely on usage and euphony, nothing but constant reading, and the study of the classics, can teach the proper use of these words.]

He is a coarse and good-for-nothing man. That is a dirty, ugly servant. The kitchens of (the) great glutons are always filled with cooks. Go home, great contemptible fool, you appear to me to be beside (of) yourself. Take that large cup, and wash it well. Thou art a fine large woman. He had in that chamber large old chest, which had been made since the time of his father’s grand-father. He bites them all with that ugly mouth. This great fool wants to teach me how to know (the) things, as if I were born yesterday. Each of them had a bad large sword. They opened a large box of their father. I speak only of ungrateful, and very proud men. Ring the large bell, behold the council of the widows, that enter. People, that are born of the dregs of the rabble. I never saw men so very handsome.

— E’ grande, e da nulla uomo. Cotesta
— Cucina
— Go home, Andavene a casa
— Scioccone, voi parete mi uscito
— Piglia quel tazza, e lava lo bere. Tu
— Donna E’gli aveva quello camera
— Che era fatto fin d’alli
— Avèva spada. Aprirono cassa
— Io parlo solo ingrato, e
— Sonate campana, écco consiglio
— Vedova, che entra. Gente, che è nata féccia
— Non vidi mai uomo cost bello.
She would appear to you a fine large woman. They scattered themselves through that rabble.

Si sparsero per quello ciruma.

DIMINUTIVES.

Diminutives may be divided into four classes, viz. those that express kindness or tenderness; those that express smallness or prettiness; those that express compassion; and those that express contempt or indignation.

To express kindness or tenderness, we change the last vowel of nouns into erello, for the masculine, and into erella, for the feminine; as,

vecchio, old man; vecchiéréllo, poor old man;
pazza, fool; pazzérèlla, poor little fool.

To express smallness or prettiness, we use the terminations ino, eddo, edlo, ificio, úzzo, for the masculine, and ina, étta, élla, úccia, úzza; for the feminine; as,

fanciullo, boy; fanciullino, little boy;
ruscélio, brook; ruscellétto, small brook;
finéstra, window; finestrélla, little window;
bócca, mouth; boccúcìa, pretty little mouth;
úmido, damp; umidúzzo, slightly damp.

Some feminine nouns take the terminations ino, éttio, éllo, in the diminutive, and then they become masculine; as,
casa, f., house; casino, m., small house, or [country-house;
capanna, f., cottage; capannetito, m., little cottage;
pórta, f., door; portélo, m., small door, or [carriage-door.

To express compassion, we use the termination icciúolo, for the masculine, and icciúola, for the feminine;
and all those terminations used to express smallness or prettiness; as,

* uomo, man;  omicciúolo, poor little man;*  
* donna, woman; donnicciúola, wretched little woman;*

To express contempt or indignation, we use the terminations icleatto, icleättolo, for the masculine, and icleätta, icleättola, for the feminine; and all the terminations used to express compassion, except ione, and ìna; as,

* uomo, man;  omeicleåatto, despicable  
  * omicciåättolo, puny fellow;*

No rule can be given how to determine in which signification the terminations ione, étto, éllo, ñacio, ñazzo, icleiuolo, are used; the connexion of the words, is the only guide. Thus,

* fémina, woman;  vile feminélla, vile, contemptible little woman;*  
* giòvime, girl;  gentile giòvinélla, genteel little girl;*  
* uomo, man;  buenó omicciuioulo, good, poor little man.*

Very often, instead of diminishing the substantive we diminish the adjective which qualifies it; and sometimes we diminish both the substantive and the adjective; as,

* figliùlì tènerì, young children;  figliùlì tèneréllì, very young children;*  
* bócca piccola, little mouth;  boccùcìa piccolìna, pretty little mouth;*  
* donnìciuòlé vedòvètte, wretched young widowed women;*  
* donnì ciuòle vedòvètte, wretched young widowed women.*

Besides the above terminations there are some nouns which have a peculiar ending in their diminutive; as,

* parte, part;  particélla, small part;*  
* ìme, light;  lumìcìno, small light;*  
* ìanca, white;  bíancòlìna, pretty white.*
ANALOGY.

Others have quite an irregular termination; as,

mercante, merchant; mercantuólo, little miserable merchant;
páglia, straw; pagliúca, small piece of straw;
bácio, kiss; baciózzo, cordial smacking kiss;
amáro, bitter; amarógoño, bitterish.

[For a List of such Diminutives, see Appendix, E.]

We may join two different terminations in the formation of diminutives; and then we form a double diminutive, which sometimes, besides the idea of kindness or tenderness, expresses also that of prettiness or compliment; and sometimes serves to diminish the object still more, and to convey also the idea of prettiness; as,

cattivo, miserable man; cattivélló, a wretched man;
cattivellu'cció, wretched little man;
libro, book; libréttó, small book; libréttí'no, pretty little book.

Sometimes we make use of the diminutive termination to diminish the augmentative; and when we wish to express contempt for the object represented by the name already diminished, we augment the diminutive; as,
ládro, robber; ladróne, highwayman; ladroncé'llo;
[pilferer;
dám, lady; damúzza, petty lady; damúzza'cció, [pretended lady.

Finally, such is the genius of the Italian language in this respect, that we may even modify the verbs and adverbs by one or more syllables added to them; thus,

From baciáre, to kiss; we make baciucchiáre, { to give many little kisses one after another;

“ cantáre, to sing; “ { canterrélláre, or canticchiáre, { to hum;

“ póc, little; “ { pochino, or pocolino, { very little;

“ béne, well; “ { benino, { pretty well;

benóne, very well.
DIMINUTIVES.

EXAMPLES.

Móvesi 'l vecchierél carúto, e bianco. (Petr. 8. 14.)

O FAZZERÉLLA, tu non sai quello che si è fatto. (Macch.)

Che ancora m' odiasti essendo Fanciullino. (Bern. Ot. 1. 21.)

Che non per vista, ma per suono è noto — D'un RUGSEL-LÉTTO, che qui vi discende. (Dant. Inf. 34.)

Vide entrare un topo per la finestrella. (Nov. ant. 90.)

Quella boccuccia santa. (Bellinc.)

Dubbio che non sia un poco umidizzo. (Crusca.)

Dal primo piano di questo casinó si scende in altra stanza sotto terra. (Borgh. Rip. 132.)

Che abbiámo voi a fare, se non a mendarlo in questo capanneito. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Sólsse sul fico, e fu giunto al portelélo. (Lor. Med. c. 119.)


Avete voi mai posto mente a questo dinnicciúle? (Agn. Pand 6.)

E'gli è un certo omicciáatto, che non è nessun di voi, che veg-gendolo non l'avéisse a noia. (Lor. Med. Arid. prol.)

E vi mandano, a lor capriccio, gli omicciáttoli non solamente, ma i barbarí. (Alleg. 181.)

The hoary and white-headed poor old man moves on.

O poor little fool, you don't know what has been done.

For you hated me from the time I was a little boy.

Discovered not by sight, but by the sound of a small brook that descends there.

He saw a mouse enter through the little window.

That divine, pretty little mouth.

I doubt whether it is not somewhat slightly damp.

From the first story of this small house we descend into other rooms under ground.

What else have we to do, but to bring him into this little cottage.

He climbed the fig tree, and reached the small door.

A poor little man of low condition.

Have you ever thought of these wretched little women?

He is a certain despicable puny fellow, that there is none of you, who on seeing him would not dislike him.

And they send to you, according to their whim, despicable ignorant men as well as great and learned.
VIL FEMINELLA in Puglia il prende. (Petr.)

Una gentil pisciolae giovine. (Mess. Cin.)

Un buon omicciuolo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

I figliuoli ancor tenerelli. (Fir. Disc. an. 79.)

Con una boccuccia piccolina. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

Queste donnicciuole vedovette. (Agn. Pand. 6.)

Essendo gia una particella della notte passata. (Bocc. g. 1.)

Avendo un luminoso in mano. (Matt. Fran. Rim.)

Con quelle sue manine biancoline. (Fir. Asin. 41.)

Mercantuolo di quattro denari. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Tva vecchia, e loglio, e bruciolà, e pagliuche. (Car. Matt. a. 8.)

Se non m avessi dato tal bacigazzo. (Pataff. 9.)

Di sapore amaro gnolo, molto acre, e penetrativo. (Ricett. Fior. 19.)

Ritorni alla corte più giallo, e più cattiveluccio, che mai. (Franc. Sacch. nov. 74.)

Mi hanno portato qui il librettino degli entimmi del Signor Coltellini. (Red. lett. 2.)

Vì prego, che innanzi che sesta landroncello váda altrove, mi facciate rendersi un mio pàio d’uòse. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)

A vile, contemptible little woman, in Apulia captivates him.

A genteel, agreeable little girl.

A good, poor little man.

The young ones [of the dove] yet very young.

With a pretty little mouth.

These wretched young widowed women.

A small part of the night having already passed.

Having a small light in his hand.

With her small pretty white hands.

Little miserable merchant worth four farthings.

Between: vetch, darnel, shavings, and small pieces of straw.

If thou hadst not given me such a cordial smacking kiss.

Of a taste bitterish, very acrid, and penetrating.

He returned to the court more pale, and wretched than ever.

They have brought me here the pretty little book of enigmas of Mr Coltellini.

I pray you, that, before this pilferer goes elsewhere, you would make him return to me a pair of spatterdashes of mine.
DIMINUTIVES.

Essendomi accettò un p' di damuzzaccia salvatica. (Alleg. 57.)

Allór la baciccumia. (Pataff. 9.)

Accertatévi, che io vi portò un benône grandone. (Car. lett. 1.)

Having obtained somewhat of the character of an unseemly pretended lady.

Then I gave her many little kisses one after another.

Be assured, that I love you hugely.

---

EXERCISE VI.

The little boy took out all the flowers, that he had in the little basket. With a pretty little mouth, avéva canestro. Con bêcca, whose lips looked like two little rubies. Dost thou think that I will suffer that thou shouldst pawn my little gown? He conducted me through certain remote narrow lanes. Like the little sheep that come out of the fold, first one, then two, then three, and the others remain a little timid, lowering down their eyes and their nose. Clothed in sackcloth, with a miserable little hat. She was somewhat slightly malicious. I have found him with a little book in his hand. Do not be sparing with me of a discreet little smile. The other was a child very small, who was not yet one year old.

giovine trássse tutto fibre, che egli le c'â lâbbre parévanò — dúe rubini. | tu² think | that I will suffer that thou | shouldst pawn my | little gown? He conducted me through certain | gonnella? E'gli mise² mi² per cèrta remote | narrow lanes. Like the little sheep that | come out | of the | fold, | first one, | then two, | then | ésceno | dal | chiuso, | ad una, | a dúe, | a three, and the others remain a little timid, lowering | tre, | e áll'a stâanno timidità, atterèn- down | their | eyes and | their | nose. Clothed | in | do | gli | occhio e | il | muso. Vestìo | di | sackcloth, with a miserable little hat. She was | sacco, con — vil cappello. E'lla èra somewhat slightly malicious. I have found him with a | aiquânto malizioso. Io ho trovato⁴ le¹ con | little book in his hand. Do not be sparing with | libro — máno. Non vogliade èscermi | me of a discreet little smile. The other was a child | avéa | discreto riso. L'altro era fanciullo | very small, who | was | not yet one year old. | piccolo, che | avéa³ | non² ancora¹ un² anno² —
ANALOGY.

Who is this contemptible little man, that has come to insult us in our house? He had a torn little cap. Little boxes made of boards, Accompany the little master. Thus the blind little child flatters (the) lovers. The poor little woman, having heard these words, said, Have a very little (of) patience.


CHAPTER V.

NUMERALS.

CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1

U'no, nine; ten; two; thirty; twelve; thirteen; four; fifteen; sixteen; seventeen; eighteen; nineteen; twenty; twenty-one; twenty-two; twenty-three; twenty-four; twenty-five; twenty-six; twenty-seven; twenty-eight; twenty-nine; thirty; thirty-one; thirty-two; thirty-three; thirty-four; thirty-five; thirty-six; thirty-seven; thirty-eight; thirty-nine; forty; fifty;
NUMERALS.

The numbers venti, ventisei, quaranta, ottanta, are sometimes contracted into venti, 'twenty-six'; ventisei, 'twenty-six'; quaranta, 'forty-six'; ottanta, 'eighty-six'.

Cento, when followed by quaranta, cinquanta, sessanta, settanta, loses its last syllable, and makes cenuaranta, 'one hundred and forty'; cencinquanta, 'one hundred and fifty'; censessanta, 'one hundred and sixty'; censettanta, 'one hundred and seventy'.

Cardinal numbers, except uno and its compounds, are generally of the common gender; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{sette anni, m.} & \quad \text{seven years;} \\
\text{quindici stelle, f.} & \quad \text{fifteen stars.}
\end{align*}
\]

The Italians make use of these numbers, instead of the ordinal, to indicate the days of the month; and then they are preceded by the masculine articles i or li; or by the words a, alla, or addi; as,

\begin{align*}
\text{LI VENTIQUATTRO Giugno,} & \quad \text{the 24th of June;} \\
\text{AI DICIOTTO di Dicembre,} & \quad \text{on the 18th of December;} \\
\text{ALLI QUATTORDICI di Gen\textsuperscript{e}n\textsuperscript{e},} & \quad \text{on the 14th of January;} \\
\text{ADDI D\textsuperscript{I}DICI di Marzo,} & \quad \text{on the 12th of March.}
\end{align*}

EXCEPTION.

The first day of the month is indicated by the ordinal number primo, 'first,' preceded in like manner by si, al, or addi.
ANALOGY.

When they are used to indicate the hours of the day, they are preceded by the feminine article la, le; but then the word óra, 'hour'; óre, 'hours'; is either expressed or understood; as,

\[
\text{LE DUE ÓRE,} \quad \text{two o'clock;}
\]
\[
\text{LE QUÁTTRÓ [ÓRE],} \quad \text{four o'clock.}
\]

Uno, and its compounds ventúno, trentúno, &c., before feminine nouns, like other adjectives, change o into a; as,

\[
\text{UNA LÍBRA,} \quad \text{one pound;}
\]
\[
\text{NOVENTÚNA RUOTA,} \quad \text{ninety-one wheels.}
\]

When cardinal numbers are used as substantives, all but tre and those ending in i, are made to vary in the plural; as,

\[
\text{DUE CINQUÉ,} \quad \text{two fives;}
\]
\[
\text{TRE NóVI,} \quad \text{three nines.}
\]

Mille and milióni, in the plural make mila and milióni; as,

\[
\text{DICIÓTTO MILA,} \quad \text{eighteen thousand;}
\]
\[
\text{UN MILIÓNI DI MILIÓNI,} \quad \text{a million millions.}
\]

EXAMPLES.

\[
\text{Vivéte ánni vENZÉI. (Franc. Sacch. rim. 40.)} \quad \text{He lived twenty-six years.}
\]

\[
\text{Ne figiò vENZÉTTE dèllo stesso colore. (Red. Ins. 47.)} \quad \text{It [a scorpion] brought forth twenty-seven [scorpions] of the same color.}
\]

\[
\text{D'intro la città di Róma vi sóno quaranzéi chiese cardina- lánce. (Brun. Tes. 3. 3.)} \quad \text{Within the city of Rome there are forty-six cardinal churches.}
\]

\[
\text{Un milióni, e ottanzéte migliáia, e cinquecénto fiorini d'óro. (Dav. Tac. Post. 429.)} \quad \text{One million and eighty-seven thousand and five hundred gold florins.}
\]

\[
\text{Avéndovi in quel concúlio cenuquarantóotto véscovi. (Petr. Uom. ill. 82.)} \quad \text{There being in that council one hundred and forty-eight bishops.}
\]
NUMERALS.

CENCINQUANTA dè suoi cavalieri mandò incontro all'oste dè Florentini. (Giov. Vill. I. 9.)

Più di CENSETTANTA anni cultivarono gli Dèi senza idolo. (St. Agost. Citt. Dio. 4. 31.)

La vòglia e la ragìon combatte' hanno-sette, e sette anni. (Petr. s. 80.)

Quindici stelle, che in diverse plaghe—Lo cielo avviva di tanto sereno. (Dant. Par. 13.)

Di Ferrara, li ventiquattro Giugno, Mille seicento sette. (Bent. lett. I.)

A'ì diciotto di Dicembre. (Dav.)

Alli quattordici di Genno. (Macch.)

Il detto anno addì dodici di Marzo. (Giov. Vill.)

Che orà è?—Sono le quattro. (Class.)

E'cottì la notte, ecco le due orë, ecco le quattro. (Firenz.)

Togli una libra di castoro. (Burchiell. p. 2. s. 1.)

Alt're novantuna ruota. (Dant. Conv.)

E diciamo due cinqui, due setti, tre novi, perché questi numerdì, sempre che stiano per sustantivi, si declinano. (Buom. Ling. Tosc. 2. 8. 13.)

E'ran per numero diciotto mila. (Bemb. Stor. 12. 176.)

Al padre Carrara renda in mio nome un milione di miglia di saluti. (Red. lett. 2.)

He sent one hundred and fifty of his horsemen against the Florentine host.

They adored their gods, without idols, for more than one hundred and seventy years.

Inclination and reason have striven for seven after seven years.

Fifteen stars, which in different spheres enliven the skies with so much serenity.

Ferrara, 24th June, 1607.

On the 18th December.

On the 14th January.

On the 12th of March of the said year.

What o'clock is it?—It is four o'clock.

Behold night, behold two o'clock, behold four o'clock.

Take one pound of mutton.

Other ninety-one wheels.

And we say two fives, two sevens, three nines, because these numerals, when they stand as substantives, are declined.

They were eighteen thousand and in number.

Give to father Carrara, in my behalf, a million millions of salutations.
## Ordinal Numbers

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Portuguese</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>Spanish</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Primo</td>
<td>first</td>
<td>ventesimoprimo, first</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>segundo</td>
<td>second</td>
<td>vigeimoprimo or ventunésimo, first</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>terzo</td>
<td>third</td>
<td>ventunésimo, second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quarto</td>
<td>fourth</td>
<td>ventidesimo, second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quinto</td>
<td>fifth</td>
<td>vigesimosegundo, or ventidesimo, second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sexto</td>
<td>sixth</td>
<td>ventiduésimo, second</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sétimo</td>
<td>seventh</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>oitavo</td>
<td>eighth</td>
<td>trentésimo, or trigésimo, thirtieth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nono</td>
<td>ninth</td>
<td>trentesimoprimo, or trigésimo, thirty-first</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>décimo</td>
<td>tenth</td>
<td>trentesimoprimo, or trigésimo, thirty-first</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>decimoprimo</td>
<td>eleventh</td>
<td>quarantésimo, or quadragésimo, fortieth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>undécimo</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td>*cinquantésimo, or quinquagésimo, or quingentésimo, fiftieth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>undécésimo</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>decimosegundo</td>
<td>twelfth</td>
<td>*sextantesimo, or sessagésimo, sixtieth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>duodécimo</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td>*sextantesimo, or sessagésimo, sixtieth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dodécésimo</td>
<td></td>
<td>*sextantesimo, or sessagésimo, sixtieth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>decimotérzo</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>terzdécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trecidécimo</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>decimoquarto</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quartodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quartodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quattordécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>decimoquinto</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quintodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quintodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quinduésimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>decimoseso</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sextodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sedicésimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>decimosegundo</em></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>settimodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>diciassetésimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>decimotéto</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ottodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>diciotésimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>decimonélo</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nonodécimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>diciannovésimo, or</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ventésimo</em> or</td>
<td></td>
<td>centésimo, hundredth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vigésimo, or</td>
<td>twentieth</td>
<td>milésimo, thousandth</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* We mark with an asterisk those, amongst the different names of the same numbers, that are most in use.
NUMERALS.

The ordinal numbers from *primo* to *décimo*, and *ventésimo, trentésimo*, &c., before feminine nouns change *o* into *a*; and in the plural change *o* into *i*, for the masculine, and *a* into *e*, for the feminine; as,

- *la prima donna,* the first woman;
- *le terze percóssse,* the third stripes;
- *la cinquantésima letra,* the fiftieth letter;
- *i primi* di, the first days:

And their compounds, *quartodécimo, decimoséttimo*, &c., change both the last vowel of the last, and the last vowel of the first of the two component numbers; as,

- *la quattordécima condizione,* the fourteenth condition;
- *la decimaséttima stoltizia,* the seventeenth folly.

**EXAMPLES.**

Délle quali *la prima* chiameremo Pampína, *la seconda* Filoména, la terza, &c. (Bocc. Introd.)

None waited for the second, nor the third [stripes.]

Nessuno—Le seconda aspettava *le terze* [percóssse.] (Dant. Inf. 18.)

Fra Guittone, nella *lettera* che nel mio codice è la *cinquantésima*. (Red. annot. Ditir.)

Fra Guittone, in the letter which in my MS. copy is the fiftieth.

E né di primi dentro al divin séno—Nascevmo. (Bocc. Amet. 96.)

And in the first days we were born in the divine bosom.

*La quattordécima condizione,* che deve avere la confessione, si è accelerata, (Passav. 176.)

The fourteenth condition, which the confession ought to have, is that of being early.

*La decimaséttima stoltizia,* è di quelli che vogliono fuggire. (Cavalc. Stolt. £28.)

The seventeenth folly, is that of those who desire to flee.

---

*Primi* is sometimes used as a substantive, and then has the signification of, 'ancestors', 'parents'; &c.),

Pie ramente faro avverai — A me e d’si miei primi, e a mia parte. (Dant. Inf. 10.)

They were fiercely adverse to me, to my ancestor, and to my party.
COLLECTIVE; DISTRIBUTIVE, AND PROPORTIONAL NUMBERS.

Collective.

Páio, a pair; quarantina, two scores, or forty; cinquina, the number of five; cinquantina, fifty, or two scores [and a half; settina, the number of seven; sessantina, three scores, or sixty; decina, ten, or half a score; settantina, seventy, or three scores and a half; dodicina, a dozen; ottantina, four scores, or eighty; or dozzina, a score, or twenty; novantina, ninety, or four scores and a half; ventina, a score, or twenty; centinâo, a hundred; trentina, thirty, or a score [and a half; miglio, a thousand;

Distributive.

Un na metà, one half; un sésto, one sixth; un lèrzo, one third; un sétimo, one seventh; un quàrto, one fourth; un oitavo, one eighth; un quintò, one fifth; un nóno, one ninth; &c.

Proportional.

Déppio, double; quintuplo, quintuple triplo, triple; décuplo, ten-fold; quadruplo, quadruple; céntruplo, a hundred-fold.

Collective, distributive, and proportional numbers follow the rules of other adjectives.

* Treina, quattrina, seina, ottina, &c., are sometimes used by the Italians in common language, to express 'the number of three', 'of four', 'of six', 'of eight', &c., but they have never been employed by good writers.
With numeral adjectives are generally classed the following words; viz,

 ámbi, ambidūe, ambidui, ambiduo,
 ámbē, ambidūe, ambidui, ambiduo,
 ámbo, ambodūe, ambodui, amboduo,
 amendūni, amendūne, amendūo,
 entrámbei,

 ámbi, its compounds, and amendūni, are used in speaking of masculine objects: ámbē, its compounds, and amendūne, in speaking of feminine: the others may be used for both genders; as,

 ámbi AMĀNTI, both lovers;
 ambidūe SĀVJ, both sages;
 ámbē LE LŪCI, both eyes;
 ambedūe DŌNNE, both women;
 ámbo CONVÉRSI, both turned;
 ámbo LE BRĀCCIA, both arms;
 amendūo GLI EMISPĒRI, both hemispheres;
 amendūe LE SPÔNDE, both shores;
 amendūni PÔRCI, both hogs;
 amendūne cōSE, both things, or both of them;
 Sofrōnia ed Olindo d'ina cittāde entrámbei, Sofronia and Olindo both of the same city.

E X A M P L E S.

FILÉNO e TĪRISI ÁMBI novelli amānti. (Vinc. Mart. rim. 4.)

L'ūNO e l'ALTRO SĀVIO dicēa vèro, perciò ad AMBIDŪE donē. (Nov. ant. 23.)

E siên nel cuór punite āMBE LE LŪCI—Ch'ālla strāda d'amór mi fûron dūci. (Petr. c. 8.)

Allōra AMBEDūE [dōnne] entrērōno nella fussa. (Nov. ant. 35.)

Al fine āMBE CONVĒRSI al giusto sēggio. (Petr. c. 48.)

Philenus and Thyrsis both new lovers.

Both sages told the truth, therefore he gave to both.

And let the heart bear punishment for both eyes, which led me to the road of love.

Then both [women] entered into the ditch.

Finally both turned to the seat of justice.
ANALOGY.

He seized me with both arms.
The confines of both hemispheres.
On account of which both shores trembled.
Both [hogs] fell dead to the earth.

It is at your choice, to take which of the two [things] you like best, or both.

She is called Sofronia, he Olindo, both of the same city and of the same faith.

EXERCISE VII.

He sent his brother with six cohorts, and five hundred horsemen to Terra di Lavaro. He made him grievé for this sin forty days. He passed from Tunis to Apulia with more than eight hundred Spanish horsemen. Metellus was already in Lombardy with his army of three legions, who was coming from France. Being already about (to) thirty years old.

I have here two hundred livres, with which I intended to have bought a farm. And this was four hundred years before (that) Rome was begun. He was of the age
NUMERALS.

They went to Messina the twenty-fourth of December.

— Andaronó

On the sixteenth, in St. John's.

— San Giováni.

He was baptized on the eighteenth of December, having heard of the insurrection of the legion, he went out of the palace dressed in black.

— Dicémbre.

of legione, s' usci palagio pestito di

black. The first of the month I will pay you.

— Venite a

mése pagheró vi.

Come at six o'clock, and we will speak of it.

— Giunse

(he) e parleremó ne.

He arrived at Milan at (the) one o'clock in the night. At (the)

— Miláno a
di notte. A

twelve o'clock I went to see our ambassador.

— mi portó dal nostro ambasciadóre.

It was worth thirty-one livres.

— Valéva lira.

Thou didst usurp one hundred and seventy-five thousand gold florins.

— Unuspásti d' oro floríno.

He came to an agreement on condition of paying sixty thousand ducats to the conqueror.

— accordó condizioné pagare ducato vincitóre.

Salute him for me a thousand millions of times.

— Saluté lo me. — vola.
ANALOGY.

being Pope in Rome, the Abbé of Cligni came to the court. In the time of the Emperor Frederic the First.

The twenty-first stanza.

He had tied both his feet. I bit both my hands through grief. They entered both into the garden.

I gave it to both.

CHAPTER VI.

SUBSTANTIVE PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

The Italian personal pronouns are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pronoun</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Person</td>
<td>io, m. &amp; f., I;</td>
<td>noi, m. &amp; f., we;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Person</td>
<td>tu, m. &amp; f., thou;</td>
<td>voi, m. &amp; f., you;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Person</td>
<td>egli, he;</td>
<td>or egli, they.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>or esso, m.,</td>
<td>or essi, m.;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ella, she;</td>
<td>elle,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>or essa, f., she or it;</td>
<td>or esso, f.,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Singular and Plural.

3rd Person, se, m. & f., {one’s self, himself, herself, |
|           | itself, themselves. |

Conjunctive pronouns are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into conjunctive, properly speaking, and relative conjunctive pronouns.

Personal pronouns are varied with the prepositions only.
### VARIATION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

#### i'o.

**SINGULAR.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective (N.)</th>
<th>i</th>
<th>Personal.</th>
<th>Conjunc.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)</td>
<td>di me</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>me;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)</td>
<td>a me</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>of me;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)</td>
<td>da me</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>to me;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)</td>
<td>me</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>from me;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PLURAL.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective (N.)</th>
<th>nōi</th>
<th>Personal.</th>
<th>Conjunc.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)</td>
<td>di nōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>us;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)</td>
<td>a nōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>of us;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)</td>
<td>da nōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>to us;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)</td>
<td>nōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>from us;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**TU.**

**SINGULAR.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective (N.)</th>
<th>tu</th>
<th>Personal.</th>
<th>Conjunc.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)</td>
<td>di te</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>of thee;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)</td>
<td>a te</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>to thee;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)</td>
<td>da te</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>from thee;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)</td>
<td>te</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>thee;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PLURAL.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective (N.)</th>
<th>vōi</th>
<th>Personal.</th>
<th>Conjunc.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)</td>
<td>di vōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>of you;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)</td>
<td>a vōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>to you;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)</td>
<td>da vōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>from you;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)</td>
<td>vōi</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>you.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### EGI LI.

**SINGULAR.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective (N.)</th>
<th>ēgli</th>
<th>Personal.</th>
<th>Conjunc.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)</td>
<td>di lui</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>of him;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)</td>
<td>a lui</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>to him;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)</td>
<td>da lui</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>from him;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)</td>
<td>lui</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>him;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Note: The text is a list of personal pronouns in Old Irish, including their forms, cases, and uses. The pronouns are distinguished by their gender, number, and case, with specific relationships indicated for personal/possessive, indirect object, and relative pronouns.*
### Analogy

#### Plural

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective</th>
<th>Personal</th>
<th>Conjunct.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(N.)—égli or églino,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>they;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)—di lóro,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>of them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)—a lóro,</td>
<td>lóro,</td>
<td></td>
<td>to them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)—da lóro,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>from them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)—lóro.</td>
<td>gli or li,</td>
<td></td>
<td>them.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Esso

#### Singular

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective</th>
<th>Personal</th>
<th>Conjunct.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(N.)—ésso,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>he or it;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)—d'ésso,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>of him or it;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)—ad éssu,</td>
<td>gli,</td>
<td></td>
<td>to him or it;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)—da éssu,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>from him or it;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)—ésso,</td>
<td>lo,</td>
<td></td>
<td>him or it.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Plural

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective</th>
<th>Personal</th>
<th>Conjunct.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(N.)—éssi,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>they;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)—d'ésso,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>of them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)—a éssu,</td>
<td></td>
<td>le,</td>
<td>to them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)—da éssu,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>from them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)—éssu,</td>
<td>gli or li,</td>
<td></td>
<td>them.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Ella

#### Singular

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective</th>
<th>Personal</th>
<th>Conjunct.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(N.)—élle,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>she;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)—di léli,</td>
<td></td>
<td>le,</td>
<td>of her;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)—a léli,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>to her;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)—da léli,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>from her;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)—léli,</td>
<td>la,</td>
<td></td>
<td>her.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Plural

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subjective</th>
<th>Personal</th>
<th>Conjunct.</th>
<th>Relat.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(N.)—élle or élleno,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>they;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poss. (G.)—di lóro,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>of them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relat. Attr. (D.)—a lóro,</td>
<td>lóro,</td>
<td></td>
<td>to them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Der. (Ab.)—da lóro,</td>
<td></td>
<td>ne,</td>
<td>from them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Objective (Ac.)—lóro,</td>
<td>le,</td>
<td></td>
<td>them.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

ESSA.

SINGULAR.

Subjective (N.)—essa,
Poss. (G.)—d'essa,
Relat. (D.)—ad essa,
Der. (Ab.)—da essa,
Objective (Ac.)—essa,

Personal. Conjunc. Relat.

she or it; ne, of her or it;
le, to her or it;
ne, from her or it;
la, her or .

PLURAL.

Subjective (N.)—esse,
Poss. (G.)—d'esse,
Relat. (D.)—ad esse,
Der. (Ab.)—da esse,
Objective (Ac.)—esse,

Personal. Conjunc. Relat.

they; ne, of them;
le, to them;
ne, from them;
them.

SE.

Subjective (N.)—
Poss. (G.)—di se,
Relat. (D.)—a se,
Der. (Ab.)—da se,
Objective (Ac.)—se,

Personal. Conjunc. Relat.

of one's self; si, to one's self;
from one's self; si, one's self.

Io, tu, egli, ella; noi, voi, egli or eglino, elle or elleno, are applied to animate beings; esso, essa; essi, esse; sè, may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

The pronouns esso, essa, are used sometimes to express the self-same, the very object of which we speak; and then they are elegantly supplied by the words desso, dessa, but in the subjective only; as,

in essa luce, in that very light;
esso Messer Tedaldo, the same Messer Tedaldo;
tu non par desso, thou dost not seem thyself;
ete è ben dessa, it is she, herself.

* Sè is used to express a relation of identity with the subject, and has no Subj ective.
In familiar conversation, the Italians very often employ lui, and lei, as subjectives, instead of egli and ella; but this usage, though authorized by some writers, ought never to be followed in the written language.

We find also in some classics egli and ella, used for lui and lei; and elle for loro; as, memoria d'ella, 'memory of her'; e suon di man con ella, 'and striking of hands with them'; and ello for egli and for lui; ello per ego e loro; as, ello passò per l'isola di Léno, 'he passed by the island of Lemnos'; guardati da ello, 'guard yourself against him'; ello stavanio pensierosi, 'they were pensive'; ch'alcuna gloria i réi avrébbia d'ello, 'for the guilty souls would derive no glory from them'; this license, nevertheless, must be left entirely to the Poets.

La for ella, le for élleno, and gli for egli and for eglinio; as, la mi scusi, 'excuse me'; le mi dicano, 'tell me'; gli era qui, 'he was here'; &c.; are contractions, which, however common they may be in Tuscan, and supported by the authority of several writers, are notwithstanding to be carefully avoided in the written language, especially in an elevated style of composition.

The pronouns io, tu, egli, ella, éssó, are often used as mere expletives; as,

s'io morissi, io, if I should die;

tu di? tue parole, tu, thou mayest say what thou [pleasest;

egli è una compassionc a vedrò, it excites pity to see him;

ella non andrà cost, it shall not be so;

andiamo con éssó lui, let us go with him.

Io is sometimes written i; and egli, eglinio, are contracted into é, and often written é; as,

i' non so ridiré, I cannot say;

é debbe aver inteso, he must have heard;

é si gittaró in sulla spiaggia, they leaped upon the shore;

é pensò, he thought;

donandò chi é fossero, he asked who they were.

When the pronouns me, te, se, are preceded by the preposition con, 'with', we often transpose the preposi-
tion, make an elision of the *n*; and form of them a single word; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{con me,} & \quad \text{meeco,} & \quad \text{with me;} \\
\text{con te,} & \quad \text{teeco,} & \quad \text{with thee;} \\
\text{con se,} & \quad \text{seeco,} & \quad \text{with one's self, himself, & c.}
\end{align*}
\]

We find in the classics *nosc*, *vosco*; used for *con noi*, 'with us', and *con voi*, 'with you'; but these expressions have become obsolete.

---

Italian personal pronouns are very often suppressed, the termination of the verb being sufficient to indicate the person; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{andiamo [noi] a Roma,} & \quad \text{let us go to Rome;} \\
[\text{égli] domando chi fossero,} & \quad \text{he asked who they were.}
\end{align*}
\]

---

The English reflective pronouns *myself, thyself, ourselves, &c.* are expressed in Italian by the **personal pronouns**, and the word *stesso*, m.; *stessa*, f., or *medesimo*, m., *medesima*, f., for the singular; and *stessi*, m., *stesse*, f., or *medesimi*, m., *medesime*, f., for the plural; as,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Per.</td>
<td>1st Per.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>io stesso,</em> m.</td>
<td><em>noli stessi,</em> m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>or medesimo,</em> m.</td>
<td><em>or medesimi,</em> m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>io stessa,</em> f.</td>
<td><em>noli stessa,</em> f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>or medesima,</em> f.</td>
<td><em>or medesime,</em> f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Per.</td>
<td>2nd Per.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>tu stesso,</em> m.</td>
<td><em>voti stessi,</em> m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>tu stessa,</em> f.</td>
<td><em>voti stesse,</em> f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>égli stesso,</em> m.</td>
<td><em>égli stessi,</em> m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>or esso stesso,</em> m.</td>
<td><em>or essi stessi,</em> m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ella stessa,</em> f.</td>
<td><em>elle stesse,</em> f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>or essa stessa,</em> f.</td>
<td><em>or esse stesse,</em> f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Per.</td>
<td>3rd Per.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>sé stesso,</em> m.</td>
<td><em>sé stessi,</em> m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>sé stessa,</em> f.</td>
<td><em>sé stesse,</em> f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>or itself;</em></td>
<td><em>or itself;</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>one's self,</em></td>
<td><em>his</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>himself,</em></td>
<td><em>herself,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>or itself;</em></td>
<td><em>or itself;</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

*them*
ANALOGY.

EXAMPLES.

Vid'i io in essa luce altre lucerne. (Dant. Par. 8.)

Quantunque il maggiore a diciott'anni non aggiugnèsse, quando esso Messer Tedaldo, richissimo venne a morte. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Tu non mi par desso. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Ell' è ben dassa, ancora è in vita. (Petr. a. 290.)

Che farrebbe egli s'io morissi, io? (Macch. Com.)

Tu di' tué fabole, tu; io per me non mi terrè mai salva, se noi non la incantiamo. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

E'gli è una compassione a vedersi. (Macch. Com.)

Ell' non andrà così, ch'io non te ne paghi. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Andiamo con esso lui a Roma. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Io non so ben ridir com' io v' entrai. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

E' i debbe avere inteso, che tu ragioni di lui. (Gell. Circ. 2. 39.)

Onde' èi sì città tuttì in syllà spiazzia. (Dant. Purg. 2.)

Laonde' èi gli pensò di volere la seguente mattina ristoràre. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Menati i gentiluomini nel giardino, cortesemente gli domandò, chi è fossero. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

In that very light I saw other luminaries.

Although the eldest was not arrived to the age of eighteen, when this same Messer Tedaldo died very rich.

Thou dost not seem to me thyself.

It is she herself, she is yet alive.

What would he do if I should die?

Thou mayest say what thou pleasest; as for me I shall never consider myself safe, if we do not enchant her.

It excites pity to see him.

It shall not be so, that I will not pay you for it.

Let us go to Rome with him.

I cannot say how I entered it.

He must have heard, that thou speakest of him.

Wherefore they leaped all upon the shore.

Therefore he thought to restore them on the following morning.

Having led the gentlemen in the garden, he courteously asked them, who they were.
And as a proof of this, I will take with me those things which are the most dear to her.

Where is my son, and why is he not with thee?

That day when I left my lady serious and pensive, and my heart with her.

I know not myself what I want.

And thou, thyself, sometimes seemest to me the shield of my glory.

But how is it, that so great a rumor does not sound through other messengers, or that she does not hear it herself.

Not like a flame which is extinguished by force, but like one which consumes itself.

---

EXERCISE VIII.

I know, better than any other man, how to do so, — altro uóno, — far that which I please. God never will have ciò che vóglio. Iddio mài non avrà mercy misericôrdia | on | me for this sin. Thou wilt ask questi peccâtò. dirà² her whether she wants any thing. You appear le² se nulla. perête te be a man of God, how do you say such uóno Dio, côme — a dîtel cotéstò words? Without expecting any reprehension from parôla ? Sènza attenders — riprensione you. The magistrate begun to have pity Podestà cominciò ad avér compassione²
ANALOGY.

upon  her. She pleases me so much, that I
could not express it. Having taken leave
he returned to his house. They never return
it, and we return it as soon as we have
used it. We are ready to do it, since
it pleases you. She would drive me out of the
house. I have spoken to him of you. We
make better work. You promised to me to
di
let me speak with your wife. Be
joyful, you are in your house. Do not trust
lietamente, their house. 

to them. They* had all gone to church.

e. She does not seem to
be herself. Many years (they) have not passed.
They went with him. Come with me. I have
nothing to do with thee. We have seen them
ourselves. She herself has brought them to me.
Thou hast said it thyself. They began to
speak amongst themselves.

* They, in the feminine gender.
Conjunctive Pronouns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st Per.</td>
<td>mi, m. &amp; f., to me; ne or ci, m. &amp; f., to us;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>m. to me; us;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd Per.</td>
<td>ti, m. &amp; f., to thee; vi, m. &amp; f., to you;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>it, m. or f., to him or it; glie or li,* m., to them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd Per.</td>
<td>gi or lo,* m., to himself, to his or it; gli or li,* m., to them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>le,* f., to herself, to her or it; lero, f., to them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>la,* f., to itself or to themselves, si, m. &amp; f., to one's self,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>from one's self, himself, to himself;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>from herself, to herself;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>from itself or to themselves;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>from them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>from their or it, from them;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>from her or it, from them;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Mi, ti, ne or ci, vi, are applied to animate beings only; the others may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

Conjunctive pronouns take the place of personal pronouns, when these pronouns are in the objective or relation of attribution, and are closely connected with a verb; as,

*mi potete törre [for potête törre AME], you can take away from me;*
*non ti possono muovere [for non possono muovere TE], they cannot move thee;*
*ne sarébbe gran biasimo [for sarébbe a noi gran biasimo], it would be in us a great fault;*

*The pronouns it, le, la, li, gli, le, appear, in orthography, o be the same words as the articles it, le, la, l, gli, le. The learner, however, will observe, that when the words it, le, &c., are followed by a noun, a verb in the infinitives mood, or any other word used as a noun, they are always articles; but when they are followed by a verb in a tense or the indicato, the conjunctive, or be conditional mood, or when they are joined to a verb, they are always conjunctive pronouns.*
If the conjunctive pronouns mi, ti, ci, vi, li, lo, le, la, si, ne, are followed by a verb beginning with a vowel, they commonly lose the i and take an apostrophe in its stead; as,

m'ha rotto,

he has bruised me;

c'immolle,

thou suckest us;

l'offendeva,

he offended them;

n' avremmo,

we should have from him.

When they are preceded by a verb they are joined to it so as to form one single word; as,

donarmi,

to give me;

parveti,

it appeared to thee;

mandarlo,

to send him;
CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

bisognándogli, he being in want;
dicéndoli, telling him.

In using the pronouns it, lo, li, gli, la, le, we follow the rules already given with regard to the articles it, lo, la, ‘the’; as,

IL consénti, thou consentest to it;
chi lo scrisse, he who wrote it;
L’ amero, I will love him;
GLI aspettava, he expected them.

The pronouns mi, ti, ci, vi, si, ne, are often used as mere expletives; as,

io mi sono, I am;
se tu ti hâi posto mente, whether thou hast minded;
sempre che tu ci viverâi, as long as thou livest;
ciò che voi vi dite, what you say;
si uscì del palagio, he went out the palace;
che ne fuèse del buon uomo, what had become of the good man.

EXAMPLES.

Voi mi potéte tórre quanto tengo, e donámì, siccómme vostro uomo e chi vi piace. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

S’égli parèveti il figlío mio così grânde, che non ti pòssono muovere a piétâte alcuna le amere lágrime, né gli umili prièghi, muóvami almeno questo solo mio dìtto. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Il mandârlo fuâri di cása nostra così inférmâ nel sarebbe gran biâsimo. (Bocc. g. 1. n.1.)

Il vostro sénno, più che il nostro avvediménto, ci ha gui-dâtì. (Bocc. Intr.)

Bisognándogli una buona quantità di denari, gli vénne a mémòria un ricco Giudéo. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

You can take away from me all I have, and give me, like one of your men, to whomsoever it pleases you.

If my fault appeared to thee so great, that neither my bitter tears, nor my humble prayers, can move thee to pity, at least let this single act of mine move thee.

To send him out of our house, so infirm as he is, would be in us a great fault.

Your wisdom, more than our foresight, has guided us.

Being in want of a good sum of money, there came into his mind a rich Jew.
ANALOGY.

The following day, Christ appeared in a vision to Robert, saying to him, that he had shown himself to him in the form of a leper, to try his pity.

Or it should condemn them to eternal woe.

She called him many times in vain.

If fortune had not afflicted him in one thing alone.

He sent her to a farm of theirs.

She began to doubt, lest her looking so fixedly should move his uncouthness to do something, which might cause her shame.

If you like them, I will give them to you.

Nor had it ever seemed to them, that the nightingales had at any time sung so cheerfully, as they appeared to do that morning.

He sees before him two persons, who came towards him with a lantern in their hands.

She let her head fall on the bosom of the Count.

It pleases me to speak of it.

He, walking softly, from as many of them as were ached, cut a tuft of hair in the same manner.

He has bruised me all over with a stick.
CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

E nell’ eterna poi si mal c’immóle. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Dicendo che quello che dovèa difendersi l’offendeva. (Fray. Esp. 67.)

Se egli sapèsse lavorâr l’orto, to mi crèdo, che noi n’avèmmo buon servigio. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Nè tu il consénti, Amòra. (Tass. Ger. 2. 15.)

Galeotto fu il libro, e chi lo scrísse. (Dant. Inf. 5.)

Io ho amato, ed èmò Guiscérdo, e quanto viverò l’amérò. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Gli aspettava. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Io mi sòno un pènere pellegrino. (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.)

Io non so, se tu t’hài postòmente, come noi siàmo tenûte strette. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Con tólo dàmnio ti ricorderài, sempre che tu ci vivèrai, del nòme mio. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

Andàte, goccioleoni; vói non sapète ciò che vói vi dîte. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

Del palácio s’uscì, e fuggìssì a cása. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

La dònnà se ne vènne, e del buon uomo domandò, che ne fosse. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

And in the eternal [life] thus miserably thou suckest us.

Saying that he who ought to have defended them, offended them.

If he knew how to cultivate the garden, I believe that we should have from him good service.

Nor thou dost consent to it, O Love.

The book, and he who wrote it, were [to us] Galeotto.

I have loved, and love Guiscardo, and will love him as long as I live.

He expected them.

I am a poor pilgrim.

I know not, whether thou hast minded, how close we are kept.

To thy sorrow thou wilt remember my name, as long as thou livest.

Go away, fools; you do not know what you say.

He went out the palace, and fled to his house.

The woman came, and asked what had become of the good man.

When the pronouns mi, ti, gli, ne or ci, vi, si, are immediately followed by the pronouns lo, la, gli, li, le, ne, they are generally united and form a single word; as, mi lo, mélo, him or it to me; ci li, céli, them to us; ti la, télà, her or it to thee; vi gli, végli, them to you.
Union of the Pronouns **mi, ti, gli, ne or ci, vi, si,**

**with the Pronouns lo, la, gli, li, ne.**

**MI, to me:**

- **mi lo,** (inviàte) **mèlo,** *(send)* him or it to me;
- **mi la,** (mostràte) **mèla,** *(show)* her or it to me;
- **mi gli,** *(prestàte)* **mègli,** *(lend)* them to me;
- **mi li,** *(prestàte)* **mèli,** *(lend)* them to me;
- **mi le,** *(prestàte)* **mèle,** *(lend)* them to me;
- **mi ne,** *(dàte)* **mène,** *(give)* to me of it, or to me of them; some of it, or some of them.

**TI, to thee:**

- **ti lo,** **tièlo** *(invio), (I send)* him or it to thee;
- **ti la,** **tièla** *(mòstro), (I show)* her or it to thee;
- **ti gli,** **tìègli** *(présto), *(lend)* them to thee;
- **ti li,** **tìèli** *(présto), *(lend)* them to thee;
- **ti le,** **tìèle** *(présto), *(lend)* them to thee;
- **ti ne,** **tìène** *(dò), *(give)* to thee of it, or to thee of them; &c.

**GLI, to him or her:**

- **gli lo,** **glièlo** *(invià), *(he sends)* him or it to him or her;
- **gli la,** **glièla** *(mòstra), *(he shows)* him or it to him or her;
- **gli li,** **glièli** *(présta), *(he lends)* them to him or her;
- **gli le,** **glièle** *(présta), *(he lends)* them to him or her;
- **gli ne,** *(dà)* *(he gives)* to him or her of it, or to him or her of them;—to her of it, or to her of them; &c.

---

* Some writers use these pronouns, with exception of glièlo, &c., separate;—

**mel lo, mel lo or ce lo, &c.**
CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

NE or CI, to us;

ne lo, or ci lo, (inviáte) { NÉLO or CÉLO, } (send) him or it to us;
ne la, or ci la, (mostráte) { NÉLA, or CÉLA, } (show) her or it to us;
ne gli, or ci gli, (prestáte) { NÉGLI, or CÉGLI, } (lend) them to us;
ne li, or ci li, } { NÉLI, or CÉLI, } { NÉLE, or CÉLE, }
ne le, or ci le, { (give) to us of it, or to us [of them; &c.

ci ne, (dáte) CÉNE, }

vi, to you;

vi lo, vi la, vi gli, vi li, vi le, vi ne, } { (we send) him or it to you;
 } { (we show) her or it to you;
 } { (we lend) them to you;
 } { (we give) to you of it, or [to you of them; &c.

si, to one's self;

si lo, si la, si gli, si li, si le, si ne, } { (they send) him or it to [themselves;
 } { (they show) her or it to [themselves;
 } { (they lend) them to themselves;
 } { (they give) to themselves of it, or to themselves of [them; &c.

Mé'o, télo, gliélo, nélo or célo, vélo, séló, &c.,
before a verb beginning with a consonant, except x, and
s followed by another consonant, often drop the o:
and before a verb beginning with a *vowel*, drop the and take an apostrophe in its stead; as,

**MEL disse,** he told it to me;  
**TEL trarrò,** I will draw it for you;  
**non gliel celai,** I did not conceal it from him;  
**glielʾ apérsi,** I revealed it to him;  
**celʾ avête fätta,** you have deceived us;  
**senʾ entré,** she entered.

When the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, gli, le, &c.*, are preceded by the adverb *écco*, ‘behold’; they form with this a single word; as,

**écconi,** behold me;  
**éccoeci,** behold us;  
**éccole,** behold them.

When the pronoun *lo* is preceded by the adverb *non*, ‘no, not’, it is, more elegantly, changed into *il* and joined with the adverb in a single word; as,

**non il,** she does not see him;  
**non il,** I do not deny it.

**EXAMPLES.**

_]_Tu dī' di fàrmelo vedere nè vivi._ (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

**MEL disse il pàdre mio, chʾio mi guardassi — Di por già mài nella Messēnìa il pièede._ (Maff. Mer. 3. 4.)

**Per vedér fàre il tòmo a quel maccheróni, e tórmine una sàtolła._ (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

**Senza alcùn máestro io tel trarrò ottimamente._ (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

**Po non mène maravigliò, nè tène so ripigiàre._ (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

_Thou sayest, that thou wilt make me see it amongst the living._

_My father told me, that I should take care never to set my foot in Messenia._

_To see those maccaroni falling down, and give myself a bellyful._

_Without any master, I will draw it for you very well._

_I do not wonder at it, nor do I know how to reprove you for it._
I, who was desirous of obeying, did not conceal it, but revealed to him all.

We have such friends as we choose them for us.

The lady hearing this, and after many confirmations of it made to her by Zeppa, believing it, said:

The man seeing the simplicity of the boy, took pity upon him.

You have deceived us.

How many of them do you see, whose beauties are such as mine?

How this happened to me, I will explain to you briefly.

It pleases me to make you more conscious of it, with a small tale.

In the progress of time he took them back.

She entered in: the house of the poor man.

The scholar, coming to the door, said: "Behold me here, madam."

Behold them, which she herself weeping has brought back to me.

She either despises him, or does not see him, or does not understand.

I cannot deny it, and do not deny it.
EXERCISE IX.

But what wishest thou that I should say to her?
Ma che vuoi che dica

for you, if it happens that I should speak
da tua parte, se avverte che favelletta

to her? They will rob us, and perhaps will take
1? — ruberanno, e forse torranno

to us) even anche our vita. alberghero

willingly, as I can. The youth told him every
giovanetto disse ogni thing. I will pardon him willingly, and pardon
volentieri, cime poter. Volentieri, perdono

cosa. — perdono

him now. He gave to him his benediction,
ora. — Diède la sua benedizione,
holding him for a very holy man. How does
tenendo

it appear to thee? Have I well kept my promise to you? My brother writes to me, that
pare? ho 3 ben 4 serbata 5 la 6 promise to you? My brother writes to me, that promessa 7 mio fratello scrive che without any fail, I should send to him one thousand senza alcun fallo, abbrevia 1

gold florins; otherwise his head will be cut off d'oro florino; se non la testa sarà tagliata

(to him.) I have not deceived you to deprive ho non ingannata 1 per tor you of your property. Certainly although thou

affirmest it, I do not believe that thou believest affirmi 1, 3 non credo 5 creda 5 it. Having turned himself to his wife, he 1.

Volo

asked her if she had had them. If thou dost domando se avesse avuti. Se non do it, thou wilt repent thyself of it so many times, that thou wilt die of it.
vola, che vorrai morte
RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

He granted it to him freely. I want to go — concedétte
and tell him, that he should go away. Leave me, I beg it of thee (thee of it). That which he afterwards said to me, I do not dare to tell it to you, if first you do not pardon me. The song being finished, the master said: "What dost thou think of it (does it appear to thee of it)?" You did not believe it, when I told it to you. Having kept them full a year to return them to him, I gave them away for the love of God. Behold me; what do you want of me? Behold one (of them), behold another of them.

RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

Relative Pronouns.

Singular and Plural.

Chi, m. & f. who, he or she that, they that;
che, m. & f. who, which, that;
cui, m. & f. who, which, that;

Singular.

quále, m. & f. who, which

Plural.

quáli, m. & f.

Chi refers to persons only; che, cui, quále, both to persons and things.
Che is chiefly used in the subjective, and cui in all other relations, but the subjective; chi, quale, are used in all their relations; as,

chi offendere, odia,
a chi non si mette navigando,
quella, che io cerco,
gli occhi di che io parlai,
a cui si ammiglia,
dacqui fosse l'ingiuria ricevuta,
il quale era piacevole giovane,
presso alla quale sta riposto un dilettissimo piano,
uno de' quali era chiamato Panfilo,
i nomi delle quali racconterei,

he that offends, hates;
to him who does not set himself navigating;
she, whom I seek;
the eyes of which I spoke;
to which she unites herself;
from whom the offence was received;
who was an agreeable young man;
near which should be situated
a delightful plain;
one of whom was called Pamphilus;
whose names I would relate.

Cui is generally used instead of chi, che, quale; as,

non guardando cui [or chi] moltogiàsse,
colui, cui [or che] egli amava,
colui, cui [or il quale] io uccisi,

not minding whom she jeered;
she, whom he loved;
he, whom I killed.

Che is sometimes used instead of quale; as,

un cavaliér, che [or il quale] Italia onora,
là miseria in che [or nel quale] era venuta,
a knight, whom Italy honors;
the misfortune into which she had fallen:

Sometimes it is used with the article il, in the signification of la quale cosa, 'which thing'; as,

il che [or la quale cosa] dispiacque loro,
del che avvedutosi,

which thing displeased them;
which thing he having observed.
RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

Sometimes it is used in the signification of cosa, ‘thing’; che cosa, ‘what thing’; as,

un bel che [or una bella cosa], a fine thing;
senza sapé che [or che cosa] sperare, without knowing what thing to hope:

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun ‘what’ only; as,

che dolore to sento, what pain I feel;
che ciànce tu dì, what stories thou tellest.

Che before a vowel drops the e, and takes an apostrophe in its stead; as,

ch’egli è usato, which is wont;
di ch’io parlai, of which I spoke.

Quale is sometimes used instead of chi; as,

folle è quale [or chi] crée, foolish is he who believes;
quàle [or chi] più possiede, he who [possesses] has more:

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun ‘what’; as,

quale fosse la cagione, what the cause was;
quàle fosse l’animo di lei, what her mind was.

Quale, unless followed by x, or s followed by another consonant, in the singular drops the e; and in the plural makes quai, and quale, as,

quál amore, what love;
la quál cosa, which thing;
i quái vizi, which vices;
éle quale lettere, to which letters.

To avoid the ambiguity, which would arise in Italian, from the inversion of the different words of a sen-
tence, when the pronouns che, quale, refer to the object of the proposition, they are changed for the pronoun cui. Thus the phrase, 'the city which the wood conceals', if 'city' is the subject of the proposition, is rendered la città che or la quale il bosco asconde, 'the city which conceals the wood'; but if 'city' is the object of the proposition, then it is rendered la città cui il bosco asconde, 'the city which the wood conceals'; as,

l'uomo che Dio non tene, the man who does not fear God;
l'uomo cui s'ono piglia, a man who is seized by sleep.

Instead of di cui, del or della quale, dei or delle quali; da cui, dal quale; con cui, col quale; per cui, per lo quale, &c., we often find used the adverb onde, which then assumes the nature of a relative pronoun; as,

quèi sospiri onde [or di cui] io nudri va il cuore, those sighs with which I nourished my heart;
nel là prigione onde [or dalla quale] è scidita, in the prison from which she is released;
dgni' laccio onde [or col quale] il mio core è avvinto, every tie with which my heart is bound;
quello usciutio onde [or per lo quale] era entrato, that little door through which he had entered.

Before a vowel, onde drops the e, and takes an apostrophe instead of it; as,

ond'io, of which I;
ond'era, through which he [was] had.

Chi, che, cui, are varied with the prepositions only; quale is varied both with the prepositions and the article il or la, 'the', according to the gender of the object it refers to.
The prepositions di, a, are often elegantly suppressed before cui; as,

in casa [di] cui era morto,

in whose house he had died;

vii [a] cui fortuna ha posto

you, into whose hands fortune

in mano il freno,

has put the reins.

\textbf{Examples.}

\textit{Chi offend, òdia, e non dimindica.} (Dav. Vit. Agr.)

Quel piaèbre, ch’ egli è
usato di dar a chi troppo non
si mette in sùd piagli hy

He that offends, hates, and

navigando. (Bocc. Proem.)

does not forget.

Quella, ch’io cerco e non
ritrovo in terra. (Petr. s. 34.)

That pleasure, which it is

Gli occhi di ch’io parlai
st caldamente. (Petr. s. 251.)

wont to give to him who does

Molti son gli animali a cui
si ammiglia. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

not set himself navigating

Nella mente ritornandosi che
egli era, e qual fosse l’indiciria
ricevuta, e perch’è ha cui. (Bocc. g. 8 n. 7.)
too much through its seas.

Dioniso, il quale, oltre ad
di ogni altro, era piacevole.

She whom I seek, and do

ogni altro, era piacevole gio-
nost. (Bocc. Introd.)
do not find on earth.

Una montagna aspra ed ereta,
presso alla quale un bel
maggioro piano e ditellèvole sia

The eyes of which I spoke so

riposto. (Bocc. Introd.)

warmly.

Die’ quale uno era chiama-

Dioniso, who was agreeable

mato Pamphilus. (Bocc. Introd.)
beyond every other young

Sette giovani donne, i nomi

A mountain rough and steep,

nelle quali io in propria forma raccontirèi. (Bocc. Introd.)
near which is situated a very

Non guardando cui mot-
bello and delightful plain.

teggiassero, credendo vincere furita. (Bocc. g. 1 n. 10.)

One of whom was called

Colui maritando, cui egli
Pamphilus.

amava. (Bocc. g. 10 n. 6.)

Seven young women, whose

Not minding whom she jeered, believing to conquer

names I would relate in their

she was conquered.

true form.

Marrying her, whom he

loved.
ANALOGY.

He, whom I killed.

On the Tarpeian mountain, O Song, thou wilt see a knight, whom all Italy honors.

Diana, who knew the misfortune into which Biancafioré had fallen, moderated her anger with a proper restraint.

They had heard why Ninetta had been taken; which thing displeased them much.

Which thing Marcellus having observed, said.

It appeared to me a fine thing to be out of it.

The girl took it as a good omen, to have heard this name, and began to hope, without knowing what [thing] to hope.

God knows [it] what pain I feel.

I know not what Andreuccio, or what stories these are which thou tellest.

Foolish is he who believes, that he can change the decrees of heaven by his deliberations.

He who has more subjects, is surrounded by more enemies.

Having, therefore, caused the senechal to be called, and having asked what the cause of the noise was.

The woman, knowing what her mind was, abandoned the conversation.

What love could the sighs of Titus, have caused Gisippus to feel in his heart, if not that of her.
RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

La quale cosa reggendo Andreuccio. (Boec. g. 2. n. 5.)

I quái vivi procedono dalla questa velocissima radice. (Amm. Ant. 317.)

Alla quale lettere io mi rimisero. (Casa. lett. 18.)

Che attende ciascun uom che Dio son teme. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

E cadde c'è una l'umà cui benno piglia. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Vidi che assalite in rime sparè il suono—Di quái so-rivi-eli ond'io nudi fùa il cuore. (Petr. s. 1.)

Nella belle trigione ond'era scielta—Poco è staia ancor l'umà gentile. (Petr. c. 44.)

Ilaggio in o'dio la speme, e i detrui—Ed ambi lascio ond'el mio cor è avvinto. (Petr. s. 75.)

L'er quello sciugolò, ond'era entrato, il m'è subito. (Boec. g. 2. n. 2.)

Il buon uomo, in casa cui morto era, d'est. (Boec g. 4. n. 8.)

Vidi, cui fortuna fa fìsto in u'mò il fréno—D'elle belle contrade. (Petr. c. 29.)

Which thing Andreuccio seeing.

Which vices proceed from this venomous root.

To which letters I refer.

Which waits for every man who does not fear God.

And I dropped down, like a man who is seized by sleep.

You who hear in scattered rhymes the sound of those sighs with which I nourished my heart.

The gentle soul had been but a short time in the beautiful prison from which she is now released.

I hold in hatred the hope, the ravings, and every tie with which my heart is bound.

She put him out of that little door through which he had entered.

The good man, in whose house he had died, said.

You, into whose hands fortune has put the reins of the beautiful countries.

EXERCISE X.

He determined to find who had done this.

 пенò|....|di render trovare|...|avèso²|fùle³|quèsto¹

This wretched little man who is here, I saw there

questo cattivo — i² qui³, 5 vidi⁴ 123

(that | was) sleeping, whilst I was dividing the

si dormica, mentre | dividiavo³ | 1

14
things stolen with him whom afterwards I killed. Render
juro 3 colui  uccisi. Rendi—
me at least the clothes (of mine) (the) which I have
almeno  pardo miui  ho
left there. (The) Fiammetta, whose hair* was curly,
lasciati vi  capello erano crespo,
long, and of the color of gold. This is the ring,
lungo, e — — — — oro. Quisto è anello,
which she already carried to France the first
già  porto 1 in Francia primo
time that she made that journey. with her vitta — féce quel cammino col
brother. Neither I, nor the one from whom I
tratto. , né colui received her, ever knew whose daughter she
ebbi 1 non supèrmo mai 3 figliuola 5 si
was. She, who knew well, that which she had
fossce 3 supera bene, eii  arca
to do. Having turned herself to Pamphilus, who
e 1 farc 2 — Rivolta — Panfilo,
sat at her right, pleasantly said to him. The
sedeva 4 alla 1 sua 2 destra 3 pacevolmente 6 disse 6
first (of whom), to whom the queen gave such a
primò 1 2 6 7 regina 3 impòsi 11 tal 3
charge, was Philostratus, who began in this way,
cérico 10, fu Filodoro, cominciò questo maniera.
Are you that woman, who must come to speak
Sieto quello donna, dovete venire 3 a 4 portare 5
to him? The young man is the son of Landolphus
giovane e — figliuolo Landolfio
of Prócida, by (the) whose means thou art a king;
, per 2 opera 1 scè — re;
the young woman is the daughter of Marin Bulgaro,
giovane e — figliuola
(the) whose power causes that thou art not now sent
potenza fu 2 sua 3 non 4 oggi 1 sce-
away from I'schia.
The woman, hearing him speak whom she held for a dumb man, was quite amazed. She went out of the church, by that way through which he had come. Now, determine without any other delay, and take that man whom you wish most. To (the) which, I could not resist, for any thing in the world. By the hundred steps by which one ascends to the Tarpeian rock. At which thing, all the others frightened began to flee. He saw the lady, who loves my brother. Behold the young man, whom his daughter loves.

Interrogative Pronouns.

The relative pronouns chi, che, and quale or quâli, when used to ask a question, become interrogative pronouns.

Chi always denotes a person: che denotes things, or the quality of persons and things: quale or quâli denotes both persons and things, or the qualities of persons and things; as,

chi si è? Who are you?
che è? What is it?
che cosa? What thing?
che cosa hai? What thing have you?
che cosa vuoi? What thing do you want?
che cosa vuol? What thing does he want?
che cosa vuol? What thing do you want?
che cosa vuole? What thing does he want?
ANALOGY.

*Qual diavolo?*  What demon?
*Qual paura?  What fear?
*Quali leggi?  What conditions?

Although both *che* and *quale* denote things or the qualities of persons and things, it is nevertheless to be observed, that, when we inquire of an object without reference to its intrinsic merit, *quale* is generally used; but if our inquiry refers to the intrinsic merit of the object, we use *che* in preference: as,

*Quale fu la ragione?  What was the cause?
Quale dice la gente?  What leader would be worthy?
Che gente è?  What [kind of] people are they?
Che perdoni hai fatto?  What [kind of] sins hast thou committed?

*Cui* is often used as an interrogative pronoun, instead of *chi*; as,

Con cui [or con chi] sei  With whom hast thou been?

The pronouns *che*, and *quale* or *quali*, are used also in exclamations; as,

*Che veduta amara!  What a sad sight!
Quale polvere!  What dust!
Quale martirio!  What torments!

Interrogative pronouns are varied with the *prepositions* only.

**Examples.**

*De' qual ni in, ne' l duca mio s'accorse—So non quando gridar: "Chi si è te voi?"* (Dant. Inf. 25.)

*Chi è questu che cosi starnutisce?* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

*Chi hai tu, Bocca?* (Dant. Inf. 32.)

*Che domo è costui?* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Of whom neither I nor my leader was aware until they exclaimed: "Who are you?"

Who is this that sneezes thus?

What ails thee, Bocca?

What man is this?
INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

E ndi che orazione uscete
di dire, camminando? (Bocc.)

Quál diavol ti tocca? (Dant.)

Quálni leggi? quál mi mente? quáln paúra? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Ma dílemi, quál fu la ca-
gione per la quale vi con lui vi
turbaste? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Quál doce viá degno di
loro? (Tass. Ger. I. 52.)

Che gente è, che par nel
duol e vinta? (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Che peccáti hái tu fatto? (Bocc.)

Con cùi ti crédi in essere
stato? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Ah! che veduta amára è
trista! (Tass. Ger. 19. 105.)

Quál per l’aria stésa—Pí-
verre i’ veggio! (Tass. Ger.
3. 10.)

Quál martiri! (Crusca.)

E se non piangì, di che pián-
ger sudí? (Dant. Inf. 33.)

And what prayer are you
wont to say, when you travel?

What demon touches thee?

What conditions? what
threats? what fear?

But tell me, what was the
cause that you were displeased
with him?

What leader will be worthy
of them?

What people are these, who
seem so overcome with woe?

What sins hast thou com-
mitted?

With whom dost thou think
to have been?

Ah! what a bitter and sad
sight!

What dust do I see spread
through the air!

What torments!

And if at this, thou dost not
weep, at what art thou accus-
tomed to weep!

EXERCISE XI.

Who knocks below? What fear have you? Who
píccia laggiù? paúra avéte ?

chastised you thus? What do we do? What do
castigó you? wé cosi ? — z facciamo ? —
we wait for? What do we dream of? What sleep,
— attenediamo? — sogniamo ? sobno,

or what lethargy has lulled thus thy virtue? What
o letargo ha sopito cosi la tua virtù?

chains, what prison, what crosses would be sufficient?

catena, cárcere, croce ci lasteribbero ?
Who does not know that without money* (the) idleness
— non sa sénza denáro, poltronera
cannot subsist? "Woman, what dost thou do?" to
non puo duráre? "Dóna, — tu² fái² p?"
whom the woman replied: "Dost thou not see it?"
dóna rispése: "— tu³ Non¹ védi² lo³?"

What is this secret? And what is this supposition?
è coticlo secréto? E è questa supposizione?

What thing is that which you have made me eat?
cosa è questo — axéte² fatto³ 1 mangiare?

"Sir, | I must ask your pardon for
"Signore, a me conte:ne demandár— ri perdíno di |
a great fault." The master said: "And for what?"
gran fálo." "nuístro² Disse: "E | di | p?"

What wilt thou pay me for? What couldst thou do me? If thou dost so, what shall we
2 | pagarthat t¹ | 3 | Di¹ | potrés?²

live | on² | Alas! and in what manner? The admiral
ond³ | di³? | Oimei! è médo² ammiráglio⁵
asked him then, what thing had brought him to
Demanda¹ | allóra³, | cosa² avésse⁶ condotto¹ him² 11
that. Dost thou know who those are, (the) whom
quello.¹² 2 Conísci¹ colór síno,
thou wishest (that) should be burnt? The king replied in
vudi² | s'andano? | ve rispése di
the negative. What sins hast thou committed, that thou
n³, wishest to confess thyself. In what have these
vudi² confessáre² ti³. | Di | hárno² quísto⁴
two young men offended thee? But what? they are
² gidean⁶ officéna 1² Ma ² — son
human faults, and usual faults,
umána² colpa¹, e usáta² colpa¹.

Oh, what a bitter sight! What glorious triumphs!
O, amúra² reduta¹ gl:riduso² trónso¹!

What splendid spoils! O, my son, what flame
supérba spígla! O, mio² figliuol¹, fíammo.
is kindled for thee!
axéde² ¹²

* Money, in the plural number.
CHAPTER VII.

ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

The Italian possessive pronouns are the following:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mio, m.</td>
<td>my or mine,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mía, f.</td>
<td>miei m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>túa, m.</td>
<td>thy or thine,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tía, f.</td>
<td>tue, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>suí, m.</td>
<td>his, her, hers or its,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>suía, f.</td>
<td>suí, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nóstru, m.</td>
<td>our or ours,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nóstrua, f.</td>
<td>nóstri, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>véstru, m.</td>
<td>your or yours,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>véstra, f.</td>
<td>véstri, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>suí, m.</td>
<td>their or theirs,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>suía, f.</td>
<td>suí, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lóro, m.</td>
<td>lóro, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lóra, f.</td>
<td>&amp; f.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

il mio legno,  
la tua figioléita,  
i suí aversarij,  
le nóstru pómpe,  
il lóro andáré,  
le lóro pardé;

my bark;  
thy little daughter;  
their adversaries;  
our pompas;  
their deportment;  
their words.

Mio, túa, suí, nóstru, véstru, and lóro, are sometimes used with the article substantively,—il mio, il túa, il suí, &c; and then the word aeére, ‘property’, is understood; and they are equivalent to ‘my property’, ‘thy property’, &c; as,

mangi del suí,  
non mangiá del nóstru,  
let him eat of his own [properly]  
he will not eat of ours. [lit.]

* Poets for the sake of Rhyme, often use méi, víi, instead of nóí, ‘we;’ vsí, ‘you’. This license is extended also to suí, suíi, which in poetry are often changed into suí, ‘thy or thine;’ suí, ‘his, her, hers or its;’ their or theirs;’ as,

“Di vado—Facóntra,” mi rispór;  
“ché, di nu’l—Faccia l’cammino alcún,  
per qúai to vado.—Ver’ é, ch’è altra  
féta quaggiúl vu’l;—Congiurádo da  
della Eríbn orúdá,—Che richiamavá  
Pómbre à’ corpí su’l.” (Dant. Inf. 9.)

“Seldom happens,” replied he to me, “that any one of us goes through the way, which I am going. But I was there below once before, conjured by that cruel Erichthon, who recalled the shades to their bodies.”

Tósto ch’è al píé della suí tómba vu’l,  
—couoímmi un pó-o, e pói quásti  
segnádo—Mi dimándó: “Chi far li  
maggiór vu’l.” (Dant. Inf. 10.)

As soon as I reached the foot of his tomb, he looked at me awhile, and then, a most with contempt, he asked me: “Who were thy ancestors.”

Nóí udírémo e parlerém o vu’l.  
(Dant. Inf. 5.)

We will hear and speak to you.
ANALOGY.

Miéi, tuó, nóstri, and lóro, are also used substantively,—i miéi, i tuó, i suó, i nóstri, i lóro; and then the word purénti, ‘relations’; amíci, ‘friends’; compágni, ‘companions’; famíliári, ‘domestics’; sólátì, ‘soldiers’; or seguáci, ‘followers’, is understood; and they are equivalent to ‘my relations’, ‘thy friends’, ‘his companions’, ‘our domestics’, ‘your soldiers’, ‘their followers’; as,

incóntra l’ miéi,
precédò d’à suóis,

against my relations;
requested by his friends.

Possessive pronouns are sometimes expressed by the conjunctive pronouns mi, ti, gli, le, &c., and we say ‘me lo préndo in bráccia, instead of lo préndo nelle mi’é bráccia, ‘I take him in my arms’; le si gíttò ái piédi, instead of si gíttò ái suóis piédi, ‘he threw himself at her feet’; &c.; as,

mi si strángge il cuúdre,
gli si gíttò al collo,
si lasció cascár l’uncino,
my heart melts;
she threw herself on his neck;
he let his hook fall.

To avoid the ambiguity which in many instances would arise, in Italian, from the indiscriminate use of the possessive pronouns suó, suá, suói, she; when these pronouns do not relate to the subject of the proposition, they are changed for the personal pronouns di lui, di léi, ‘of him,’ ‘of her’. Thus in the phrase ‘John loves Peter and his children,’ if the pronoun his relates to John, the subject of the proposition, it is expressed by i suóis; as, Giovánni áma Piétro e i suóis fi-gliuóli, ‘John loves Peter and his [John’s] children’; but if his does not relate to John, but to Peter, the object of the proposition, then it is expressed by i di lui; as, Giovánni áma Piétro e i di lui figliuóli, ‘John loves Peter and his [Peter’s] children’:

mando ad uccidere suó pàdre,
nya soréllìa e i figli di léi,
he sent to kill his father [the father of him who sent];
his sister and her children [the children of her sister].
POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

The pronouns suo, sua, suoi, sue, are very often expressed by di lui, di lei, even in cases when no ambiguity would arise; as,

la ingratitude di Lui,  his ingratitude;
alla casa di Lei,         to her house.

Possessive pronouns are generally varied with the prepositions and articles.

EXAMPLES.

Dietro al mio legno, che cantando varca. (Dant. Par. 2.)

Se tu ti contenti di lasciare appresso di me questa tua figliola, io la perderò volentieri. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

A lli tribuni párve lubogo e tempeto d'assalire i suoi avversari. (Liv. dec. 3.)

Pàssan vostri trionfi, e vostre fòmpe. (Petr. Trionf.)

Non umán veramente ma divino—lor andár éra, e lor sante paróle. (Petr. Trionf.)

Or mángi del suo, s'égli ne ha, chè del nostro non mangerà egli. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Perché quel popolo è si empio—Incontra a' miei in ciascuna sua legge. (Dant. Inf. c. 10.)

Vàssene, pregato dà' suoi, a Chiassi. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)

Nel pensárolo mi si strugge il core. (Maff. Mer. 4. 7.)

Piangendo gli si gittò al collo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Si lasciò cascar l' uncino à' pièdi. (Dant. Inf. 21.)

Egli lo mandò ad uccidere suo padre. (Class.)

Behind my bark, which singing cuts its way.

If thou art willing to leave with me this little daughter of thine, I will take her with pleasure.

This appeared to the tribunes a proper place and time to assail their adversaries.

Your triumphs and your pomp pass away.

Their deportment and their holy words truly were not human, but divine.

Let him eat of his own property, if he has any, for he will not eat of ours.

Why is that people so fell against my kin in all their laws.

He goes to Chiassi at the request of his friends.

In thinking of it my heart melts.

Weeping, she threw herself on his neck.

He let the hook fall at his feet.

He sent him to kill his father, [the father of him who sent.]
ANALOGY.

_Mia madre ama egualmente sua sorella, e i figli di lei._ (Crusca.)

_Avendo riguardo alla ingratitudine di lui verso mia madre mostrata._ (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

_Cominciò a ripararsi vicino alla casa di lei._ (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

My mother loves equally her sister, and her children, [the children of her sister.]

Considering his ingratitude shown towards my mother.

He began to resort near her house.

EXERCISE XII.

He loved more (the) my life than (the) your and più vita
benevolence. Fearing that he should be reprehended, benevolenza. Temendo — — non fosse ripreso,
he kept (the) his love concealed as much as he — teneva* — — ambre* nascosto* — — — 1 — could. Since thou art my friend, I will show it potéva. Perchè sei amico, insegnò* la* to thee. (The) thy virtue is great, and known virtù è molto, e conosciuto
| every where. | In coming out (from) the church
per tutto. | Uscendo chiesa
he saw this count, and (the) his little children, who — vide questo conte, e figliuolo,
asked alms. She refused to be familiar with addomandavano limosina. rifiutava — — — — — him—(the) (his familiarity.) The holy Friar, who had — dimestichiaza. santo Frate, avéa*
confessed him, having ascended (on) the pulpit, confessati* salito — — (on) i sì pèrgamo
began to preach wonderful things of him, and cominciò a predicar* maravigliosa cosa* e* of (the) his life, of (the) his fastings, of (the) his vita, vita, vita, — 9 — — — — — — — — — — — — — — — simplicity, and of (the) his innocence. I often observed semplicità* e* * e* innocenza. spesso mirava
POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

how much the sun had run of (the) his luminous journey. But what shall we say to those who feel so much pity for (the) my hunger? The public places of Rome are full of ancient likenesses of (the) my ancestors. It is not my intention to explain at present, that which the laws of (the) friendship demand. I did not seek to attach any blemish to the honesty, and to the purity of (the) your blood. Who could reply to (the) your wise words? In (the) happiness they are unhappy, in (the) riches poor, and in (the) their adventures unfortunate.

The lady then said to that one: "Come, and ask thy property—(the) (thine). I have not deceived you to rob you of your property—(the) (yours). Not only hast thou gambled my property—(the) (mine), but thou hast also prevented (the) my going. He astonished his father, and all (the) his relations, and every
one else who knew him. Minghino with (the) his com-
ción álter conoscéva. —

panions concealed himself in the house of a friend
riposé st. — casa amico.
of his. Cimon, who had already descended with
1 1. Címone, era già discéso.

(the) his troops, had determined to flee into
avéa preso consiglio, di fuggire in

some neighbouring wood.
alcuno vicino sélva.

Feigning not to know him, she sat at his—(to him at his) feet. I set in
Fatto sembiante non di conoscere, pòse a sedere

my—to me in the) heart to give thee that which
1 3 cuore di dar quello

thou wentest seeking, and I have given it to thee.
andaví cercando, e diedi.

Perótto recognised him, and weeping threw himself
riconobbe, e piangendo gittò si

at his—(to him at his) feet, and embraced him, saying:
piede, e abbracciò llo, dicendo:

"My father!" Tedалdo speaks with the woman, and
mio Padre!" para donna, e

frees her husband—(the husband of her) from death.
libera marito morte.

He sent him to kill his father—(the father of him
mando ad ucciders padre

who sent). My father loves his brother, and his
padre áma fratélo, e

children—(the children of him—his brother).
figlio.
DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Singular.

Quéstó, m. quéstá, f. this; quéllo, m. quélla, f. that; cotéstó, m. cotéstá, f. that near you; or codéstó, m. codéstá, f.

costiú, m. he, this man; costéi, f. she, this woman.
colúi, m. he, that man; coléi, f. she, that woman.
cotéstui, or he, the or that cotéstéi, or she, the or that wo-
codéstui, m. man near you. codéstéi, f. man near you.

Plural.

Quéstí, m. quéste, f. these. quélíi, m. quélle, f. those.
cotéstí, m. cotéste, f. those near you. or codéstí, m. codéste, f.

costóro, m. & f. they, these men, these women.
colóro, m. & f. they, those men, those women.
cotéstóro, or they, the or those men near you, codéstóro, m. & f. those women near you.

codéstóro, m. & f.

E’sto, ésta, for quéstó, quéstá, ’this,’ have become obsolete.

Quéstó, quéllo, and cotéstó or codéstó, may be used in speaking of both persons and things; costúi, colúí, and cotéstuí or codéstuí, denote persons only.

Quéstó and costúi are employed to point out an object near the person speaking; cotéstó or codéstó, and cotéstuí or codéstuí, to point out an object near the person spoken to; and quéllo and colúí, to point out an object at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to; * as,

* From the pronouns quéstó, quéllo, and cotéstó or codéstó, some derive the adverbs qui or quod, colí or colíd, costí or costó, which are used to designate a place, according to the rule already given for the use of the pronouns; saying, qui or quod, ‘there,’ in pointing out a place near the person speaking; costí or costó, ‘there near you,’ in pointing out a place near the person spoken to; and colí or colíd, ‘there,’ in pointing out a place at a distance both from the person speaking and the person spoken to.—

(The rule is correct; but as to the derivation, it appears to us, that the pronoun quéstó is derived from the adverb qui and the pronoun ésto, qu(i)éstó, and the pronoun quéllo from the adverb qui and the pronoun éllo, qu(i)éllo; rather than that qui is derived from quéstó or quéllo.)
ANALOGY.

questo dentro, 
quelle [donna,] 
costesti panni, 
coste [è un sole, 
colui che ne invia, 
battete costerbero, 
this money; 
that lady; 
those clothes; 
this woman is like a sun. 
that man who sends us. 
beat those [boys].

This rule is equally observed, when the pronouns 
questo, quello, and costesto or codesto, point out an abstract 
substance, or a thing which is in the person speaking, 
the person spoken to, or the person spoken of; as, 
questi sospiri, 
quella allegrezza, 
coste parole, 
these sighs; 
that merriment; 
those words.

Quello, followed by a noun beginning with a vowel drops the o and 
takes an apostrophe in its stead; and followed by a noun beginning 
with any consonant but z, or s followed by another consonant, drops 
its last syllable. Followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, z, or s 
followed by another consonant, in the plural it makes quégli; as,
quello possente è Ercole, 
quell' altro è Demofonte, 
quégli angeli, 
quégli spiriti, 
that powerful one is Hercules; 
the other is Demophoön; 
those angels; 
those spirits.

Quelli, followed by a word beginning with a consonant, is contracted 
into quéi, and often written qué; as,
quéi dolci luci, 
quéi compagni, 
those sweet lights; 
those companions.

Questa, followed by the nouns mattina or mâne, 'morning'; séra, 
'evening'; notte, 'night'; often drops the first syllable, and forms with 
them a single word; as, 
questa mattina, 
questa mâne, 
questa séra, 
questa notte, 
STAMATTINA, 
STAMANE, 
STASERA, 
STANOTTE, 
this morning; 
this evening; 
to-night, or last night.

* Observe, that after the pronouns costei, colbi, cotostei or codostei, &c. we never 
use the substantive uomo, 'man', or dôna, 'woman', in the feminine; and do not 
say costei uomo, colbi dôna; but simply costei, for 'this man'; colbi, for 'that wo-
man'; &c.: costei, colbi, cotostei, &c., containing in themselves both the adjective 
pronouns questo, quello, cotesto, &c., and the substantive pronoun lui, or le in the 
feminine, &c.—costei or questo lui, 'this man'; colbi or quella le, 'that woman'; &c.
DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Quéstò, quéllo, and cotéstò or codéstò, are often used substantively, and then they are equivalent to quéstà cósa, 'this thing'; quélla cósa, 'that thing'; &c. as,

udito quéstò (or quéstà having heard this (or this thing);
cósa),
cotes'tò (or cotéstà cósa) that (or that thing) ought not to
non si vorrèbbe fàre,
be done.

We say sometimes in quéstò, in quéstà, in quéllo, in quélía, and then the words istánté, 'instant'; moménto stéssò, 'very moment'; óra stéssà, 'very hour'; occasiòne stéssa, 'very occasion'; are understood; and in quéstò, in quélía, are equivalent to 'in this very moment', 'in that very hour'; &c. as,

in quéstò soppravvénne la
sánté,
vìdi in quélía úna náve
piccioléttà,
at this very instant came the
sévant;
i saw at that very moment a
rather small bark.

Quéllo, in speaking of a city, territory, country, &c.,
is equivalent to citià, territórió, paése, &c.; as,
quél di Perúgia, the territory of Perugia;
quél di Bérgamo, the country of Bergamo.

We very often use quéstì, quégli, and cotéstì or codéstì, in the singular, in speaking of persons, but in the subjective only; and then quéstì is equivalent to quest' uómò, 'this man'; quégli, to quell' uómò, 'that man'; cotéstì, to cotéstì uómò, 'that man near you'; as,

quéstì è il miò Signóré, this is my master;
quégli è Cáco, that is Cacus;
cotéstì, che ancór vive, that one who is yet alive.

When quégli is so used, in the plural, it makes quégliño (quégli
úmìni), 'those men.'

Quégli followed by a word beginning with a consonant is, like quelli, contracted into quéi, and often written qué'; as,

quéi che fu prérente, he who was present;
qué' risposé, that one answered.
QUÉSTO and quello, and questi and quegli, sometimes serve to denote two objects already spoken of; questo and questi being used for the near, and quello and quegli for the distant object; and then they correspond to the English expressions the latter and the former; as,

QUÉSTI SI CRÉDONO AVER DÁ-
Gli iddii il ministero
QUELLI il segreto,
quèGli vuole, che io ti perdo-
ni, e questi, che in te in-
crudeliscìa,

the latter think to derive their ministry from the gods, the former, their secret;
the former demands that I should pardon thee, the latter that I should be cruel with thee.

To the above demonstrative pronouns may be added ciò, 'this or that'; which is equivalent to questo, quello, and cotesto or codesto; in the signification of questà, quèlla, or cotesta or codesta cosa, 'this, that, or that thing near you'; but it never refers to a person; as,

ciò ch' io ne sènto, that which I think of it;
ch' è ciò che tu dì? what is that which thou sayest?
ciò udito, having heard this [thing.]

The Italian expressions, ciò che, questo che, quello che, generally correspond to the English pronoun what, used in the signification of 'this which' or 'that which'; as,

ciò chè tu hai a fare, what thou hast to do;
quello che diceva Adriano, what Adrian said.

Demonstrative pronouns are varied with the prepositions only.

Sometimes the preposition di, 'of,' is suppressed before the pronouns costui, colui, and cotestui or codestui, and the pronouns are put before the noun with which they are connected; as,

al costui tempo (for al tempò in the time of this one;
dì costui),
DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

per lo colui consiglio (for per
lo consiglio di colui),

per le costoro opere (for per
le opere di costoro),

by the counsel of that one;

for the deeds of those.

EXAMPLES.

Signora, tenete questo dena-
ro. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)

Le mie notti fa triste, e i giorni
oscui—Quella, che n'ha portato
i pensier miei. (Petr. s. 250.)

Veggendovi cotesti panni, vi
ho creduto lui. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

Cosi costei ch' è tra le donne
un soile. (Petr. s. 9.)

La donna, che colui che a te
ne invia—Spesso dal sonno la-
grimando desia. (Petr. s. 8.)

Perché battete voi cotestó-
ro? (Nov. ant. 45.)

Che fanno meco omái questi
sospiri,—Che nasceno di dolore? (Petr. c. 33.)

Io giudicherèi ottimamente sùt-
to, che quellaiesta, quella alle-
grézza, che noi potessimo, pren-
déssimo. (Bocc. Introd.)

Voi mi parète uomo di Dio,
come dite voi coteste parole? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Colui ch'è seco è quel possèn-
te e forte Ercole, quell'altro
Demofonte. (Petr. Tr. Am.)

Quelgli angeli, e quelgli spí-
riti. (Cinon. t. 4.)

Quel dolci lumi—S'aquistan
per ventura, e non per arte. (Petr.
s. 224.)

E così la portò a quel suoi
compagni. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.)

Madam, take this money.

That lady who has taken away
my thoughts makes my nights sad,
and my days gloomy.

Seeing you with those clothes, I
took you for him.

Thus this woman, who is like a
sun amongst the other women.

The lady, who often wakens from
his sleep, weeping, him who sends
us to thee.

Why do you beat those boys?

What do these sighs which
sprung from grief do now with me?

I should think it very well done
that we should take that enjoyment
—that merriment, which we could.

You appear to me to be a man
of God, how do you say those
words?

That one who is with him, is
that powerful and strong Hercules,
the other is Demophoön.

Those angels and those spirits.

Those sweet lights are ac-
quired by good luck and not by
art.

And thus he carried her to those
companions of his.
Di questo di stamattina sarò
tenuto a voi. (Bocc. g. 10. n.
9.)

Stamáne era un fanciullo, e or
son vecchio. (Petr. c. 11.)

Égli ci è stata venuto un dé'
suoi fratelli. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Ubbriaco, fastidiioso, tu non c'
entrerà stanotte. (Bocc. g. 7.
n. 4.)

Uditò questo. (Petr. Tr. Tem.)

Figliuola mia, cotesto non
si vorrebbe fare. (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 8.)

In questo la fante di lei
sopravvénne. (Bocc. g. 8. n.
7.)

Com' i' vidi una nave piccio-
Letta—Venir per l'acqua verso
noi in quella. (Dant. Inf. 8.)

Passando per quello di Pe-
rúgia. (Stor. Pist. 50.)

Questi è il mio Signore,
questi veramente è Messer Torèllo.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Quegli è Caco—Che sotto il
sasso di monte Aventino,—Di sán-
gue fece spesse volte lacù. (Dant.
Inf. 25.)

Cotesti, che ancor vive, e
non si noma.—Guardaré io per
veder, s' il conosco. (Dant. Par.
11.)

Quegli è rivoléano il loro strác-
ci. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.)

Ed disse cosé—Incredibile quelli,
che fur presente. (Dant. Par.
17.)

Qué' rispose: "Io sono cadù-
to in una fossa." (Nov. ant. 36.)

Non solamente il populo, ma i
nobili, e i sacerdoti: quelli si
credono aver dadiii indii il
ministero, quelli il segreto.
(Dav. Germ.)

Of this of this morning I am in-
debted to you.

This morning I was a boy, and
now I am an old man.

There came this evening one
of her brothers.

Drunkard, troublesome man,
though wilt not enter there to-night.

Having heard this.

My daughter, that ought not to
be done.

At this very instant her servant
came in.

As I saw at that very moment
coming through the water towards
us a rather small bark.

Passing through the territory of
Perugia.

This is my master, this is truly
Master Torello.

That is Cacus, who oftentimes
shed lakes of blood under the rock
of Mount Aventine.

I should like to look at that one,
who is still alive and does not tell
who he is, to see whether I know
him.

Those ones wanted again their
rags.

And said things incredible to him
who was present.

That one answered: "I have
fallen into a ditch."

Not only the people, but the no-
blemen, and the priests: the latter
think to derive their ministry from
the gods, the former, their secret.
Quègli vuòlè, che io ti per-
dóni, e questi che, cinto a mia
natura, in te incrudelíscia.—
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

A volervene dire ciò ch' io ne
sento. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Va via; figliuolo, ch' è ciò,
ché tu dir? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Ciò udito si addolorávano gli
aiuti, e fremévanò i nostri. (Dav.
Stor. l. 2.)

Tu sáì ben ciò che tu hai a
fare. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

L' óste udendo quello che la
donna diceva, e quello che di-
céva Adriano; cominciò a cre-
dere, che Pinuccio sognasse.—
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

Al costúi tèmpo. (Giov. Vill.)

Per lo colùi consíglio.
(Bocc.)

Per le costóro ópere. (Bocc.
g. 5. n. 1.)

The former demands that I
should pardon thee, and the latter
that, against my nature, I should
be cruel with thee.

To tell you that which I think
of it.

Away with thee, my son, what
is that which thou sayest?

Having heard this the auxiliary
troops were grieved, and our own
were in a rage.

Thou knowest well what thou
hast to do.

The host hearing what the lady
said, and what Adrian said, began
to believe that Pinuccio was
dreaming.

In the time of this one.

By the counsel of that one.

For the deeds of those.

---

**Exercise XIII.**

This sin is that which (the) divine justice has
peccato è
divino giustizia ha²
not wished to leave unpunished. May God grant
non voluto lasciare impunito. — Dio dia²
you that joy, and that good which you desire.
allegrezza, e bene
desiderate.

What is that secret of which you speak? At this
è secreto — parlâte? A
none dared to answer. That was a trifling
niuno ardi di rispondere. fu — picciolo
thing, and thou didst well to do with it what thou didst (with it). There was in that court this usage.

Passing by the cell of this one, he heard the noise which they—(these ones) made together. He did not work at all, but a thousand times a day, he would run to the window to see this woman. It appeared to him to be safe, and out of the hands of those who had taken him. Those ones make me enter here to deceive me. Having departed from that one with (the) whom he had been so long, he came to England.

I will pay thee for this time, and for that. I have heard what you have spoken of me. And on this occasion he perceived that he had a very beautiful woman for a wife. Dost thou not hear what he says? This one is the archbishop Ruggéri. That one is Brutus. Conceiving a sudden hope of being able to return once more — súbita speranza potére ritornáre ancora.
in the royal state, | by | the counsel of that one. | &  
realis, státus, | per | consilium —  

All those who believe so are deceived. In Cyprus
Túti crédore cosi sóno ingannati. Cipri
and in Rhodes the rumors and the disturbances
Rodí rumore & turbamento  
were great, and lasted a long time through the
furon gránde, — lungo tempo per
deeds of these ones.
ópera — 

—

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Of indefinite pronouns, the following are used only in
the singular, and cannot be put before nouns in the
plural number:

| Qualche, m. & f. | some, any; |
| Ógni, m. & f. | all, every; |
| Chiúnque, m. & f. | whoever, whosoever; |
| Chisivòglia, m. & f. | |
| Chi che, m. & f. | |
| Chicchessia, m. & f. | |
| Che che, m. & f. | whatever, whatsoever; |
| Checchessia, m. & f. | |
| Qualúnque, m. & f. | whosoever, whatsoever; |
| Qualsívòglia, m. & f. | |
| Qualsisìa, m. & f. | |
| Núlla, m. & f. | nothing. |
| Niénte, m. & f. | |

| Uno, m. | Úna, f. | one; |
| Unaltro, m. | Unaltra, f. | another; |
| Qualcino, m. | Qualcina, f. | some, some one, some |
| Qualchedino, m. | Qualchedina, f. | body; |

13
### ANALOGY.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>every one, every body;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verino, m.</th>
<th>Verina, f.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>nessino, m.</td>
<td>Nessina, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>or niissino, m.</td>
<td>Niissina, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>neuno, m.</td>
<td>Neina, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>or niuno, m.</td>
<td>Niuna, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nullo, m.</td>
<td>Nulla, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>no one, nobody.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### EXCEPTIONS.

Ogni, before numeral adjectives, as in the phrases ogni due mési, 'every two months'; ogni sei págine, 'every six pages', ogni dieci soldati, 'every ten soldiers'; and in the word ognissanti, 'the day of All-saints'; is used with nouns in the plural.

Quáliche has been used, by some writers, with nouns in the plural, as, quáliche vérdi boschi, 'some green woods'; but such examples are not to be imitated.

---

The following are used in both numbers:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular.</th>
<th>Plural.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tálé, m. &amp; f.</td>
<td>such;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cotálé, m. &amp; f.</td>
<td>such, such a one;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alcínó, m.</td>
<td>alcínà, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alcínà, f.</td>
<td>alcínó, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>talíno, m.</td>
<td>talína, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>talína, f.</td>
<td>talíno, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cérto, m.</td>
<td>cerí, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cérta, f.</td>
<td>cerí, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stéssó, m.</td>
<td>stéssi, m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stéssá, f.</td>
<td>stéssé, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>medésíma, f.</td>
<td>medésime, f.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.**

| Íltro, m. | other; | Íltre, f. | others; |
| Títlo, m. | all; | Títli, m. | all, every one, |
| Títla, f. | somewhat; | Títla, f. | every body; |
| Alquánto, m. | a little, | Alquánti, m. | a few, not |
| Alquánta, f. | somewhat; | Alquánta, f. | many; |
| Tánto, m. | so much; | Tánti, m. | as many; |
| Tánta, f. | so much; | Tánte, f. | as many; |
| Cotánto, m. | as much, | Cotánti, m. | as many, as |
| Cotánta, f. | as much more; | Cotánte, f. | many more; |
| Póce, m. | a little, | Póchi, m. | few; |
| Póca, f. | a few; | Póche, f. | few; |
| Mótto, m. | much; | Móti, m. | many; |
| Mótta, f. | much; | Móte, f. | many; |
| Tróppo, m. | too much; | Tróppi, m. | too many; |
| Tróppa, f. | too much; | Troppe, f. | too many. |

Chiunque, chisivoglia, chi che, chicchessia, qualcuno, qualcheduno, ognuno, taluno, are applied to persons only; the others may be applied both to persons and things.

*Nulla, niénte, 'nothing,' mean also 'some or any thing,' and nessuno or nissuno, neuno or niuno, veruno, 'nothing, no one, nobody,' mean also 'some or any thing, any one, any body'; as,

s' ella viol nulla, if she wants any thing;  
se egli si sentisse niénte, if he felt any thing;  
non rimarrébbe a sostener pénna nessúna, there would not remain any punishment to suffer;  
se va in nió luogo, if he goes to any place;  
s' egli ha bontáte verúna, if he has any good quality.
\textit{Alcuno}, 'some,' is sometimes used instead of \textit{niuno}, 'nothing, no one'; as,

\begin{quote}
\textit{ché Alcuno} glória avrebbe, for they would derive no glory; \\
\textit{ché Alcuno} via darébbe, which would afford no way.
\end{quote}

\textit{Altro} is sometimes used instead of \textit{altra cosa}, 'some or any thing else'; as,

\begin{quote}
\textit{avresti detto Altro}; thou wouldst have said something else; \\
\textit{hái fatto Altro?} hast thou done any thing else?
\end{quote}

\textit{Altri} is often used in the singular, in speaking of persons; and then it is equivalent to \textit{altro uomo}, 'another man,' or 'another person,' 'others'; as,

\begin{quote}
\textit{nè voi, nè Altri potrè dire ch'io non l'abbia veduta}, neither you nor any other man can say that I have not seen it; \\
\textit{per non fidarmene ad Altri}, not to trust to other persons.
\end{quote}

When \textit{altri} is thus used, in any other relation, than the subjective or the objective, it is changed into \textit{altrui}; as,

\begin{quote}
\textit{ho detto male d' Altrui}, I have spoken ill of another; \\
\textit{le presteré ad Altrui}, I would lend them to others; \\
\textit{che io da Altrui non sia udito}, that I should not be heard by any other person.
\end{quote}

\textit{Altri} is also used in a distributive sense, and then it corresponds to the English pronouns \textit{one} — another; \textit{the one} — the other; \textit{some} — others; as,

\begin{quote}
\textit{Altri sa rémi, ed Altri volge sarte}, the one makes oars, the other twists ropes; \\
\textit{Altri sen vàda errando, Altri rimanga ucciso, Altri idol si faccia un dolce sguardo}, let some go wandering, let some be killed, let others place their happiness in a sweet look.
\end{quote}
Altrui is sometimes used with the article, and then the words avère, sostanza, 'property', 'patrimony', are understood, and l' altrui is equivalent to 'another's property', 'patrimony', &c.; as,

demandar l' altrui, to demand another's property
logorar dell' altrui; to use the property of others.

Uno and altro are sometimes used with the article, l' uno, l' altro; and then l' uno corresponds to the one, the former, and l' altro to the other, the latter. Uno and altro, when so used, in the plural make gli uni, gli altri, for the masculine; and le une, le altre, for the feminine; as,

l' età l' uno, e l' altra avea age had changed the one and the other;
trasformatì,
e dell' une, e dell' altra and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest.
succì quello che credì, the former fearing Annibale, the latter Philip.

gli uni tementi Annibale, gli filippo,
altri Filippo,

The expressions l' uno e l' altro, l' una e l' altra; gli uni e gli altri, le une e le altre, correspond to the English pronouns both, both of them; as,

l' uno e l' altra corno, both horns;
l' una e l' altra stella, both stars.

L' un l' altro, l' una l' altra; gli uni gli altri, le une le altre, are equivalent to the English pronouns one another, each other; as,

si amavano l' un l' altro, they loved one another;

l' un l' altro intenti a ri intent to look at each other.
guardarsi,

In uno, is equivalent to the English expression at the same time; as,

mesta mi vede, ma in un fughe he sees me sad, but at the same
gir dal suo cospetto, time to flee from his presence.
ANALOGY.

Senz' altro sometimes corresponds in English to without doubt, certainly, &c.; as,

ègli senz' altro sara col re, he without doubt is with the king.

Per altro means otherwise, this excepted, as for the rest, &c.; as,

per altro sàvio, e avveduto, as for the rest, wise and prudent.

Tale in the singular often drops the e and makes tal; and in the plural is contracted into t'ai, and sometimes written t'ai; as,

Tal fu mia stella, such was my star;
t'ai dimostrazione, such demonstrations;
t'ai palagi, such palaces.

Indefinite pronouns are generally varied with the prepositions only; except stesso, medesimo, altro, which are varied with the prepositions and articles.

The prepositions di, a, are elegantly suppressed before the pronoun altu; and sometimes the preposition di is suppressed, and altu placed between the article and the noun with which it is connected; as,

le piaghe [di] altu, the wounds of others;
la fortuna si fa [a] altu incinto, fortune goes to meet others;
bagnato nell' altu sangue, [for bathed in another's blood.
nel sangue di altu],

To the above pronouns may be added chi, quale, più, meno, paréchi, parécchie, and si, which are also used as indefinite pronouns.

Chi is sometimes used instead of alcuno; as,

in questo loco può arrivàr chi in this place may arrive some
ti frustorui, one who will disturb thee:
and sometimes instead of *nessuno*; as,

*quivi non è chi legga, nè chi scriva,* there is no one there who reads, and none who writes.

*Chi* is also used in a distributive sense, and then it is equivalent to the English pronouns *one* — *another*; *the one* — *the other*; *some* — *others*; as,

*portando, chi fiori, chi erbe* carrying, some flowers, some, *odorisere, e chi diverse maniere di spezierie,* sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

*Quale* is used in a distributive sense, and corresponds to *one* — *another*; as,

*quale se n’andò in contado,* one went into the country, and *quale qua, e quale là,* another here, and another there.

*Più* and *paréchi, paréchie,* as indefinite pronouns, are equivalent to the English pronoun *several*; as,

*più giorni,* several days;

*paréchi altri,* several others;

*paréchie ore,* several hours.

*Più* and *mèno* sometimes take the article, — *il più,* *il mèno*; *i più* or *le più,* *i mèno* or *le mèno*; and then *il più,* *i più* or *le più,* are equivalent to *the most,* *the greater part*; and *il mèno,* *i mèno* or *le mèno,* to *the least,* *the smaller part*; as,

*il più del tempo,* the greater part of the time;

*i più morivano,* the most of them died;

*le più si trovavano in Berlinzone,* the greater number of them were found in Berlinzone;

*il Paradiso è dei mèno,* Paradise is for the smaller number.

*Si* is used for both genders and both numbers in the *objective only,* and corresponds to the English words *one, we, people, they,* &c.; as,
152

ANALOGY.

**si vede,**  one sees;
**si e detto,**  we have said;
**si videro,**  people saw;
**si promette* [molte] cose,**  they promise many things.

_Si_ and the verb, in these and similar expressions, hold the place of a _passive proposition_, and may be equally well rendered in English by the verb _to be_; as,

**si rendessero gli onori a Gálba,** honors should be rendered
e _si celebrasse la memoria di Pison_, to Galbà, and the memory
_of Piso_ should be celebrated.

When _si_ is followed by the particle _ne_, we change the
_i_ of _si_ into _e_; as,

**non se ne troverebbe uno,**  they would not find one.

**EXAMPLES.**

_Tu le dirai, s’ella vuol nul-la._ (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

_Il domandò se egli si sentisse niente._ (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

_Che non rimarrébbe a sostenere pena nessuna nel purgatorio per gli peccati._ (Pass.)

_Se Filippo va oggi in niun luogo._ (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

_Per le tentazioni si prova l’uomo, s’egli ha bontà veruna._ (Pass. p. 47.)

_Ch’alcuna gloria l réi avrebbe d’elli._ (Dant. Inf. 3.)

_Ch’alcuna via darébbe a chi su fosse._ (Dant. Inf. 12.)

 ÁLTRO AVVENTI DETTO, SE tu m’avessi veduto a Bologna._
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

_Thou wilt ask her, whether she wants any thing._

_He asked him whether he felt any thing._

_That there would not remain in purgatory any punishment to suffer for sins._

_If Philip goes to-day to any place._

_By temptations it is proved whether a man has any good quality._

_For the guilty would derive no glory from them._

_Which would afford no way to him who should be above._

_Thou wouldst have said another thing, if thou hadst seen me in Bologna._
O, ALTRÔ HAI TÔ FĂTTO? (Bocc. n. 1.)

Nê vôi, nê áltri con râginé mi potrà più dîrè ch' io non l' abbia vedûta. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

PER NON FIDÂRMENNE ad áltri, io medesima tel son venûta a si gnificâre. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

Fô ho dêtto mal d' áltri. (Bocc.)

CHE tô da áltri che da lêi udîto non sîa. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

ÁLTRÔ FA RÉMI, ED ÁLTRÔ volge sârte. (Dant. Inf.)

ÁLTRÔ dispérsô — Sên váda errândô: áltri rimânga uc cìso: — áltri, in cúre d' amôr sôvve immêrsô, — Ídol si fâ cia, un dólce sguárdo, un riso. (Tass. Ger. 4. 18.)

Con le vôci úmili, e mansuetè nel domandâr l' áltrô. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Si dispôse a volér logorâr dell' áltrô. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

Tânto l' èta l' úno e l' ál tro, da quello che esser solênao, gli avèa trasformâtì. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Che le mëe cóse ed èlla ti siéno raccomandâté, e quellô dell' ûne e dell' álta fâcci, che crèdi, che siéno consolâtione dell' ânima mía. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Immaginâi di volér fàre, sic come fecero i Saguntini, o gli Abîdèi, gli ûni têmenî Antî nale Cartagînêsè, e gli áltri Filîppo Macedônîco. (Bocc. Fiamm. 5. 53.)

Scaldâva il sol già l' úno e l' áltro càrûno — Del Tàuro. (Petr. cap. 1.)

OH, hast thou done any thing else?

Neither you, nor others, can any longer say rightly that I have not seen it.

Not to trust to others, I myself have come to inform thee of it.

I have spoken ill of others.

That I should be heard by no other, but by her.

Some make oars, and others twist ropes.

Let some of them go dispersed, and wandering: let some be killed: let others, plunged in the cares of pleasing love, place their happiness in a sweet look, a smile.

With humble and mild words in demanding the property of others.

She disposed herself to use the property of others.

So much had age changed the one and the other from what they were used to be.

Let my things and her be recommended to thee, and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest would be of any consolation to my soul.

I thought of doing as the Saguntines and the Ahydeans did, the former fearing Annibale the Carthaginian, the latter Philip the Macedonian.

The sun was already warming both the horns of Taurus.
ANALOGY.

Where is the beautiful brow and both those stars which gave light to my life?

They loved one another with an equal love.

Intent to look at each other.

He sees me always sad, sad it is true, but at the same time he sees me flee from his presence.

He without doubt is with the king.

Rich, and wise, and prudent otherwise, but very avaricious.

The wounds of others.

Remember that once and no more, it is wont to happen, that fortune goes to meet others with joyful countenance, and open bosom.

Already bathed and stained with another's blood.

Such was my star, and such my cruel fate.

Such painful demonstrations are too often seen and known.

And they made such palaces, and such wonderful things, that cannot be described.

In this place may easily arrive one who will disturb thee.

There is no one there who talks of Christ, no one who reads, no one who writes.
Molti andavano attorno, portando nelle mani, chi fiori, chi erbe odoriferi, e chi diverse maniere di spezierie. (Bocc. Introd.)

E le loro donne, e i figliuoli piccolotti, qual se n' andò in contado, e qual quà, e qual là, poveramente in armese. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Più giorni felicemente navigarono. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Con paréccchi altri. (Petr.)

Durò per lo spazio di paréccchie ore. (Giov. Vill.)

Il più del tempo, si stanno a mangiare, e poltrire. (Dav. Germ.)

I più senza alcuna febbre, o altro accidente morivan. (Bocc. Introd.)

Maso rispose, che le più si trovavano in Berlinzóne.— (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

Il paradiso è dei meno, e non dei più. (Segn. Mann. Marz. 31.)

Come si vede. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

Come s'è detto. (Dav. Ann.)

Vidersi in quello esercito soldati v'echi, che non avevano fatto mai guardia. (Dav.)

Quanto cose gli si prometttono tutto 'l di. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Propose, che si rendessero gli onori a Gálba: che anche si celebriasse la memória di Písóne. (Dav. Stor. l. 4.)

Non se ne troverebbe un maggiór mái. (Bocc. g. 2. fin)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some, flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

And of their wives, and young children, one went into the country, and one here, and another there, poorly provided.

They sailed happily several days.

With several others.

It lasted for the space of several hours.

The greater part of the time they pass in eating and dozing.

The most of them died without any fever, or any other symptom.

Maso replied, that the greater number of them were found in Berlinzone.

Paradise is for the smaller number, and not for the larger.

As one sees.

As we have said.

People saw in that army old soldiers, who had never been on guard.

How many things they promise him the whole day.

He proposed, that honors should be rendered to Galba, and that the memory of Piso should also be celebrated.

They would never find one greater.
EXERCISE XIV.

Whoever does otherwise sins. There must be some deception. Let us give this bread to eat to some one. He commanded that every one should go to rest himself. That we might not cause (to) any one to think of us. Each one of us knows, that the greater part of her friends — (hers) are dead. You will receive a hundred for every one. Every mother is a nurse of her children. Without any delay, he did what the king ordered. No body perceived it.

Here it seemed to me that I saw — (to see) not sanctity, no devotion, no good deed, or example of life. Where every word, every phrase, every mode of expression is explained with clearness. To-morrow I shall dine with some friends. Some companies of Belgians collected in haste, and a band of Vitellians.

*B Each one, in the feminine gender.
† No, here in the signification of not one, none.
‡ No, in the signification of not any.
Now I have nothing more to fear. Who — (to Omái — ho¹ piu³ da temére.

(the) whom) had been obliged to live for several years like a deaf and dumb person. I never should come to the end of it for several days.

di.

Said the barterer: "Must I say more — (any other thing)." Not being able to be seen by any other, he threw himself on his knees before her, and said. I determined (myself) to tell it rather to you than to others. With (the) humble, and mild words in (the) asking the property of others — (the others'). He will be with him without doubt — (any other thing to the contrary). He sees me at the same time fly from his presence.

Some make oars, and others twist ropes. Suppose on the contrary, that that be not a comedy, but a tragedy, and that of the actors some should speak tragédia, e recitante favéllì Bolognese, others Venetian, that one Bergamasque, this Venexiând, Bergamásco.
one Neapolitan, and that one Milanese. (The) one * 
Napoletano, 
of them had a beautiful and large mattress of 
— avéa béllo⁴ e⁵ grande⁶ materasso⁷ 
cotton on her head, and the other * a very 
bambágia³ in cápo, e 
large basket full of things. Some went into 
grande panière pieno cosa. sen’andò in 
the country, and some here, and some there. 
— contádo, e quà, e là.

CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE PARTICLES NE, CI, VI.

With pronouns are generally classed the particles ne, ci, vi,† which never vary, and always refer to some person, thing, or place, which has been spoken of before.

Ne may refer to one person or thing, or to more than one, according to the number of the objects, which have been mentioned; and then it is rendered in English by — of him, of her, of it; of them; with him, with her, &c.; at him, &c.; some of it, some of them; as,

Ne pàre innamoráto, he seems enamoured of her;
a quìnti ne giacévano tagliò he cut off the hair of as many 
i capelli, of them as slept;

* The one, the other, in the feminine gender.

† These particles, in orthography, appear to be the same words as the conjunctive pronouns ne, ci, vi; their difference in signification, however, is easily ascertained by the meaning of the sentence in which they are used.
non ne potéva pagáre i calzari, I could not pay for my shoes with it;
se ne maravigliò, he wondered at it;
ne ho preso, I have taken some of it, or some of them.

Ne may also refer to the place, which one comes from, or goes to; and then it corresponds to the English adverbs — hence, thence; as,
méne vénni, I came thence;
quándo ne andréte? when shall you go hence?
and sometimes to an indeterminate place; as,
ne è portátata dal vénto, it is thence carried away by the wind.

Ci, vi, refer to a place, and correspond to the English adverbs — here, there; hither, thither; as,
ci éra venúto, I had come hither;
non vi poté entrare, he could not enter thither.

Ci, properly, refers to a place near the person speaking, and vi, to a place at a distance; as,
ci sóno státo dítre volte, I have been here formerly;
se tu mái vi tórti, if thou shalt ever return there.

This distinction, however, is not observed when the particles ci, vi, and the conjunctive pronouns ci, vi, would be brought together, as in io vi vi condurrò,—
vóì ci ci avéte condótti; in which case, to avoid the harsh sound produced by the repetition of the same word,* we say, without regard to the distance of the place,

to vi ci-condurrò, I will conduct you thither;
vóì vi ci avéte condótti, you have conducted us hither.

* An instance nevertheless, is met with in Boccaccio, in which ci is used instead of vi, without the occurrence of the repetition of the word on account of the conjunctive pronoun:

Non ci sóno in nítim luogo abitánte. There are nowhere dwellings so near, si présso, che tu di gíorno vi potéssi that you could arrive there before sun- arriáre. (G. 5. n. 3.)
ANALOGY.

Ci, vi, may refer also to persons or things, and then they take the signification of the persons or things, which they refer to; as,

\textit{pensaste a me?} — \textit{ci pensai,} \textit{did you think of me?} \textit{— I thought of you.}

\textit{baderete a ciò, or a quësto?} \textit{will you attend to this?} \textit{— yes, — si, vi baderò,} \textit{I will attend to it.}

\textit{Ci, vi,} are used sometimes instead of \textit{quësto, quello, t äle,} \textit{&c. in the signification of — to it, in it, from it,} \textit{&c.; as,}

\textit{ci troveremo buon compenso,} \textit{we shall find in it a good compensation;}

\textit{ascoltai queste parole senza rispondervi,} \textit{I listened to these words without replying to them;}

\textit{to non vi consentiti,} \textit{I did not consent to it.}

When the particles \textit{ci, vi,} are followed by the pronouns \textit{lo, la, li, gli, le,} they are generally united to them so as to form a single word; as,

\textit{velo avéa condotto,} \textit{he had conducted him there;}

\textit{ingégnati di ritenércelo,} \textit{contrive to keep him there.}

The particles \textit{ne, ci, vi,} are often used as expletives; as,

\textit{ne andò per la cámara,} \textit{he went through the room;}

\textit{ciassùn che ci násce,} \textit{every one who is born;}

\textit{dove vi mori,} \textit{where [there] died.}

\textbf{EXAMPLES.}

\textit{Égli, pianamente andando, a quánti in quella casa ne giace-}
\textit{vano tagliò i capelli.} \textit{(Bocc. g. 3. n. 2.)}

\textit{Mi dávan si pòco saláro, che to non ne potéva appénà pagà-}
\textit{re i calzárli.} \textit{(Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)}

\textit{He, walking softly, cut off the hair of as many of them as slept in that house.}

\textit{They gave me so small a salary, that I could hardly pay for my shoes with it.}
When I came thence.

The ashes placed on high, is thence carried away by the wind.

Nay, I had come hither in order to admonish him.

He arrived there so late, that, the gates being shut, and the bridges raised, he could not enter thither.

Truly I have been here formerly; but fear had in such a manner deprived me of my senses, that I recollected as little of having been here, as if I never had been here.

If it happens that thou shalt ever return there, take care that thou be no more jealous.

You have conducted us hither.

Did you think of me? — yes, I thought of you.

Perchance our business may take such a turn, that we shall find it in, with the assistance of God, some compensation.

To these words, more than once, and without replying to them any thing, I listened with a serious mind.

THANKING GOD THAT HAD CONDUCTED HIM THERE.

LEARN WHETHER HE KNOWS HOW TO WORK, AND CONTRIVE TO KEEP HIM THERE.

GENTLY HE WENT THROUGH THE ROOM AS FAR AS THE WINDOW.
EXERCISE XV.

The miserable Landólfo, although the day before had called (the) death many times, seeing it near, was afraid of it. He wished that I should all the holy relics, and they were so many, that, if I wished to relate them to you, I never should come to an end (of them). "Oh, my master!" said Brúno, "I do not wonder (myself) at it, for I have heard say, that they say nothing — | (do not | say anything) of it." But yet coming out thence, he began to wonder (himself) more | and, more.  

Cause (the) generosity to be painted here.  

Fáte cortesia dipingere.
Pretending to have returned there with a great deal more merchandise than before.

I cannot well relate how I entered there. The church is so full of people, that no person can any more enter there. Andreuio, fearing, entered there, and entering there he thought within himself.

If I can affect to be dumb, I shall be received there surely.

They replied: "It is very true, since thou art the one who makes us stay here. Alas! Zëppa, what does this mean? Have you then made me come here for this? I will cause it to be painted here, in such a manner, that neither you nor any other one will be able to tell me any longer, that I have not seen it. These persons make me enter here to deceive me. We wish

* No, here in the signification of no one. † They, in the feminine gender. ‡ It [the generosity — la cortesia], in the feminine gender. §§ These persons, for these men near me.
to go and see this holy man; but I, for myself,
di not see how we can get there.

Non vêdo come — possiamo² pervenire³.

CHAPTER IX.

VERBS.

All Italian verbs are classed in three different conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of their infinitive.

The first conjugation comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in ãre; as, amãre, 'to love.'

The second comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in ère; as, temêre, 'to fear.'

The third comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in ìre; as, sentîre, 'to hear,' or 'to feel.'

All the verbs of these three different conjugations, whether regular or irregular, are conjugated or varied with one of the auxiliary verbs, avère, 'to have,' or essere, 'to be.'

VARIATION OF VERBS.

Verbs may be varied in four different ways; viz. affirmatively, negatively, interrogatively, and interrogative-negatively.

In the variation of Italian verbs, the personal pronouns are generally suppressed, the persons being sufficiently
indicated by the different terminations; but when different persons have the same termination, the pronouns are expressed, to avoid the confusion which might thence arise.

The pronouns are also expressed in the imperative mood; and also when verbs are varied in the interrogative form, since then the transposition of the pronoun distinguishes, in conversation, that form from the affirmative.

In varying the following verbs, we have given, between parentheses, the poetical forms, or the peculiar inflexions to which poets have submitted some of the persons of certain tenses of these verbs. Some of these are elegantly used even in prose, and some are entirely confined to verse; in order to distinguish the latter from the former, the latter are printed in Roman characters.

**AUXILIARY VERBS.**

**Variation of the Verb Avère affirmatively.**

1. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. <strong>Present.</strong></td>
<td>2. <strong>Past.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avère, to have.</td>
<td>avère avuto, to have had.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3. **Future.**

| avère ad avère,   | to have to have, or |
| éssere per avère, | to be about to have. |
| dovère avère,     |                       |

**GERUND.**

4. **Present.**

| avéndo, having. | 5. **Past.**
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>avéndo avuto, having had.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ANALOGY.

PARTICLE.

6. — Present.

avénte, s. \{ having. \}

\begin{align*}
\text{abbiámo (avémo), we have;} \\
\text{abbiamo (avémo), we have;} \\
\text{avéte, you have;} \\
\text{avéte, you have;} \\
\text{hanno, or ãnno, they have.}
\end{align*}

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

\begin{align*}
\text{1st p. ho or ã I have;} & & \text{abbiamo (avémo), we have;} \\
\text{[aggio],} & & \text{hanno, or ãnno, they have.}
\end{align*}

2. — Imperfect.

\begin{align*}
\text{1st p. ìo avéva} & & \text{avévamo, we had;} \\
\text{[or avéa,} & & \text{avévano or avé, they had.}
\end{align*}

3. — Perfect.

\begin{align*}
\text{1st p. ébbi,} & & \text{avémmo, we had;} \\
\text{2d p. avéstí,} & & \text{avésse, you had;} \\
\text{3d p. ébbe,} & & \text{ébbero, they had.}
\end{align*}

4. — Future.

\begin{align*}
\text{1st p. avar,} & & \text{avarémo, we shall have;} \\
\text{2d p. avarái,} & & \text{avaréte, you will have;} \\
\text{3d p. avarè,} & & \text{avarámmo, they will have.}
\end{align*}

* The present participle of the verb avéro agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle agrees, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.

† Some say avéro, éro, amávo, &c. instead of avéra, 'I had'; éra, 'I was'; amávo, 'I loved'; &c., but this usage, which, indeed, presents the advantage of distinguishing the first from the third person of the imperfect of verbs, is contrary to the authority of the best classics.
AUXILIARY VERBS.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Singular. Plural.

5. — Compound of the Present, or — Second Perfect.

1st p. ho avuto, I have had; abbiámo avuto, we have had;
2d p. hài avuto, thou hast had; avête avuto, you have had;
3d p. ha avuto, he or she has hánno avuto, they have had.

6. — Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.

1st p. io avéva avuto, I had had; we had had.

7. — Compound of the Perfect, or — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. ébbi avuto, I had had.

8. — Compound of the Future, or — Future Anterior.

1st p. avró avuto, I shall or will have had.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. io abbìa, that I have, or abbiámo, that we have;
(aği), may have; (aği), that you have;
2d p. tu abbìa, that thou have; abbiáte, that they have.
(ábbi (aği),
3d p. egli or él-
[(aği),
that he or she abbiano, (aği
to, to have;
(аği),

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io avéssì, if I had, or should avéssìmo, if we had;
(have;
2d p. tu avéssì, if thou hadst; avéste, if you had;
3d p. avéssé, if he or she had; avéssero (avé-

[ano),

COMPOUND TENSES.

2. — Compound of the Present, or — Perfect.

1st p. io abbìa, that I have had, abbiámo avuto, that we have had.
[avuto, [or may have
[had;]
ANALOGY.

4. — Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.
1st p. to avéssi avúto, | if I had had, or should have had.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1. — Present.</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. avréi (a-vría),</td>
<td>we should or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I should, would,</td>
<td>[would have;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avrémmo,</td>
<td>(or more;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or could have;</td>
<td>have;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avréste,</td>
<td>[or might have;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>thou wouldst</td>
<td>have;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avrébber (avrí-eno),</td>
<td>you would have;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>he or she would</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avrébbero (avrí-no or avrí-)</td>
<td>they would have.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[avría],</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Compound of the Present, or — Past.

| 1st p. avréi avúto, [to],       | we should or                   |
| I should, would,                | [would have had.               |
| avrémmo avúto,                  | (or could have;                |
| [or could have;                 | have;                          |
| had; or might                   |                                |
| have had;                       |                                |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| 1st p. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . | abbiámo nól,                   |
| let us have;                    |
| 2d p. ábbi (ág- [gi] tu,        | abbiáte vói,                   |
| have thou;                      | have ye;                       |
| 3d p. ábbia (ág- [gía] églia or | abbianó (ággia- [no] églino or |
| let him or her                   | [have;                          |
| [élia,                           | [no] églino or                  |
| [élienó,                          | [élienó,                         | (*)

* The first person of the imperative in all verbs is wanting.
AUXILIARY VERBS.

Variation of the Verb Avère, negatively.

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.                               Compound Tenses.

1. — Present.                               2. — Past.

\( \text{Non avère} \) not to have.           \( \text{non avère avuto}, \) not to have had.

3. — Future.

\( \text{non avère ad avère,} \) to be not to have, or
\( \text{non avère per avère,} \) [not to be about to have.
\( \text{non dovère avère,} \)

GERUND.

4. — Present.                               5. — Past.

\( \text{non avéndo,} \) not having.          \( \text{non avéndo} \) [avuto], not having had.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.                                    Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. [io] \( \text{non ho,} \) I have not; \( \text{non abbiámio,} \) we have not;
2d p. \( \text{non hai,} \) thou hast not; \( \text{non avéte,} \) you have not;
3d p. \( \text{non ha,} \) he or she has not; \( \text{non hánno,} \) they have not.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. \( \text{io - non avéva,} \) [not have; \( \text{non avevámo,} \) we had not;
2d p. \( \text{non avévi,} \) thou hadst not; \( \text{non aveváte,} \) you had not;
3d p. \( \text{égli or élla,} \) he or she had not; \( \text{non avévano,} \) they had not.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. \( \text{non ébbi,} \) I had not; \( \text{non avémmo,} \) we had not;
2d p. \( \text{non avésti,} \) thou hadst not; \( \text{non avéste,} \) you had not;
3d p. \( \text{non ébbe,} \) he or she had not; \( \text{non ébbero,} \) they had not.
### ANALOGY.

Singular. | Plural.
---|---
1st p. *non averò*, I shall or will not | *non avrémo*, we shall or will not have;  
[have;] | [not have;]  
2d p. *non averáis*, thou wilt not | *non avréte*, you will not have;  
[have;] |  
3d p. *non averà*, he or she will not | *non avránno*, they will not have;  
[not have;] | [have;]  

### COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. *(io) non ho avuto*, I have not had.

### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p. *(io) non</th>
<th>2d p. <em>tu non</em></th>
<th>3d p. <em>egli or ella non</em></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>abbia</em>, may not have</td>
<td><em>abbia</em>, that thou have not</td>
<td><em>abbia</em>, that he or she have not</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>non abbiámno</em>, that we have not;</td>
<td><em>non abbiámte</em>, that you have not;</td>
<td><em>non abbiáno</em>, that they have not;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. — Imperfect.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p. <em>(io) non</em></th>
<th>2d p. <em>tu non</em></th>
<th>3d p. <em>non avess</em></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>avési</em>, should not have;</td>
<td><em>avési</em>, if thou hadst not;</td>
<td><em>avési</em>, if he or she had not;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>non avéssimo</em>, if we had not;</td>
<td><em>non avéste</em>, if you had not;</td>
<td><em>non avéssero</em>, if they had not;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p. <em>non avré</em>, I should, would, or could not have;</th>
<th>2d p. <em>non avré</em></th>
<th>3d p. <em>non avré</em></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>or might not have</em>;</td>
<td><em>or might not have</em>;</td>
<td><em>or might not have</em>;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>non avrémmo</em>, we should or would not have;</td>
<td><em>non avréste</em>, you would not have;</td>
<td><em>non avébbbero</em>, they would not have;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
AUXILIARY VERBS. 171

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . | . . . . . . . . . . . . . . | non abbiamò | let us not have;
2d p. non avère* have not thou; non abbiéte vôi, have not ye;
3d p. non abbia let him or let her not [égli or élle,] non abbiano let them not
[not have; [égliino or élleño,] have.

Variation of Avère, interrogatively.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. ho io? have I?
2d p. hai tu? hast thou?
3d p. ha égli or has he or she? [élle?]

1st p. abbiamo noi? have we?
2d p. avete voi? have you?
3d p. hanno égliino or have they? [élleño?]

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. avéva io? had I?
2d p. avévi tu? hadst thou?
3d p. avéva égli had he or she? [or élle?]

1st p. abbiamo noi? had we?
2d p. aveste voi? had you?
3d p. abbiano égliino or had they? [or élleño?]

3. — Perfect.

1st p. ébbi io? had I?
2d p. avésti tu? hadst thou?
3d p. ébbé égli had he or she? [or élle?]

1st p. abbiemo noi? had we?
2d p. aveste voi? had you?
3d p. ébbemo égliino or had they? [élleño?]

* The second person of the imperative of Italian verbs, preceded by the negative particle non, is changed for the present of the infinitive of the same verbs: as, non avère (instead of non dòi), 'have not [thou].' Poets, however, and Ariosto and Alfieri in particular, have used both forms indiscriminately.
### Singular.

| Tense       | 1st p. | 2d p. | 3d p.  
|-------------|--------|--------|---------|
| Future      | *avrò* | *avrái* | *avrà*  
|            | *io?*   | *tu?*  | *égli*  
|            | shall or will I | wilt thou have? | will he or she  
|            | [*avrémom nòi?*] | [*avrête vòi?*] | [*avrànnò oéglinò*]  

#### Compound Tenses.

5. **Second Perfect.**

1st. p. *ho io avúto*, or have I had?  

### Plural.

| Tense       | shall or will we have? | will you have? | will they have?  
|-------------|------------------------|----------------|------------------|
| Future      | *avrémom nòi?*         | *avrété vòi?*  | *avrànnò oéglinò*  
|            | shall or will we       |                |                  
|            | *avrémom nòi?*         |                |                  

#### III. **Conditional.**

1. **Present.**

| Tense       | 1st p. | 2d p. | 3d p.  
|-------------|--------|--------|---------|
|             | *avrèi* | *avrèsti* | *avrèbbhe*  
|             | *io?*   | *tu?*  | *égli or élla?*  
|             | should, would, or could I have? | wouldst thou have? | would he or she have?  
|             | [*avrémom nòi?*] | [*avrèste vòi?*] | [*avrèbbbero oéglinò*]  

#### Variation of Avère, interrogative-negatively.

### I. **Indicative.**

#### Simple Tenses.

1. **Present.**

| Tense       | 1st p. | 2d p. | 3d p.  
|-------------|--------|--------|---------|
|             | *non ho io?* | *non hàt tu?* | *non ha he or she*  
|             | have I not? | hast thou not? | has he or she not?  
|             | [*non abbiámom nòi?*] | [*non avèste vòi?*] | [*non hànnò oéglinò*]  

2. **Imperfect.**

| Tense       | 1st p. | 2d p. | 3d p.  
|-------------|--------|--------|---------|
|             | *non avèva* | *non avòn* | *non ébbhe*  
|             | *io?*   | *tu?*  | *égli or élla?*  
|             | had I not? | have not? | had he or she not?  
|             | [*non avèvamo*] | [*non averèmo*] | [*no or élleno*]  

3. **Perfect.**

| Tense       | 1st p. | 2d p. | 3d p.  
|-------------|--------|--------|---------|
|             | *non ébbi io?* | *non ébbi tu?* | *non ébbhe*  
|             | had I not? | had not? | had he or she not?  


4. — Future.

1st p. *non avrò io?* I shall or will I not have?

**COMPOUND TENSES.**

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. *non ho avuto io?* have I not had?

[or *non ho avuto io?*]

**IV. CONDITIONAL.**

1. — Present.

1st p. *non avrei io?* should, would, or

[could I not have?]

---

**Variation of the Verb Éssere.**

**I. INFINITIVE.**

Simple Tenses.

1. — Present.

Éssere, | to be.

Compound Tenses.

2. — Past.

| essere stato, m. s. | to have been.
| essére státa, f. s. |
| státe, p.* |

3. — Future.

| essere per essere, | to be about to be, or
| avéré ad essere, | to have to be.
| dovéré esser, |

**GERUND.**

4. — Present.

| esséndo, sénndo, | being.
| esséndo státo, m. |
| státa, f. |

5. — Past.

| esséndo státo, m. | having been.
| státa, f. |

* The past participle of the verb éssere, always agrees with the subject, in gender and number; thus we say, to *sóno státo*, if the subject is masculine singular; to *sóno státa*, if feminine singular; and *nói súno státi*, if the subject is masculine plural; *nói súmo státa*, if feminine plural, and so on.

† Some authors, and Machiavelli in particular, have used this form constantly in prose.
ANALOGY.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — Present.  7. — Past.

(essénte, s., essénti, p.,*) } being;  || státo, m. s.

|| [státi, p.
|| státta, f. s.
|| [státe, p.

been.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.  Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. io sóno, I am;  || siámo (sémo), we are;

2d p. séi or se', thou art;  || siéte (séte), you are;

3d p. é, he is;  || égíno sóno, they are.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io éra, I was;  || eravámo (éra-

2d p. érì, thou wast;  || [mo],† you were;

3d p. égli éra, he was;  || érano, they were.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. fúi, I was;  || fúnno, we were;

2d p. fósti, thou wast;  || fóste, you were;

3d p. fu (fúe), he was;  || [fúnno, fúro, fur, they were.

[or fóro),

4. — Future.

1st p. sarò (fia), I shall or will be;  || sarémo, we shall or will [be;

2d p. saráí, thou wilt be;  || saréte, you will be;

3d p. sar (fia, he will be;  || saránno (fiano, they will be.

[fie),

[fleno),

* These forms are obsolete.

† Old writers have used érano even in prose, and Alferi has followed their usage in his Púa.
AUXILIARY VERBS.

Singular. Plural.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. io sőne I have been;  siámo státi, m. we have been;
[státo, m.,] [státe, f.]
2d p. séi státo, thou hast been;  siéte státi,-e, you have been;
[-a,]
3d p. è státo, -a, he or she has étliño sőne státi, they have been.
[been;]  [or éléno státe,]

6. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io dřá státi Had been;  erávamo státi,-e, we had been.
[to, -a,]

7. — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. fiui státo, I had been;  fúmno státi, -e, we had been.
[-a,]

8. — Future Anterior.

1st p. saró státo, I shall or will sarémo státi, -e, we shall or will
[-a,] [have been;]

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. io sía, that I be, or siámo, that we be;
2d p. tu sía or that thou be; siáte, that you be;
3d p. égli sía, that he be; siáno or sieno, that they be.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io fössé, if I were; or fössimo, if we were;
[[fössal,] [should be;]
2d p. tu fössé, if thou wast; fósste, if you were;
3d p. fósse, if he were; fóssero (fösso), if they were.*

* This form, as well as fúss and fóssero used by Villani, Machiavelli, Guicciar-
dini, even in prose, has become obsolete.
ANALOGY.

Singular.  Plural.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. io sta that I have been, siamo stati, -e, that we have
or may have | [been, been;

4. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io fossi if I had been; f ossimo stati, -e, if we had been.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.

1st p. sarei (sa- | I should, would, saremmo, we should or
ria, fora), | or could be; | would be;

2d p. saresti, thou wouldst be; sareste, you would be;

3d p. sarebbe he would be; sarebbero (sare-
| [ano o saranno),

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.

1st p. sake stá- I should, would, saremmo státi, we should,
| or could have | [would, or could
[to, -a, | [been; or might | have been.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . . . | . . . . . . | siamo noi, let us be;
2d p. sia or sit, be thou; siate voi, be ye;
[stu, | | siano or sieno let them be.

3d p. sta egli, let him be; [egli,
REGULAR VERBS.

### Variation of Active Verbs.

Active verbs, in the compound tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *avère*, 'to have.'

### FIRST CONJUGATION.

#### Variation of the Verb Amáre.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *áre*.)

1. **INFINITIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1. — Present.</strong></td>
<td><strong>2. — Past.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Am-áre</em></td>
<td><em>avère amáto,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>to love.</em></td>
<td><em>to have loved.</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3. **Future.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><em>avère ad amáre,</em></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>éssere per amáre,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>dovère amáre,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>{ to have to love, or to be about to love.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**GERUND.**

4. **Present.**

| *am-ándo,* |
| *loving.* |

5. **Past.**

| *avéndo amáto,* |
| *having loved.* |

**PARTICIPE.**

6. **Present.**

| *am-ánte,* s.; *am-* |
| [*-ánti, p.* *loving.* |

7. **Past.**

| *am-áto,* m. s.; |
| [*am-áti, p.* *loved.* |
| *am-áta,* f. s.; |
| [*am-áte, p.* *loved.* |

* The present participle of active verbs, like that of *avère*, agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle *agrees*, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.
ANALOGY.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. ám-o, I love, or do am-iámo, we love;
   [love, or am] [loving;]

2d p. ám-i, thou lovest; am-áte, you love;

3d p. ám-a, he loves; am-ánó, they love.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. to am-áva, I loved, or did am-avámo, we loved;
   [love, or was] [loving;]

2d p. am-ávi, thou lovedst; am-aváte, you loved;

3d p. égli am- he loved; am-ávano, they loved;
   [-áva,]

3. — Perfect.

1st p. am-áti, I loved, or did am-ámmo, we loved;
   [love;]

2d p. am-ásti, thou lovedst; am-áste, you loved;

3d p. am-ó, he loved; am-árono (am-
   [-áro or am-ár), they loved.

4. — Future.

1st p. am-érô,* I shall or will am-érémo, we shall or will
   [love;]

2d p. am-érí, thou wilt love; am-éréte, you will love;

3d p. am-érá, he will love; am-éránno, they will love;

* The verbs of this conjugation in the future and the conditional, change the a of
their terminations for e, and make am-érô, &c.; am-érí, &c.; instead of am-érô, &c.;
am-érá, &c.
REGULAR VERBS.

Singular. Plural.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. ho amáto, I have loved; abbiámo amáto, we have loved;
2d p. hái amáto, thou hast loved; avéte amáto, you have loved;
3d p. ha amáto, he, she, or it has [loved]; hánno amáto, they have loved.

6. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io améva, I had loved; avevámo amáto, we had loved.

[amáto,]

7. — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. ébbi amáto, I had loved.

8. — Future Anterior.

1st p. aver amáto, I shall or will have loved.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. io ám-i that I love, or am-iámo, that we love;
[(ám-e),] [may love;]
2d p. tu ám-i, that thou lovest; am-iáte, that you love;
3d p. égli ám-i that he loves; am-ino, that they love.
[(ám-e),]

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io am-ássi, if I loved, or am-ássimo, if we loved;
[should love;]
2d p. tu am-ássi, if thou lovedst; am-áste, if you loved;
3d p. am-ásse, if he loved; am-ássero (am-ássino), if they loved.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. io abbia amáto, that I have loved, or [may have loved;
ANALOGY.

4. — Pluperfect.
1st p. io avéssi amáto, | if I had loved.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular.</th>
<th>Plural.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. am-eréi I should, would, am-erémmo, we should, would</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(am-era)], [or could love], [or might love];</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. am-erésti, thou wouldst am-eréste, you would love;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(am-era)], [love];</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. am-erébbe he would love; am-erébbere(am-[-eriano], am-[-erieno), they would love.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.

1st p. avréi amáto, | I should, would, or could have |
| loved; or might have loved. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p. am-a tu,</th>
<th>3d p. am-i ég</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>am-iámo nói, let us love;</td>
<td>am-áte sói, love ye;</td>
<td>am-ino églo, let them love.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Besides the foregoing changes of termination, there are some verbs of the first conjugation, which undergo in some persons and tenses a change of orthography: Thus, verbs ending in cäre, gäre, in order to preserve the hard sound of c, g, in all their inflections, take an h after those consonants whenever they are followed by a, i; as, cercäre, 'to search'; pregäre, 'to entreat.'
REGULAR VERBS.

**Variation of the Verb Cercâre.**

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in care.)

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.  

1. — Present.

1st p. cerc-o, | I search, or do cerc-iámo, | we search;  
               [search, or am]           
               searching;               

2d p. cerc-i, | thou searchest; cerc-áte, | you search;  
               he searches; cerc-áno, | they search.  

4. — Future.

1st p. cerc-erò, I shall or will cerc-erémo, | we shall or will  
               [search;               

2d p. cerc-erái, thou wilt search; cerc-eréte, | you will search;  
               he will search; cerc-eránno, | they will search.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io cerc-i that I search, or cerc-iámo, | that we search;  
               [(cérench-e)], [may search; 
               cerc-iáte, | that you search;  

2d p. tu cerc-hi, that thou search; cerc-hiáte, 

3d p. égli cerc-i, that he search; cerc-ino, | that they search.  
               [(cérench-e),

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. cerc-eréi I should, would, cerc-erémmo, | we should, would,  
               [(cérench-ería), | or could search;  
               or could 
               search; or  
               might search;  

2d p. cerc-eré, thou wouldst cerc-eréste, | you would search;  
               [sti,  | search;  

3d p. cerc-erèd, he would search; cerc-erèdbero | they would search.  
               he would search; cerc-erèdbero | they would search.  
               [(cérench-erían], 
               [(cérench-eréno),
V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. ...</td>
<td>cerch-iámo nobi, let us search;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. cerch-a tu,</td>
<td>cerch-áte vbi, search ye;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. cerch-i</td>
<td>cerch-ino égli-let them search.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[égli,]</td>
<td>[search,]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Variation of the Verb Pregár.**

*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in gáre.)*

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. preg-o     | preg-iámo, we entreat; |
|                   | [entreat, or am]        |
|                   | [entreating,]           |
| 2d p. preg-i      | preg-áte, you entreat; |
| 3d p. preg-a      | preg-ano, they entreat. |
|                   | [treat,]                |

4. — Future.

| 1st p. preg-er   | preg-erémo, we shall or will |
|                   | [entreat,]                |
| 2d p. preg-erál | preg-érête, you will entreat; |
| 3d p. preg-erá  | preg-eránno, they will entreat. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. io preg-i | preg-iámo, that we entreat; |
| [(preg-e),]      | [that we entreat;]          |
| 2d p. tu preg-i  | preg-íáte, that you entreat; |
| [(preg-e),]      | [that you entreat;]         |
| 3d p. égli preg-i| preg-ino, that they entreat. |
| [(preg-e),]      | [that they entreat.]        |
REGULAR VERBS.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. preḡh-eréí | I should, would, | preḡh-erólmo, | we should, would, |
[(preḡh-ería), | or could en- | [or could en- |
| treat; or might | treat; |
[entreat; 2d p. preḡh-eré- | thou wouldst en- | preḡh-erólste, | you would en- |
|[stit, | treat; | [treat; |
[entreat; 3d p. preḡh-erób- | he would en- | preḡh-erólbero | they would en- |
| [be (preḡh- | treat; | [(preḡh-érianos, | [(preḡh-eróio), |
[-ería), | [treat; |

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. ... | ... | preḡh-ólmo ści, | let us entreat; |
2d p. pré-g-a tu, | entreat thou; | preḡh-ólte ści, | entreat ye; |
3d p. pré-gu-i | let him, her, or it | preḡh-ólno élgi- | let them entreat. |
| [élgi, [entreat; |

Verbs ending in ciāre, giāre, drop the i, which follows c, g, whenever ci, gi, precede e, i; as, baciāre, 'to kiss'; fregiāre, 'to adorn.'

Variation of the Verb Baciāre.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in ciāre.)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. báci-o, | I kiss or do kiss, | báci-ólmo, | we kiss; |
| [or am kissing; 2d p. báci-i, | thou kissest; | báci-ólte, | you kiss; |
| he kisses; 3d p. báci-a |

Digitized by Google
### ANALOGY.

#### Singular.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bac-erō</td>
<td>bac-erāi</td>
<td>bac-erā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I shall, or will</td>
<td>thou wilt kiss;</td>
<td>he will kiss;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[kiss;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Plural.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bac-erēmo</td>
<td>bac-erēte</td>
<td>bac-erānno</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>we shall, or will</td>
<td>you will kiss;</td>
<td>they will kiss.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[kiss;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

#### 1. Present.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lo bāc-i</td>
<td>tu bāc-i</td>
<td>ēgli bāc-i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>that I kiss, or</td>
<td>that thou kiss;</td>
<td>that he kiss;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[bāc-e]</td>
<td>[bāc-e]</td>
<td>[(bāc-e)]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[may kiss;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### IV. CONDITIONAL.

#### 1. Present.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>bac-erē</td>
<td>bac-erēti</td>
<td>bac-erēbbe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I should, would,</td>
<td>thou wouldst</td>
<td>he would kiss;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(bac-erēa)]</td>
<td>[(bac-erēa)]</td>
<td>[(bac-erēa)]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or could kiss;</td>
<td>[kiss;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(bac-erēmo)]</td>
<td>[(bac-erēmo)]</td>
<td>[(bac-erēmo)]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or might kiss;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>. . . .</td>
<td>bāci-a tu</td>
<td>bāc-i ēgli</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let us kiss;</td>
<td>kiss thou;</td>
<td>let him kiss;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bac-tāmo nōi</td>
<td>bāci-āte vōi</td>
<td>bāc-ino ēgli</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
| | | |
**REGULAR VERBS.**

*Variation of the Verb* Fregiare.

*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in giare.)*

**II. INDICATIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1. — Present.</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. fregi-o,</td>
<td>I adorn, do adorn,</td>
<td>fregi-tamo,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[or am adorning;]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. fregi-i,</td>
<td>thou adornest;</td>
<td>fregi-ate,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. fregi-a,</td>
<td>he adorns;</td>
<td>fregi-ano,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>we adorn;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>you adorn;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>they adorn.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>4. — Future.</strong></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. freg eri-o,</td>
<td>I shall or will</td>
<td>freg eri-mo,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[adorn;]</td>
<td>[adorn;]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. freg eri-i,</td>
<td>thou wilt adorn;</td>
<td>freg eri-te,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. freg eri-a,</td>
<td>he will adorn;</td>
<td>freg eri-anan,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>we shall or will</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[adorn;]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>you will adorn;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>they will adorn.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**III. CONJUNCTIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>1. — Present.</strong></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. io fregi-i</td>
<td>that I adorn, or</td>
<td>fregi-tamo,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(fregi-i),]</td>
<td>[that we adorn;]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. tu fregi-i</td>
<td>that thou adorn;</td>
<td>fregi-vate,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. egli fregi-a</td>
<td>that he adorn;</td>
<td>fregi-ino,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(fregi-i),]</td>
<td>[that you adorn;]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[that they adorn.]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**IV. CONDITIONAL.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>1. — Present.</strong></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. freg eri-i</td>
<td>I should, would,</td>
<td>freg eri-mmo,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(freg eri-i),]</td>
<td>[we should, would,]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. freg eri-sti</td>
<td>thou wouldst a-</td>
<td>freg eri-ste,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[dorn;]</td>
<td>[or could adorn;]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. freg eri-ebbe</td>
<td>he would adorn;</td>
<td>[(freg eri-anan),</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(freg eri-i),]</td>
<td>[you would adorn;]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[freg eri-ino),]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>they would adorn.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### V. IMPERATIVE.

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>. . .</td>
<td>. . .</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. frēa-a tu</td>
<td>adorn thou;</td>
<td>frea-tāmo nōi, let us adorn;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. frēa-i ēgli</td>
<td>let him adorn;</td>
<td>frea-ino ēgli-no, let them adorn.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Verbs ending in iāre, in which s form one syllable, drop the i whenever it is followed by another i; as,

Νoiaře, ‘to annoy.’

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in iāre.)

### II. INDICATIVE.

#### 1. Present.

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. nōi-o</td>
<td>I annoy, do an-</td>
<td>no-tāmo, we annoy;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. nō-i</td>
<td>thou annoyest;</td>
<td>noi-dē, you annoy;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. nōi-a</td>
<td>he annoyed;</td>
<td>nōi-anō, they annoy.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

#### 1. Present.

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. to nō-i</td>
<td>that I annoy or</td>
<td>no-tāmo, that we annoy;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. tu nō-i</td>
<td>that thou annoy;</td>
<td>nō-tāte, that you annoy;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. ēgli nō-i</td>
<td>that he annoy;</td>
<td>nō-ino, that they annoy.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### V. IMPERATIVE.

<p>| | | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>. . .</td>
<td>. . .</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. nōi-a tu</td>
<td>annoy thou;</td>
<td>no-tāmo, let us annoy;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. nō-i ēgli</td>
<td>let him annoy;</td>
<td>nō-ino, let them annoy.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
REGULAR VERBS.

Verbs ending in *iáre*, in which *ia* form two syllables, drop the *i*, only when it would be followed by the vowels *ia*; as,

*Inviáre*, 'to send.'

II. INDICATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. <em>invi-o</em></td>
<td><em>I send, do send;</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>inví-támo,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>we send;</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. <em>invi-i</em></td>
<td><em>thou sendest;</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>inví-áte,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>you send;</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. <em>invi-a</em></td>
<td><em>he sends;</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>inví-ano,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>they send.</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

SECOND CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are commonly divided into two classes, those ending in *ère* (*long*), and those ending in *ére* (*short*): both of these in the *perfect* have two terminations, *ét* and *éti*; except a few which have the termination *ét* only.

*Variation of the Verb Temére.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ére* (*long*); and of those which in the *perfect* end in *ét* and *éti.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — <em>Present.</em></td>
<td>2. — <em>Past.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Tem-ére,</em></td>
<td><em>avére temúto,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>to fear.</em></td>
<td><em>to have feared.</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3. — Future.

\[
\text{avere a temere,} \quad \text{esse per temere,} \quad \text{dovere temere,}
\]

\{ to have to fear, or to be about to fear.

GERUND.

4. — Present.

\[\text{temendo,} \quad \text{fearing;} \]

\[\text{avendo temuto,} \quad \text{having feared.} \]

PARTICIPLE.

6. — Present.

\[\text{temente, s.,} \quad \text{fearing;} \]

\[\text{temente, p.,} \quad \text{fearing;} \]

7. — Past.

\[\text{temuto, m. s.,} \quad \text{feared.} \]

\[\text{temuta, l. s.,} \quad \text{feared.} \]

\[\text{temute, p.,} \quad \text{feared.} \]

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular. | Plural.
---|---
1. — Present.

1st p. tém-o, | I fear, or do | tem-iámo (tem-ém-o), we fear;
[fear, or am] | [fear, or am]
2d p. tém-i, | thou fearest; | tem-éte, you fear;
3d p. tém-e | he fears; | tém-eno, they fear.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. tétem-vó | I feared, or did | tem-evámo, we feared;
[or tétem-ua,] | [fear, or was] | [fear, or was]
2d p. tétem-évi, | thou fearedst; | tem-eváte, you feared;
3d p. égí tétem- | he feared; | tem-evano or (tem-íeno), they feared.
[éva or tétem-ua,] | [fear, or was] | [fear, or was]
REGULAR VERBS.

Singular.          Plural.

3. --- Perfect.

1st p. tem-è or I feared, or did  tem-èmo,  we feared;
    [tem-ètti, [fear;]
    [(tem-è'),
    2d p. tem-èsti, thou fearedst;  tem-èste,  you feared;
    3d p. tem-è or he feared;  tem-èrono or they feared.
    [tem-ètte]
    [(tem-èo),

4. --- Future.

1st p. tem-èrd, I shall or will  tem-èrèmo,  we shall or will
    [fear;]
    2d p. tem-èrdì, thou wilt fear;  tem-èrètè,  you will fear;
    3d p. tem-èrdà, he will fear;  tem-èrèanno,  they will fear.

    [(tem-èro, tem-èr),

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. --- Second Perfect.

1st p. ho temùto, I have feared;  || addìamo temùto, we have feared.

6. --- Pluperfect.

1st p. ao avèva temùto, I had feared.

7. --- Second Pluperfect.

1st p. ébbi temùto, I had feared.

8. --- Future Anterior.

1st p. avrò temùto, I shall or will have feared.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. --- Present.

1st p. èo tèm-a, that I fear, or  tem-idìmo, that we fear;
    [may fear;]
    2d p. èo tèm-a or that thou fear;  tem-ìdè,  that you fear;
    [tèm-i,]
    3d p. èghì tèm-a, that he fear;  tèm-ano,  that they fear.
ANALOGY.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io tem-éssi, if I feared, or tem-éssimo, if we feared;
2d p. tu tem-éssi, if thou fearedst; tem-éste, if you feared;
3d p. tem-éase, if he feared; tem-éssero (tem- [éssino), if they feared.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. io abbìa temútó, that I have feared, or may have feared.

4. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io avéssi temútó, if I had feared.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.

1st p. tem-créi I should, would, tem-crémmo, we should, would,
[(tem-cria), [or could fear; or could fear;
2d p. tem-crésti thou wouldst tem-créstete, you would fear;
[tem-cria], [fear;]
3d p. tem-crébbede he would fear; tem-crébbere they would fear. [(tem-cria), [(tem-criano),
[tem-crieno),

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.

1st p. avréi temútó, I should, would, or could have feared; or might have feared.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . . . . . . . . . tem-íamo nbi, let us fear;
2d p. tém-i tu fear thou; tem-éte vói, fear ye;
3d p. tém-a égli, let him fear; tém-ano égli no, let them fear.
REGULAR VERBS.

Variation of the Verb Téssere.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in ēre (short); and of those which in the perfect end in ēi only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

1. — Present.

Téss-ere, | to weave.

2. — Past.

Avérē tessūto, | to have woven.

3. — Future.

Avérē a tēssere, \{ to have to weave, or
Éssere per tēssere, \} to be about to weave.

Dovérē tēssere, \{ to be about to weave.

GERUND.

4. — Present.

Tess-endo, | weaving.

5. — Past.

Avéndo tessūto, | having woven.

PARTICIPE.

6. — Present.

Tess-enti, s., \{ weaving.

7. — Past.

Tess-ité, m. s., \{ woven.

Tess-úti, p., \{ woven.

Tess-úta, f. s., \{ woven.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

1. — Present.

1st p. tess-o, | I weave, or do I weave.

[weave, or am | [weave, or am

[weaving; | [-émo],

Plural.
2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io tess-éva or tess-éa, | I wove, or did weave, or
| was weaving.

Singular.

1st p. tess-éit, | I wove, or did weave;
tess-émo, | we wove;
2d p. tess-ésti, | thou wovest;
tess-éste, | you wove;
3d p. tess-ét(tess-he wove; | tess-érono(tess-they wove.
[-éo), | [-éo).

3. — Perfect.

4. — Future.

1st p. tess-erô, | I shall or will weave.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. ho tess-útô, | I have woven.

6. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io avéva tess-útô, | I had woven.

7. — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. ébbi tess-útô; | I had woven.

8. — Future Anterior.

1st p. avrô tess-útô, | I shall or will have woven.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSE:

1. — Present.

1st p. io téss-a, | that I weave, or may weave.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io tess-éssi, | if I wove, or should weave.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. io abbia tess-útô, | if I wove, or should weave.
REGULAR VERBS.

4. — Pluperfect.
1st p. io avéssì tessūto,  | if I had woven.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.
1st p. tess-eréi (tess-ería),  | I should; would, or could weave ;
                               [or might weave.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.
1st p. avréi tessūto,  | I should, would, or could have
                       [woven; or might have woven.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .
2d p. tess-i tu,  | . . . .
                       weave thou.

[For a list of Verbs of the Second Conjugation, that in the perfect end in éi, or
in éi and ésti, see Appendix, F.]

Verbs ending in cēre (long), in order to preserve the
soft sound of c in all their inflections, take an é after
that consonant, whenever it is followed by a, o, u; as,

Tacēre, ' to be silent.'

(Paradigm of verbs ending in cēre (long)*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

7. — Past.
tací-úto, m. s., tací-úti, p., } been silent.
tací-útà, f. s., tací-úte, p., }
ANALOGY.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.                                               Plural.

1st p. tac-o  I am silent;                          tac-tamo,
                     [a-c-i-o,]                                we are silent;

d 2 d. tac-i, thou art silent;                      tac-tate,

3d p. tac-e, he is silent;                         tac-tano (tac-c-
                                                   [-o-no]),

you are silent;

they are silent.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io tac-a that I be silent, or tac-tamo, that we be silent;
         [(c-a-c-t-a),]           [may be silent;]

d 2 d. tu tac-a that thou be si-
         [or tac-i (c-a-c-
            [-t-a,]

3d p. egl tac-a that he be silent; tac-tano (tac-
         [(c-a-c-t-a),]

                                          [-a-c-t-o],

                                          that they be si-
                                          lent.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. ... ... ... tac-tamo noi, let us be silent;

d 2 d. tac-i tu, be thou silent; tac-tate voil, be ye silent;

3d p. tac-a (c-a) him be silent; tac-tano (tac-
         [c-a-e] eglino, lent

Verbs ending in cere (short) take an i after c, in the past participle only; as, I. paseere, 'to feed'; 7. — pasciulo, m. s., pasci-ulti, p.; pasciustas, f. s.; pasciute, p., 'fed.'

Verbs ending in iere drop the i, whenever it is fol-
lowed by another i; as,

Empiere, 'to fill.'

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in iere.)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. empi-o, I fill, or do fill, or emp-tamo (emp-
         [i-emp-o,]

[am filling;]

[emp-tamo,]

liemo).

* Tacio, pronounce both the Romans and Florentines, following the orthography of the best prose writers (and not taccio, as poets have, sometimes, been obliged to say), to distinguish this from tacelo, a form of the verb taccidre, 'to blame.'
REGULAR VERBS.

Singular.                        Plural.
2d p. ōmp-i,   | thou fillest;    | ōmp-īne,  | yeu fill;    
3d p. ōmp-i-e;  | he fills,       | ōmp-ī-ono, | they fill.   

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io ōmp-i-a [may fill] | that I fill, or ōmp-ī-amo, | that we fill;
[(ēmp-i-e),]                  |                            |
2d p. tu ōmp-i-a [or ōmp-i,]  | that thou fill;           | ōmp-ī-tē,   | that you fill;
3d p. égli ōmp-i-a [(ēmp-i-e),] | that he fill;             | ōmp-ī-ano,  | that they fill.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. ... ... ... | ... ... ... | ōmp-ī-amo, | let us fill;
2d p. ōmp-i tu,   | fill thou;               | ōmp-ī-ēte,  | fill ye;
3d p. ōmp-i-a     | let him fill;            | ōmp-ī-ano,  | let them fill.

Third Conjugation.

The verbs of this conjugation are divided into three classes, those which, in the present of the indicative, end in o; those which end in isco; and those which have both of these terminations.

Variation of the Verb Sentire.

(Paradigm of the verbs of the third conjugation which, in the present of the indicative, end in o only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.                  Compound Tenses.

1. — Present.                  2. — Past.
Sent-ire,                     || avēre sentisse,  | to have heard.
### ANALOGY.

3. — Future.

\[
\text{avere a sentire,} \quad \text{essere per sentire,} \quad \text{dovere sentire,}
\]

\{ to have to hear, or to be about to hear.

### GERUND.

4. — Present.

\[
\text{sent-endo}, \quad \text{[hearing].}
\]

\| \text{avendo sentito,} \quad \text{[having heard].}

### PARTICIPLE.

5. — Past.

\[
\text{sent-ito}, \quad \text{m. s.,}
\]

\| \text{sent-iti, p.,}

\| \text{sent-ita, f. s.,}

\| \text{sent-ite, p.,}

\{ heard.

### II. INDICATIVE.

### SIMPLE TENSES.

#### Singular.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. sent-o, | I hear, or do \( \text{sent-iamo,} \) | we hear; |
| \[\text{hear, or am}\] | \[\text{sent-iare}\] | |
| 2d p. sent-i, | thou hearest; | \( \text{sent-ite,} \) | you hear; |
| 3d p. sent-\( \text{i} \), | he hears; | \( \text{sent-ono,} \) | they hear. |

2. — Imperfect.

| 1st p. \( \text{to sent-iva} \) | I heard, or did \( \text{sent-ivamo,} \) | we heard; |
| \[\text{or sent-ia}\] | \[\text{hear, or was}\] | |
| 2d p. sent-\( \text{iva} \), | thou heardst; | \( \text{sent-ivate,} \) | you heard; |
| 3d p. \( \text{egli sent-iva or sent-ia,} \) | he heard; | \( \text{sent-ivano} \) or | they heard. |

3. — Perfect.

| 1st p. sent-i, | I heard, or did \( \text{sent-immo,} \) | we heard; |
| \[\text{hear;}\] | |
| 2d p. sent-i(e) | thou heardst; \( \text{sent-iste,} \) | you heard; |
| 3d p. sent-i(\( \text{e}\) | he heard; \( \text{sent-irono} \) (sent- | they heard. |
| \[\text{e}\)] | \[\text{-iro, sen-dir}\] | | |
REGULAR VERBS.

Singular.

4. — Future.

1st p. sent-irò, | I shall or will hear; | sent-irémono, | we will hear;
2d p. sent-irai, | thou wilt hear; | sent-irté, | you will hear;
3d p. sent-ird, | he will hear; | sent-irdanno, | they will hear.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. ho sentito, | I have heard.

6. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io aveva sentito, | I had heard.

7. — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. ébbi sentito, | I had heard.

8. — Future Anterior.

1st p. avrò sentito, | I shall or will have heard.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. io sent-a, that I hear, or [may hear; | sent-idamo, | that we hear;
2d p. tu sent-a, that thou hear; | sent-idete, | that you hear;
3d p. egli sent-a, that he hear; | sent-iano, | that they hear.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io sent-essi, if I heard, or [should hear; | sent-issimo, | if we heard;
2d p. tu sent-essi, if thou hearest; | sent-iste, | if you heard;
3d p. sent-esse, if he heard; | sent-issero (sent-[essino), | if they heard.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. io abbia sentito, | that I have heard, or [may have heard.
4. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io avéssai sentito, | if I had heard.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1. — Present.</th>
<th>Plural.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. sent-iréi</td>
<td>I should, would,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(sent-iría),]</td>
<td>[or could hear;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or might hear;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. sent-iréstí,</td>
<td>thou wouldst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[hear;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. sent-irébbe</td>
<td>he would hear;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(sent-iríó),]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.

| 1st p. avréi'sentító, | I should, would, or could have |
| [heard; or might have heard. | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| 1st p. . . . | . . . | sent-idómo nóí, | let us hear; |
| 2d p. sent-i tu, | hear thou; | sent-i té vói, | hear ye; |
| 3d p. sent-a égli, | let him hear; | sent-anó églinó, | let them hear. |

**Variation of the Verb Esibíre.**

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the present of the indicative, have the termination isco only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses.</th>
<th>Compound Tenses.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — Present.</td>
<td>2. — Past.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| Esibíre, | to offer. | avére esibíto, | to have offered.
REGULAR VERBS.

3. — Future.

avere ad esibire,
essere per esibire,%
dovere esibire,

\{ to have to offer, or
\} to be about to offer.

GERUND.

4. — Present.
esib-endo, offering.

5. — Past.

avendo esibito, having offered.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — Present.
esib-ente, s., eesib-enti, p., offering.

7. — Past.
esib-ito, m. s., [esib-iti, p.,
esib-ita, f. s.,] offered.
esib-ite, p.,

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

1. — Present.

1st p. esib-isco, I offer, or do esib-iamo, we offer;

[offer, or am offering;

2d p. esib-iscir, thou offerest; esib-ite, you offer;

3d p. esib-iscir, he offers; esib-iscono, they offer.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io esib-iva or esib-ia, I offered, or did offer, or

[was offering.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. esib-ii, I offered, or did offer.

4. — Future.

1st p. esib-ird, I shall or will offer.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. ho esibito, I have offered.
ANALOGY.

6. — Pluperfect.
1st p. io aveva esibito, | I had offered.

7. — Second Pluperfect.
1st p. ebbi esibito, | I had offered.

8. — Future Anterior.
1st p. avrò esibito, | I shall or will have offered.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.
1st p. io esib- [isca,] that I offer, or | esib-iámo, that we offer;
2d p. tu esib- [isca, or isbic.] that thou offer; | esib-iáte, that you offer;
3d p. egli esib- [isca,] that he offer; | esib-iscano, that they offer.

2. — Imperfect.
1st p. io esib-íssi, | if I offered, or should offer.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.
1st p. io ábbia esibito, | that I have offered, or
| may have offered.

4. — Pluperfect.
1st p. io avéssi esibito, | if I had offered.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.
1st p. esib-iréi (esib-iría), | I should, would, or could offer;
| or might offer.
### REGULAR VERBS.

#### Singular.

**COMPOUND TENSE.**

2. — Past.

1st p. *avrei* esibito, I should, would, or could have
\[offered; or might have offered.\]

\[Variation of the Verb Aborrirre.\]

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the present of the indicative, end both in *o* and *isco.*)

1. **INFinitive.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — Present</td>
<td>2. — Past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Aborrirre,</em></td>
<td><em>avere aborririo,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to abhor.</td>
<td>to have abhorred.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3. — Future.

\[avere ad aborrirre,\]
\[esser per aborrirre,\]
\[dovere aborrirre,\]

to have to abhor, or
to be about to abhor.

**GERUND.**

4. — Present.

*aborrindo,* abhorring.

5. — Past.

*avendo aborririo,* having abhorred.

**PARTICIPLE.**

6. — Present.

*aborrente,* s., abhorring.

7. — Past.

*aborrere,* m. s.,
\[aborrere,* p.,\]
*aborrere,* f. s.,
\[aborrere,* p.,\] abhorred.
II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.                        | Plural.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. abbórr-o, or I abhor, or do | abbórr-iámo, we abhor;
   [abbórr-isco,] [abhorr, or am]  [abbórr-isco,] [abhorr, or am]

2d p. abbórr-i, or thou abhorest;   abbórr-ite, you abhor;
   [abbórr-isci,]                        [abbórr-isco,]

3d p. abbórr-e, or he abhors;      abbórr-ono, or they abhor.
   [abbórr-iscce,]                       [abbórr-isccono,]

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io abbórr-íwa or abbórr-ía; I abhorred, or did abhor, or
   [was abhorring.]

3. — Perfect.

1st p. abbórr-ii, I abhorred, or did abhor.

4. — Future.

1st p. abbórr-iró, I shall or will abhor.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. ho abborrito, I have abhorred.

6. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io avéva abborrito, I had abhorred.

7. — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. ébhi abborrito, I had abhorred.

8. — Future Anterior.

1st p. avró abborrito, I shall or will have abhorred.
REGULAR VERBS.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.                                      Plural.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. io abbórr-i, that I abhor, or abbórr-idómo, that we abhor;
   [or abbórr-ísca, [or abbórr-ísca, or
   2d p. tu abbórr-i; that thou abhor; abbórr-iáte, that you abhor;
   [or abbórr-ísca, or
   [abbórr-íschi,
   3d p. égli abbórr-i that he abhor; abbórr-án, or ab-
   [-i, or abbórr.
   [-ísca, [bórr-íscaño,

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io abbórr-íssi, if I abhorred, or should abhor.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. io abbia abbórrito, that I have abhorred, or [may have abhorred.

4. — Pluperfect.

1st p. io avéssi abbórrito, if I had abhorred.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.

1st p. abbórr-íti (abbórr-íta), I should, would, or could abhor;
   [or might abhor.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.

1st p. aúrèi abbórrito, I should, would, or could have ab-
   [horred; or might have abhorred.
V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1st p. . . . . | . . . . . | *abborr-iámo nōi,* let us abhor;
2d p. *abborr-1,* or abhor thou; | *abborr-ite vōi,* abhor ye;
     [*abborr-isctu,*]  |                |
3d p. *abborr-ā,* or let him abhor; | *abborr-anō,* or let them abhor.
     [*abborr-isca*] | [*abborr-iscano*] |
     [*égii,*]     | [*égino,*]      |

[For a list of Verbs of the Third Conjugation, that in the present of the indicative end in o, in teco, or in o and teco, see Appendix, G.]

Verbs ending in *cīre,* in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a, o*; as,

*Cūcēre,* ‘to sew.’

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *cīre.*)

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. *cūc-i-o,* I sew, do sew, or | *cuc-támo,* (cuc-)*-témo,* we sew;
2d p. *cūc-i,* thou sewest; | *cuc-ite,* you sew;
3d p. *cūc-e,* he sews; | *cuc-i-ono,* they sew.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. *cūc-i-a,* that I sew, or | *cuc-támo,* that we sew;
2d p. *cūc-i-a,* that thou sew; | *cuc-īde,* that you sew;
3d p. *égii cūc-i-a,* that he sew; | *cuc-i-ono,* that they sew.
REGULAR VERBS.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular. Plural.
1st p. cuc-tu, cu-c-tu, cu-c-tu, let us sew;
2d p. cuc-i tu, cu-c-i tu, cu-c-i tu, sew thou;
3d p. cuc-i a égí, cu-c-i a égí, cu-c-i a égí, let him sew;

cuc-i a égni, cu-c-i a égni, cu-c-i a égni, let them sew.

REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS

There are some verbs of the third conjugation that belong also to the second; having two terminations in the infinitive, one in ire, the other in ère; as,

appetire, appétere, to desire;
inghiottire, inghiôtière, to swallow:

some, that belong also to the first conjugation; having the two terminations ire and ère; as,
impażzire, impazzàre, to grow mad;
incoraggire, incoraggiàre, to encourage:

and some others, that belong to all three of the conjugations; as,
ruggire, ruggere, rugghiàre, to roar;
olire, òlere, olezzàre, to be fragrant.

These verbs are differently varied, according to the conjugation to which their different terminations respectively belong.

The verbs of the second and third conjugation, in the first, second, and third persons singular of the present of the indicative and conjunctive, and in the second and third persons singular of the imperative, have constantly the accent on the penultimate syllable; as, témo, témì, témé, — témà; sënto, sëntì, sënte, — sënta, &c. Of those of the first conjugation, some have the accent on the penultimate syllable; as, ámo, ámi, áma, — ámi; and others, on the antepenultimate;
as, mórmoro ('I murmur'), mórmori, mórmora, — mórmori, &c.

[For rules for determining when the verbs of the first conjugation, in the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, have the accent on the penultimate or the antepenultimate syllable, see Appendix, H.]

Ambire, 'to crave,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative; — and in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, makes abbiámio ambizione, — abbiáte ambizione, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb ambíare, 'to amble.'

Ardire, 'to dare,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative; — in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, — and in the gerund makes, abbiámio ardire or ardíménto, — abbiáte ardire, &c., — avéndo ardire; and not ardiámio, — ardiáte, — ardéndo, which come from árdere, 'to burn.'

Bollire, 'to boil,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — and in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, changes ll into gl, and makes bogliámio, — bogliáte, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb bolláre, 'to stamp,' 'to set a seal.'

Gioire, 'to rejoice,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, — and in the past participle, borrows the corresponding forms of the verb godére, and makes godiámio, — godiáte, — godúto.

Smaltire, 'to digest,' in the first person plural of the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, — and in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, makes proccuríámio di smaltire, — proccuríáte di smaltire; and not smaltiámio, — smalitáte, which come from smaltáre, 'to enamel.'
REGULAR VERBS.

Suggere, ‘to suck,’ in the past participle borrows that of succiâre, and makes succiâto, ‘sucked.’

Many regular verbs, in some tenses, have also an irregular formation, which will be noticed in treating of Irregular Verbs.

EXAMPLES.

Egli è il véro, ch’io ho amâto, ed amo Guiscárdo, e quânto vicerò lo l’amerò; e se appettâi la morte s’a mâ, non mi rimarrò d’amâto. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Quèl che non cerchiâmo di fuggìre. (Bocc. Intro.d.)

Chè non prèghiamo cose sòzze, e non le lastiâmo preghére. (Albert. 2. 10.)

Bagherète il piè a Nòstro Signôre a nòme mio. (Bemb. Lett.)

Bontà non è che sua membra fregiâ. (Dant. Inf. 8.)

Guardâte, che ’l ventr su non vi noî. (Dant. Purg. 9.)

Tenètte di non doverì essere ricevûtò. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Éssi rùpperò le uòva degli âspidi, e tesséròno le têle d’e rûgnoli. (Mor. S. Gregor.)

Le légri, còst le divîne cóme le umâne, tâcìono. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

It is true, that I have loved, and do love Guiscard, and I will love him as long as I live; and if we love after death, I will not cease to love him.

That which we endeavour to avoid.

For we do not ask for vulgar things, nor let others ask for them.

You will kiss the feet of Our Lord [the Pope] for me.

No virtue lends its lustre to his memory.

Take heed that your coming upward does not harm you.

He feared he should not be received there.

They broke the eggs of the asps, and wove spider’s webs.

The laws, divine as well as human, are silent.
Essa, che la sera davanti ce-nátò non avea, da fame costrétda, a pasçere l'erbe si diéde, e pas-ciúta cóme poté, piangéndo, a váj pensérdi della sua futura vita si diéde. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Sostién persona tu di capitán, — E di mia lontánanza ëmpi il difétdo. (Tass. Ger. 11., 56.)

Esser non pud, che quell' an-gelic' alma.—Non senta 'l suón dell' amorose nóté. (Petr. c. 33.)

Vássi per tándo a Giacobbe, e si esistése le soddisfazioni maggióri, che darsi pósano a uómmi forestéri. (Segn. Pred. 26.)

E lo svegliáto cid che vede abbórre. (Dant. Par. 26.)

Abbórrénte, [ciód] che abbo-r̀rice. (Cíusca.)

Con tal cúra viéne,— Che la piága da sézzo si ricúcia. (Dant. Purg. 25.)

Tu ancora non séi ben tempe-ràto in quéstà virtù d' ápètire gli onóri. (Casa, lett. 70.)

La meditazione le mostráva, che ella dovéssse ápètère, e domandárre. (Seal. S. Agost.)

E non par mica vergogná,— Tra i bichéri impazzír tre vôlte l' ánno. (Red. Ditir. 37.)

La dónna sentíva si fátoo do-léré, che quási n' éra per im-pazzáre. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

E 'n sul cor quási féro lebn rùggé, — La nóite allór, quando' t'a posdr dovdréi. (Petr. s. 228.)

She, that the evening before had not supped, compelled by hunger, began to feed herself on herbs, and after she had fed herself as well as she could, weeping abandoned herself to the various thoughts of her future life.

Do thou support the office of captain, and supply the want of my absence.

It cannot be possible, that that angelic soul does not hear the sound of the amorous notes.

They go therefore to Jacob, and offer him the greatest satisfaction, which could be given to strangers.

And the upstartled abhors what he sees.

Abhoring, [that is to say] that abhors.

It is with such care, that the wound finally heals.

Thou hast not yet moderated thyself in the virtue of desiring honor.

Meditation taught her what she ought to desire and ask.

And it does not seem to be a shame to get crazy among glasses three times a year.

The woman was so much afflicted, that she came near being crazy.

And in my heart, like a fierce lion, it roars in the night when I ought to repose.
REGULAR VERBS.

Và come lione, che ruggisca, It goes, like a lion that roars,
cercando cui possa divorare. seeking whom he may devour.
(Cavalc. Med. cuor.)

Posciaché 'l fuoco alquanto ebbe After that the fire had roared
rugghiatò. (Dant. Inf. 27.) awhile.

EXERCISE XVI.

[Let the learner change the terminations are, ère, ères, of the infinitive mood of
the following Italian verbs, for the particular terminations they respectively take
in the person and tense indicated by the English, according to the foregoing
Paradigms.]

FIRST CONJUGATION.

I. 1.* — To love. 4. — loving. 7. — loved. —— II.
Amäre. am-äre. am-äre.

1. — I love, thou speakest, he sings, we play, you dance,
am-äre, 
part-äre, cant-äre, son-äre, ball-äre,
they study. 2. — I walked, thou passedst, he called,
stud-äre. cammin-äre, pass-äre, chiam-äre,
we prattled, you confessed, they ordered. 3. — I
cria-äre, confess-äre, ordin-äre.
confirmed, thou didst deliver, he considered, we preserved,
conferm-äre, consegn-äre, consider-äre, conserv-äre,
you advised, they disputed. 4. — I will expect, thou
consigli-äre, contrast-äre. aspett-äre,
wilt imagine, he will assault, we will dedicate, you will
immagin-äre, assalt-äre, dedic-äre,
assure, they will seek. 5. — I have praised.† — III.
assicur-äre, cerc-äre.

1. — I may fast, thou mayest besiege, he may ride, we
digius-äre, assedi-äre, cavalc-äre,
may punish, you may provo, they may practise. 2.
estig-äre, prov-äre, pratic-äre.

* To facilitate reference, we use, in this and the following exercises on verbs, the
numbers, which we have affixed to the moods and tenses in the Paradigms.
† The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining
their past participle to the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb avere, 'to have.'
I might refuse, thou mightest invent, he might accept, we 
\textit{risiut-\textae, \textit{invent-\textae, \textit{accett-\textae,}\textit{\textae,}}
might accompany, you might experience, they might ad-
\textit{accompagn-\textae, \textit{spember-\textae, \textit{amministr-}
minister. — IV. 1. — I would prolong, thou wouldst ven-
\textit{tare, he would eat, we would pray, you would envy,}
\textit{-\textae, \textit{mangi-\textae, \textit{preg-\textae, \textit{invidi-\textae,}}}
they would tire. — V. — ask thou, let him judge, let 
\textit{annoi-\textae, \textit{domand-\textae, \textit{giudic-\textae,}}}
us change, carry ye back, let them wait.
\textit{cambi-\textae, \textit{riport-\textae, \textit{aspett-\textae.}}}

\textbf{SECOND CONJUGATION.}

I. 1. — To fear. 4. — fearing. 7. — feared. — II. 
\textit{Temere. \textit{tem-\textae.}}
1. — I believe, thou receivest, he sells, we repeat, you 
\textit{cred-\textae, \textit{rieto-\textae, \textit{vend-\textae, \textit{ripet-\textae,}}}
enjoy, they depend. 2. — I wove, thou didst beat down,
\textit{god-\textae, \textit{dipend-\textae. \textit{tesse-\textae, \textit{abbatt-\textae,}}}
he raved, we debated, you exacted, they consented.
\textit{compet-\textae, \textit{dibatt-\textae, \textit{esg-\textae, \textit{acced-\textae.}}}
3. — I mowed, thou didst beat, he groaned, we sheared,
\textit{miert-\textae, \textit{batt-\textae, \textit{gem-\textae, \textit{tond-\textae,}}}
you reflected, they turned. 4. — I will provide, thou 
\textit{rislett-\textae, \textit{intess-\textae. \textit{provved-\textae,}}}
wilt fill, he will rage, we will feed, you will lose, they 
\textit{empire, \textit{ferm-\textae, \textit{pasc-\textae, \textit{për-\textae,}}}
will press. — III. 1. — I may cleave, thou mayest render,
\textit{prém-\textae. \textit{fend-\textae, \textit{rënd-\textae,}}}
he may resolve, we may re-enjoy, you may unweave,
\textit{risol-\textae, \textit{rigod-\textae, \textit{stess-\textae,}}}
they may succeed. 2. — I might yield, thou mightest 
\textit{sucèd-\textae. \textit{céd-\textae, \textit{assol-}
absolve, he might grant, we might dissolve, you might fill 
\textit{-\textae, \textit{concéd-\textae, \textit{dissolov-\textae, \textit{riemp-}
again, they might suck. — IV. I would combat,
-sugg-ere, combatt-ere,
thou wouldst precede, he would hang up, we would sell
preced-ere, append-ere, rivend-ere,
over again, you would proceed, they would succumb. —
-proced-ere, soccomb-ere.
V. — desist thou, let him drink, let us accomplish, recede
desist-ere, bev-ere, compi-ere, riced-ere,
ye, let them pour out.*
mesc-ere.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

I. 1. — To hear. 4. — hearing. 7. — heard. — II.
Sentire. sent-ire.

1. — I sleep, thou consentest, he understands, we rejoice,
dorm-ire, consent-ire, cap-ire, gio-ire,
you transfer, they serve. 2. — I fled, thou embellishedst,
trasfer-ire, serv-ire, fugg-ere, abell-ire,
he animated, we weakened, you attacked, they admonished.
anim-ire, indebbol-ire, assal-ire, ammon-ire.
3. — I constructed, thou conceivedst, he banished, we
costru-ire, concep-ire, band-ire,
assisted, you supplied, they finished. 4. — I will favor,
accud-ire, suppli-ere, fin-ire, favor-ire,
 thou wilt differ, he will cure, we will hinder, you will
differ-ire, guar-ire, imped-ire,
infer, they will grow proud. — III. 1. — I may assent,
infer-ire, insuperb-ire. assent-ire,
 thou mayest furnish, he may chide, we may boil,
form-ire, garr-ire, boil-ire,
you may crave, they may establish. 2. — I might
amb-ire, stabil-ire. unstabil-ire.
unite, thou mightest betray, he might nourish, we
-ire, trad-ire, nutr-ire,

* The number of Italian regular verbs in -ere is so small, that, having already employed them all in this Exercise, we have been obliged to make use of some verbs which, in some of their tenses, are subject to certain irregularities, which will be noticed under Irregular Verbs.
might warrant, you might encourage, they might plead.
garant-ire, incoragg-ire, piat-ire.

— IV. 1. — I would restore, thou wouldst quench, he
restitu-ire, sop-ire,
would exhaust, we would define, you would ascertain,
esaur-ire, defin-ire, chiar-ire,
they would season. — V. — act thou, let him hear, let
cond-ire. ag-ire, sent-ire,
us dare, obey ye, let them punish.
ard-ire, obbed-ire, pun-ire.

VARIATION OF PASSIVE VERBS.

Passive verbs are formed by joining the verb éssere, 'to be,' to the past participle of active verbs.

Passive verbs, therefore, through all their tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb éssere.

Variation of the Verb Éssere Amáto.

(Paradigm of the passive verbs.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.                     Compound Tenses.

1. — Present.                      2. — Past.

Éssere {amáto, m. s., [e, p.]} to be  státo amáto, m. s.,  to have been
   amáto, i. s., loved.     státi amáti, p., loved.

3. — Future.

avérer ad éssere {amáto, m. s., -i, p.} to have to be loved, or
dérer éssere {amáta, f. s., -e, p.} to be about to be loved.

* The past participle of passive verbs, like that of éssere, agrees with the subject of the verb in gender and number.
REGULAR VERBS.

4. — Present.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>esséndo</td>
<td>esséndo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>amáto, m.s.</td>
<td>amáto, f.s.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[i, p.]</td>
<td>[-e, p.]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>being loved</td>
<td>being loved</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

5. — Past.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>stádo amáto, m.s.</td>
<td>státi amáti, p.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>stáà amáti, f.s.</td>
<td>státe amáte, p.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>having been loved</td>
<td>having been loved</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. io sóno | I am loved; |
| amáto, m. | siámo amáti, we are loved; |
| amáta, f. | amáte, f. |
| 2d p. séi amáto | thou art loved; |
| amáto | siéte amáti, -e, you are loved; |
| 3d p. é amáto | he is loved, she is loved; |
| amáto, élla -a | églinó sóno amá, they are loved. |

2. — Imperfect.

| 1st p. io éra amá | I was loved; |
| amáto, éla -a | eravámo amáti, we were loved; |
| 2d p. éri amáto | thou wast loved; |
| amáto, éo -a | eraváte amáti, you were loved; |
| 3d p. égli éra | he was loved, she was loved; |
| amáto, élla -a | érano amáti, -e, they were loved. |

3. — Perfect.

| 1st p. fui amáto | I was loved; |
| amáto | fúmmo amáti, -e, we were loved; |
| 2d p. fosti amá | thou wast loved; |
| amáto | fóste amáti, -e, you were loved; |
| 3d p. fis amáto | he was loved, she was loved; |
| amáto | fúròmo amáti, -e, they were loved. |

4. — Future.

| 1st p. saró amá | I shall or will be loved; |
| amáto | sarémo amáti, -e, we shall or will be loved; |
| 2d p. saró amá | thou wilt be loved; |
| amáto | sarétte amáti, -e, you will be loved; |
| 3d p. saró amá | he will be loved; |
| amáto | saráanno amáti, they will be loved; |

[ed. | ed. | ed.]
### Compound Tenses

#### Singular

5. **Second Perfect.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>io sono sta-</th>
<th>have been loved</th>
<th>siamo stati amá-</th>
<th>we have been loved</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>to amáto,</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ti, státe amáte]</td>
<td>[státa amáta]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

6. **Pluperfect.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>io era stato amáto, stá-</th>
<th>I had been loved.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[la amáta]</td>
<td></td>
<td>[amáta]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

7. **Second Pluperfect.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>fui stato amáto, státà</th>
<th>I had been loved.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[amáta]</td>
<td></td>
<td>[amáta]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

8. **Future Anterior.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>sarò stato amáto, státà</th>
<th>I shall or will have been loved.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[amáta]</td>
<td></td>
<td>[amáta]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Simple Tenses

#### 1. Present.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>io sia amá-</th>
<th>that I be loved,</th>
<th>siamo amáti, -e,</th>
<th>that we be loved;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>to, -a,</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>or may be loved</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>tu sia amá-</th>
<th>that thou be loved</th>
<th>siáte amáti, -e,</th>
<th>that you be loved;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[to, -a]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3d p.</th>
<th>egli sia</th>
<th>that he be loved</th>
<th>siáno amáti, -e,</th>
<th>that they be loved;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[amáto, ella -a]</td>
<td>[she be loved]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 2. Imperfect.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>io fossi</th>
<th>if I were loved,</th>
<th>fóssimo amáti, -e,</th>
<th>if we were loved;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[amáto, -a]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>or should be loved</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>tu fossi</th>
<th>if thou wert loved</th>
<th>fóste amáti, -e,</th>
<th>if you were loved;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[amáto, -a]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3d p.</th>
<th>fossse amá</th>
<th>if he were loved</th>
<th>fóssero amáti, -e,</th>
<th>if they were loved;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[to, -a]</td>
<td>[she were loved]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td>[ed]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
REGULAR VERBS.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.
1st p. so ssa stâto amâto, stâta | that I have been loved, or
[amâta, ] | [may have been loved.

4. — Pluperfect.
1st p. so fôssi stâto amâto, stâta | if I had been loved.
[amâta, ]

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular. | Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. sarêi amá | I should, would, would
[to, -a, ] | sarémmo amáti, we should, would,
[or could be loved; or might be loved;]

2d p. sarésti | thou wouldst be
[amáto, -a, ] | saréste amáti, -e, you would be
[loved;]

3d p. sarébbe | he would be loved; sarébbro amáti, they would be
[amáto, -a, ] | [loved;]
[be loved;

[loved;]
[loved;]

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.

1st p. sarêi stâto amâto, stâta | I should, would, or could have
[amâta, ] | been loved; or might have been
[loved.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . | . . . . | siámo amáti, -e, let us be loved;

2d p. sii amáto, be thou loved; | idi amáti, -e, be ye loved;
[-a, tu, ] | [u;]

3d p. sia amáto, let him be loved; | siano amáti égli, let them be loved;
[-égli, -a élla, ] | [her be loved;]
[no, -e élleono, ] | [ed.
Many active verbs become passive by taking the particle *si* : — domandársi, 'to be asked'; but then they are used in the third person only, — as, sì dománds, 'it is asked'; sì è domándato, 'it has been asked'; &c.

---

VARIATION OF NEUTER VERBS.

Neuter verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary verb *essere*, 'to be,' according to the conjugation to which they belong.

*Variation of the Verb Partire.*

(Paradigm of the neuter verbs.)

1. **INFinitive.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — <em>Present.</em></td>
<td>2. — <em>Past.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partire,</td>
<td>to depart.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| | *esse parte*to, m.s. -i, p.s. -e, to have de-
| | partita, f.s. -e, p.s. -e, parted. |

3. — *Future.*

avere a partire,  
esedere per partire,  
overe partire,  

| to have to depart, or |
| to be about to depart. |

4. — *Present.*

| 5. — *Past.* |
|partendo, | departing. |
| | *essendo parte*, having departed. |

* The past participle of the neuter verbs that are varied with *essere*, agrees with the subject of the verb in gender and number.
PARTICIPLE.

6. — Present.

\[\text{parténte, m. s.,}\]
\[\text{parténti, p.,}\]
\[\text{departing.}\]

7. — Past.

\[\text{partito, m. s.,}\]
\[\text{partiti, p.,}\]
\[\text{partita, l. s.,}\]
\[\text{partite, p.}\]
\[\text{departed.}\]

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. \textit{parto},
| I depart, or do depart, or [am departing.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. \textit{io partiva},
| I departed, or did depart, or [was departing.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. \textit{parti},
| I departed, or did depart.

4. — Future.

1st p. \textit{partiro},
| I shall or will depart.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. \textit{io sono partito}, -a, I have departed.

6. — Pluperfect.

1st p. \textit{io era partito}, -a, I had departed.

7. — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. \textit{sui partito}, -a, I had departed.

8. — Future Anterior.

1st p. \textit{sarò partito}, -a, I shall or will have departed.
ANALOGY.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.
1st p. io párta, | that I depart, or may depart.

2. — Imperfect.
1st p. io partissi, | if I departed, or should depart.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.
1st p. io sia partito, -a, | that I have departed, or [may have departed.

4. — Plusperfect.
1st p. io fossi partito, -a, | if I had departed.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.
1st p. partiréi, | I should, would, or could depart; [or might depart.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.
1st p. saréi partito, -u, | I should, would, or could have de- [parted; or might have departed.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . .

2d p. párò tu, | depart thou.


There are some neuter verbs which require to be varied with *avère*; as, *vivere*, 'to live'; *dormire*, 'to sleep'; *tacere*, 'to keep silent'; *parlare*, 'to speak'; *gridare*, 'to cry out'; *ridere*, 'to laugh'; *scherciare*, 'to sport'; *pranzare*, 'to dine'; *cenare*, 'to sup'; *passeggiare*, 'to walk'; *cavalcare*, 'to ride'; *navigare*, 'to sail'; *tardare*, 'to retard'; *indugiare*, 'to delay'; &c.;—*ho vivuto*, 'I have lived'; *ho dormito*, 'I have slept'; *ho tacituto*, 'I have kept silent'; &c.

Others are indifferently varied with the auxiliary *avère*, or *essere*; as, *durare*, 'to last'; *succebarere*, 'to sink under'; *ammutire*, 'to become dumb'; *impallidire*, 'to grow pale'; &c.;—*è durato* or *ha durato*, 'it has lasted'; &c.

Others may be varied with either *avère*, or *essere*; as, *morire*, *guarire*; but the change of the auxiliary alters their signification:—*avère mórto*, 'to have killed'; *essere mórto*, 'to be killed,' or 'to be dead'; *avère guara-ríto*, 'to have cured'; *essere guarárito*, 'to be cured,' or 'to have recovered.'

*Dovere*, 'to be obliged'; *potere*, 'to be able'; *volere*, 'to be willing,' 'to will,' 'to wish'; when joined to a pronominal verb; as, *arréndersi*, 'to surrender one's self'; *frenarsii*, 'to restrain one's self'; *pértersi*, 'to lose one's self'; require to be varied with *essere*;—*si è dovuto arréndere*, 'he has been obliged to surrender himself'; *non mi son potuto frenare*, 'I have not been able to restrain myself'; *ti séi voluto pérdere*, 'thou wishedst to lose thyself.'*

* Many of the foregoing verbs are irregular, as will be shown in their proper place.
VARIATION OF PRONOMINAL VERBS.

Pronominal verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, ‘to be,’ according to the conjugation to which their termination belongs.

Variation of the Verb Pentirsi.

(Paradigm of the *pronominal verbs*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — Present.</td>
<td>2. — Past.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Pentir-si,</em></td>
<td><em>esser-si pentito,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>avér-si a pentire,</em></td>
<td><em>esser-si per pentire,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>dovér-si pentire,</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

GERUND.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>4. — Present.</th>
<th>5. — Past.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>penténdo-si,</em></td>
<td><em>essendo-si penti-</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>penténte-si, s.,</em></td>
<td>[pentito-si, m.s.,]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>penténti-si, p.,</em></td>
<td>[pentiti-si, p.,]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[pentí-si, p.,]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

PARTICIPLE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>6. — Present.</th>
<th>7. — Past.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>penténte-si, s.,</em></td>
<td><em>penténti-si, p.,</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[pentito-si, m.s.,]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[pentiti-si, p.,]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[pentí-si, p.,]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. io mi pen-
[to,] I repent myself; nbi ci pentiamo, we repent our-
2d p. ti penti, thou repentest vi pen
ti, [thyself; you repent your-
3d p. si pente, he repents him- si pentono, they repent them-
[self; selves.]

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. mi pentiva, I repented myself.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. mi pentii, I repented myself.

4. — Future.

1st p. mi pentiro, I shall or will repent myself.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

1st p. mi sono pentito, -a, I have repented myself.

6. — Pluperfect.

1st p. mi era pentito, -a, I had repented myself.

7. — Second Pluperfect.

1st p. mi fui pentito, -a, I had repented myself.

8. — Future Anterior.

1st p. mi sarò pentito, -a, I shall or will have repented [myself.

19*
ANALOGY.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

1st p. mi pēnta, | that I repent myself, or may [repent myself.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. mi pentissi, | if I repented myself, or should [repent myself.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. mi sīa pentito, -a, | that I have repented myself, or [may have repented myself.

4. — Pluperfect.

1st p. mi fōssi pentito, -a, | if I had repented myself.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.

1st p. mi pentirēi, | I should, would, or could repent [myself; or might repent myself.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.

1st p. mi sarēi pentito, -a, | I should, would, or could have re- [pented myself; or might have [repented myself.
### REGULAR VERBS.

#### V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>pentiámo-ci nóbí, let us repent our-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. penti-ti tu, repent thyself;</td>
<td>pentité-vi vóbí, repent your-</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. si pênta, or let him repent</td>
<td>si pêntano or let them repent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[pênta-si égli,</td>
<td>[pênta-si égli,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[himsel;</td>
<td>[himsel;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[égli,</td>
<td>[égli,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A great number of active and neuter verbs may become pronominal by the addition of the conjunctive pronouns mi, ti, si, &c. either in the objective or in the relation of attribution; and then these verbs are varied with the auxiliary essere, ‘to be’; as, lodáre, ‘to praise’; dáre, ‘to give’; tacere, ‘to keep silent’:

- **mi sôno dáto un cólpo**, I have given [to] myself a blow;
- **ti sêi dáto per vinto**, thou hast given thyself up as conquered;
- **si è lodâto,** he has praised himself;
- **ci súamo taciúti,** we have kept ourselves silent.

Usage, however, in some instances allows us also to employ the auxiliary avere, ‘to have’; but then the conjunctive pronouns mi, ti, si, &c. are always in the relation of attribution; as,

- **mélo sôno or mél’ ho godûto,** I have enjoyed it;
- **telo sêi or tel’ hai credûto,** thou hast believed it;
- **sel’ è or sel’ ha bevûto,** he has drunk it.
VARIATION OF UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

Unipersonal verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary avere, 'to have,' according to the conjugation to which they belong.

Variation of the Verb Pióvere.

(Paradigm of the unipersonal verbs.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.                      Compound Tenses.

1. — Present.                      2. — Past.
Pióvere,                           || avere piovuto, || to have rained.
|| to rain.

3. — Future.
|| avere a pióvere,   || to have to rain, or
|| essere per pióvere, || to be about to rain.

GERUND.

4. — Present.                      5. — Past.
piovendo,                          || avendo piovuto, || having rained.
|| raining.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — Present.                      7. — Past.
piovente,                          || piovuto,       || rained.
|| raining.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

èd p. pióve,                      || it rains, it does rain, or it is rain-
|| it is raining.
REGULAR VERBS.

2. — Imperfect.
3d p. piovèva, or piovéa, | it rained, it did rain, or it was [raining.

3. — Perfect.
3d p. piovè, piovètta, or piovve [(pióbbe), | it rained, or it did rain.

4. — Future.
3d p. piovèrà, | it will rain.

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.
3d p. ha piovùto, | it has rained.

6. — Pluperfect.
3d p. avèva piovùto, | it had rained.

7. — Second Pluperfect.
3d p. ebbe piovùto, | it had rained.

8. — Future Anterior.
2d p. avrà piovùto, | it will have rained.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.
3d .. píova, | that it rains, or may rain.

2. — Imperfect.
3d p. piovèssse, | if it rained, or should rain.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.
3d p. ãbbia piovùto, | that it has rained, or may have [rained.
ANALOGY.

4. — Puperfect.
3d p. avésse piovuto, if it had rained.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — Present.
3d p. pioverrebbe (pioveria), it would or could rain, or might [rain.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — Past.
3d p. avrebbe piovuto, it would or could have rained, or [might have rained.

V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. pióva, let it rain.

The following are the unipersonal verbs most in use:

aggiornare, to be day; gelare, to freeze;
annotare, to grow night; ghiacciare, to freeze;
balenare, to lighten; dighiacciare, to freeze;
lampeggiare, to lighten; dimo dre, to thaw;
tuonare, to thunder; far freddo, to be cold;
piovere, to rain; far chiudo, to be light;
diluviare, to rain very hard; far buio, to be dark;
delugare, to deluge; far caldo, to be hot;
nevicare, to snow; far vento, to be windy;
grandinare, to hail; far buón tempo, to be good weather;
tempestare, to hail; far cattivo tempo, to be bad weather.

The following verbs, though not unipersonal in themselves, are often used unipersonally, and may have the third person plural, as well as singular; and are varied with the auxiliary essere, 'to be':
To these may be added all verbs which become passive by taking the particle *si*, either before or after them; which are varied in the third person both singular and plural, and with the auxiliary *éssere*; as, *vedérsi*, 'to be seen': — *si véde*, 'it is seen'; *si sóno vedúti*, 'they have been seen'; *biasimársi*, 'to be blamed'; *si sóno biasimáti*, 'they have been blamed'; &c.

---

*Éssere*, 'to be,' is also used unipersonally, both in the singular and plural, when it is joined to the particles *ci* or *vi*; as, *ésserci* or *ésservi*, 'to be here,' or 'to be there.' It is varied as follows:

**Variation of the Verb Éssere, unipersonally used.**

### 1. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1. — Present.</strong></td>
<td><strong>2. — Past.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>ésserci</em> or <em>ésservi</em> [to be here or <em>sólo</em>, [to be there.]</td>
<td><em>ésserci</em> or <em>ésservi</em> [státi, m.s.; <em>státum</em>; <em>státum, p.</em>] to have been there.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>avér-ci</em> or <em>avér-vi</em> <em>per</em> <em>éssere</em>,</td>
<td><em>dóvr-ci</em> or <em>dóvr-vi</em> <em>éssere</em>,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>dóvr-ci</em> or <em>dóvr-vi</em> <em>éssere</em>,</td>
<td>to have to be there, or to be about to be there.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

**2. — Past.**

*Ésserci* or *ésservi* [to be there.]

**3. — Future.**

*Ésserci* or *ésservi* *per* *éssere*,

*avér-ci* or *avér-vi* *di* *éssere*,

*dóvr-ci* or *dóvr-vi* *éssere*,

*to* *have* *to* *be* *there,* *or*

*to* *be* *about* *to* *be* *there.*
ANALOGY.

GERUND.

4. — Present.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{esséndo-ci or } & \text{ esséndo-vi, } \\
\text{there being.}
\end{align*}
\]

5. — Past.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{esséndo-ci or } & \text{ esséndo-vi, } \\
\text{there having been.}
\end{align*}
\]

PARTICIPLE.

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

3d p. c' è or v' è, there is, or there is;

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ci s'ôno or vi s'ôno, there are.}
\end{align*}
\]

2. — Imperfect.

3d p. c' éra or v' éra, there was;

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{c' éranò or v' éranò, there were.}
\end{align*}
\]

3. — Perfect.

3d p. ci fu or vi fu, there was;

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ci fu'rono or vi fu'rono, there were.}
\end{align*}
\]

4. — Future.

3d p. ci sarà or vi sarà, there shall or will be;

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ci sarànno or vi sarànno, there shall or will be.}
\end{align*}
\]

COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — Second Perfect.

3d p. c' è or v' è, there has been;

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ci s'ôno or vi s'ôno, there have been.}
\end{align*}
\]

* Wanting.
REGULAR VERBS.

Singular.                                      Plural.

6. — Pluperfect.

3d p. c'éra or v' there had been; \[c'éranò or v'èra-\] there had been.
\[èra stàto, -a,\] \[no stàti, -e,\]

7. — Second Pluperfect.

3d p. ci fù or vi there had been; \[ci fùrono or vi there had been.
\[fù stàto, -a,\] \[fùrono stàti, -e,\]

8. — Future Anterior.

3d p. ci sarà or vi there will have \[ci sarànono or vi there will have
\[sarà stàto, -a,\] \[been; \[sarànono stàti,\] \[been.
\[-e,\]

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — Present.

3d p. ci sia or vi that there be, or \[ci siano, vi sia-\] that there be, or
\[sia,\] \[may be; \[no, or ci sieno,\] \[may be.
\[vi sieno,\]

2. — Imperfect.

3d p. ci fosse or if there were; or \[ci fòssero or vi if there were; or
\[vi fosse,\] \[should be; \[fòssero,\] \[should be.

COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — Perfect.

3d p. ci sia or vi that there has \[ci siano or vi sia-\] that there have
\[sia stàto, -a,\] \[been; \[no stàti, -e,\] \[been, or may
\[have been.

4. — Pluperfect.

3d p. ci fosse or if there had been; \[ci fòssero or vi if there had been.
\[vi fosse stàto,\] \[fòssero stàti,\]
\[-a,\] \[-e,\]

20
ANALOGY.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular. Plural.

SIMPLE TENSE.

1. Present.

3d p. ci sarebbe there should, ci sarebbero or vi there should, or vi sarebbe, [would, or could [be; or might] sarelbero, [would, or could [be; or might be;]

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. Past.

3d p. ci sarebbe there should, ci sarebbero or vi there should, or vi sarebbe, [would, or could [have been; or [might have sarelbero sta- [would, or could [have been; or [might have sta, -a, ti, -e, been; been;]

V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. ci sia, vi let there be; ci siano, vi sia- let there be. [sia, or sia-ci, [no, or sian-ci, [sien-vi,]

The verb *avere*, 'to have,' is often substituted for the verb *essere* when unpersonally used, and then it is varied after the same manner; as, *averci* or *avervi*, 'to be here,' or 'to be there'; *ci ha* or *vi ha*, 'here is' or 'there is'; *ci hanno* or *vi hanno*, 'there are'; &c.

The verb *avere*, not only may be used with propriety for the verb *essere*, but is also elegantly used in the singular, although the noun to which it is joined is in the plural; as, *quante miglia ci ha?* 'how many miles is it?' *ebbevi molti uomini*, 'there were a great many men there'; &c.

To express in Italian *here* or *there is some of it*, *here* or *there are some of them*, we join the particle *ne*, 'of it, of them,' to *ci* or *vi*, and say, *essercene* or *esservene,
avercene or avervene; as, cen'è or ven'è, cen'ha or ven'ha, 'here is some of it,' or 'there is some of it'; cene sono or vene sono, cen'hanno or ven'hanno, 'there are some of them'; &c.

---

**EXAMPLES.**

*Per certo chi non v'ama, da noi non desidera d'essere amato.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

*Noi eravam partiti già da éllo.* (Dant. Inf. 32.)

*Dormito hai, bélia dòna, un breve sónno.* (Petr. s. 284.)

*Fu accusato falsamente che doveva aver morto un uomo, colia moglie, e con tutta la famiglia.* (Vit. S. Franc.)

*Tarquinio alla fine fu morto per gli figliuoli del sopradetto Marco Márziol.* (Giov. Vill. l. 1. c. 2.)

*Lasciato costui alle mie muse che lo guariscano.* (Varch. Bocz. 1. 1.)

*Mio fratello per mé ra grázia di Dio è guarito.* (Red. lett. 1.)

*E 'l pentirsi, e 'l conoscere chiaramente, — Che quánto piacce al mondo è un breve sónno.* (Petr. s. 1.)

*Dalle quali facilmente tu ti saréstì potuto astenére.* (Mach. Com.)

*Se io dália verità del fátto mi fossi scostare vóltä, avrei ben saputo sòltò altri nòmi raccontála.* (Bocc.)

Surely he who does not love you, does not desire to be loved by you.

We had already departed from him.

Thou hast slept, beautiful woman, a short sleep.

He was falsely accused to have killed a man, with his wife, and all his family.

Tarquin at length was killed by the sons of the above mentioned Marcus Martius.

Let him be cured by my musés.

My brother has recovered through the mere mercy of God.

And to repent and to know clearly, that what pleases the world is a short dream.

From which thou wouldst have easily abstained.

If I had wished to depart from the truth of the fact, I should have known how to relate it under different names.
ANALOGY.

That no evil or scandal should arise from it, I have kept silent.

She was wise surely, and of a great mind; for another would have given herself to weeping.

It is a very dark night, and it drizzles, and seems as if it would rain harder.

Here are many other ladies.

He rides both when it grows night, and when it is day.

It happened to him not otherwise than it had happened to the Duke.

And that vices ought to be blamed by all.

How many miles is it? It is an infinite number.

Where there is one [way] which is very short.

EXERCISE XVII.

[Purpose: The learner, in the following exercise, will put the past participle of passive verbs, and of such neuter and pronominal verbs as are varied with the verb essere, both in the masculine and feminine gender, by alternating the gender at each tense, as is here done in the English with the third person singular.]

PASSIVE VERBS.

1. 1. — To be loved. 2. — to have been feared.  
   Éssere amáto. éssere státo temúto.

4. — being believed. 5. — having been heard. ——
   éssere credúto. éssere státo sentito.
II. 1. — I am praised, thou art invited, he is expected, lodato, invitato, aspettato, we are called, you are assured, they are punished. 2. — chiamato, assicurato, castigato.

I was sought, thou wast advised, she was prayed, we cercato, consigliato, pregato, were accompanied, you were envied, they were assured. accompagnato, inviato, assicurato.

3. — I was assailed, thou wast besieged, he was ordered, assaltato, assediato, ordinato, we were confirmed, you were delivered, they were confermato, consegnato, accepted. 4. — I shall be proved, thou wilt be asked, provato, domandato, she will be admired, we shall be paid, you will be ammirato, pagato, honored, they will be blamed. 5. — I have been onorato, biasimato. robbed.* — III. 1. — I may be believed, thou mayest creduto, be received, he may be beaten, we may be preceded, ricevuto, battuto, preceduto, you may be provided, they may be sold. 2. — I provveduto, venduto.

might be punished, thou mightest be furnished, she punito, fornito, might be hindered, we might be attacked, you might impedito, assaltato, be betrayed, they might be supplied. — IV. 1. — tradito, supplito.

I should be admonished, thou wouldst be wounded, he ammonito, ferito, would be banished, we would be encouraged, you would bandito, incoraggito,

* The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining the past participle to the compound tenses of the verb essere.
be obeyed, they would be invested. — V. — Be thou

allured, let her be listened to, let us be employed, be

ye trusted, let them be saved.

neuter and pronominal verbs.

I. 2. — To have departed. 5. — having repented

one's self. II. 5. — I have delayed, thou hast kept

silent (thyself), he has gone out, we have cured, you

have praised yourselves, they have lived. 6. — I had

wounded myself, thou hadst become dumb, she had

corrected herself, you had grown childish, they had

seized (themselves). 7. — I had dined, thou hadst soiled

thyself, he had grown mad, we had lost ourselves, you

had spoken, they were dismayed (themselves). 8. —

I shall have sailed, thou wilt have complained (thyself),

she will have recovered, we will have taken leave

(ourselves), you will have walked, they will have married

(themselves). — III. 3. — I may have rejoiced (myself),

thou mayest have sported, he may have colored himself,
REGULAR VERBS.

we may have gone near, you may have risen (yourselves),

\textit{avvicináto}, \textit{alzátó} vii, \textit{arrvíátó} vii,

they may have arrived. 4. — I might have enriched

\textit{arríchító} vii

myself, thou mightest have slept, she might have

\textit{dormító}, \textit{siú},

instructed herself, we might have sunk under, you

\textit{istrúító} \textit{siú}, \textit{succombító}, \textit{riúító} vii,

might have assembled yourselves, they might have

\textit{riúító} vii,

grown pale. — IV. 2. — I should have married myself,

\textit{ammugiáútó} \textit{miú},

thou shouldst have grown proud, he would have rejoiced

\textit{insúperbító}, \textit{raallégrító} vii

himself, we would have cried out, you would have

\textit{gridító}, \textit{siú},

enamoured yourselves, they would have become cruel.

\textit{innamoráító} vii, \textit{inferocító}.

— V. — Defend thyself, let her imagine herself,

\textit{disfendérít ti, immagínárít siú}, or \textit{immagínárít} siú

let us help ourselves, ennoble yourselves, let them

\textit{siú}, \textit{aiútárít ci, annobilllári} vi, \textit{riispet-

respect themselves. \textit{táár siú}, or \textit{rispettáár} siú.

UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

I. 1. — To rain. 4. — raining. 7. — rained. To

\textit{Pióverá} \textit{pióverá} \textit{pióverá}.

have rained. — II. 1. — It is day. 2. — it grew

\textit{pióvító} \textit{aggiónrátó} \textit{annot-}

night. 3. — it lightened. 4. — it will thunder. 5 —

\textit{táár} \textit{bálénrá} \textit{tuónrá}.

it has snowed. 6. — it had happened. 7. — it had

\textit{nevicító} \textit{avvenító}.

frozen. 8. — it will have seemed. — III. 1. — it

\textit{geláá} \textit{sembrátó}.
may freeze. 2. — it might thaw. 3. — it may have
geláre. 
dimoidre.
been cold. 4. — it might have displeased. — IV. 1. —
fatto caldo. 
dispiaciuto.
it would be important. 2. — it would have belonged.
importare. 
appartenuto.
— V. — let it be sufficient.
bastare.

ÉSSERCI OR ÉSSERVI, AVÉRCI OR AVÉRVI.

I. 4. — There being. — II. 1. — here is, or there is,
ci2 Esser1). 
ci essere, or vi avere,
there are. 2. — there was, there were. 3. —
ci essere or avere. 
vi essere, ci avere.
there was, there were. 4. — there will be, sing., there
vi essere, ci essere. 
vi avere, ci
will be, plur. 5. — there has been some of it, sing.,
avere. 
vi essere2 ne1, 
there has been some of them, plur. — III. 1. — that there
vi 
ci avere2 ne1 may be, sing., that there may be, plur. 2. — if there
avere, 
vi essere.
were some of it, sing., if there were some of them, plur.
avere2 ne1, 
vi essere2 ne1.
— IV. 1. — there should be, sing., there should be
vi essere, 
ci avere2 some of them, plur. — V. — let there be, sing.,
ne1. 
vi avere, or essere ci,
let there be some of them, plur.
vi essere2 ne1, or avere vi, ne.
CHAPTER X.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

The irregularities of Italian Verbs are chiefly confined to the perfect tense of the indicative mood, and the past participle.

Some verbs, however, are also irregular in the present of the indicative; and then they are irregular likewise in the present of the conjunctive and in the imperative.

When verbs are contracted in the infinitive mood, they are contracted also in the future tense, and in the conditional mood.

In those tenses in which verbs are irregular, the irregularity, generally, does not extend to all the persons: thus, with very few exceptions, in the perfect of the indicative, the second person singular and the first and second persons plural; and in the present of the indicative and conjunctive, and in the imperative, the first and second persons plural, are regular.

In the variation of these verbs, we will give only those tenses in which they depart from the paradigms already given, to which we must refer for the formation of the other tenses. The persons which are irregular are here printed in small capitals.

For the assistance of learners, we have added to each verb, the auxiliary with which it is varied in its compound tenses.
ANALOGY.

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

There are but four simple verbs in the first conjugation, which are not varied like amáre, viz.

Andáre, to go;  sáre, to do or to make;
dáre, to give;  stáre, to be, to dwell, to stand,
               [or to stay.

Andáre.

(Varied with éssere.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Andáre, to go.

GERUND. PARTICIPLE.

andándo, going;  || andáto, gone.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. vo, or vá, I go, or am go- | andiámo, we go;
   [do;,* ing; ]
2d p. vái, thou goest;  | andáte, you go;
3d p. va, he goes;  vánno, they go.

4. — Future.

1st p. andró [by contraction for | I shall or will go.
   [anderó],

* Andró is also a defective verb, and borrows these forms from the Latin verb vadóre.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular | Plural.
--- | ---
1st p. *so vāda,* that I go or may | *andámno,* that we go;
2d p. *tu vāda* | *(vādā),* that thou go;
2d p. *tu vāda* | *(vādā),* that thou go;
3d p. *égí vāda,* that he go; | *vādana,* that they go.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. *andrèi* (andria) [by contrac-
2d p. *va (vā) tu,* go thou;
3d p. *vāda ēgli,* let him go;

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . . . | *andiámo nöi,* let us go;
3d p. *vāda ēgli,* let him go;

*Andāre* is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pro-
nouns *mi, ti, si, ci, vi, si,* and the particle *ne;* thus, *me*
*vo,* 'I go hence'; *te ne vāi,* 'thou goest hence';
&c. *Me, te,* &c. are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *andāre,* as *riandāre,* signifying
'to go again', &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

*Riandāre,* signifying 'to examine' or 'to go over again'; and
*trasandāre,* 'to go beyond'; are regular and varied like *amāre.*

The verbs *mandāre,* 'to send'; *rimandāre,* 'to send
back again'; *tramandāre,* 'to transmit'; *comandāre,
to command'; *dimandāre,* 'to ask'; &c. are not
derivatives of *andāre,* and are varied like *amāre.*
Dáre.
(Varied with avére.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Dáre, | to give.

Gerund.

dándo, | giving.

Participle.

dáto, | given.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. | Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. do, | I give, or am giving; | diámio, | we give;

2d p. dái, | thou gavest; | dáte, | you give;

3d p. dd, | he gives; | dánno, | they give.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. détti, or | I gave; or did [diédi (diéi), | démmo, | we gave;

gave; | give; | déste, | you gave;

2d p. désti, | thou gavest; | dètero, or dié- they gave.

3d p. détte, or | he gave; | [diero (diéreno, | [diéo, diéo, dier, dé-

diéde (diéo, | [dié), | [no, diémmo, dèn-

| no), |

4. — Future.

1st p. dáró, | I shall, or will give.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io díla, | that I give, or may give; | diámio, | that we give;

2d p. tu díla, or | that thou give; | diáte, | that you give;

díi,

3d p. égli díla, | that he give; | díanó, or díanno, that they give.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io dèssi, | if I gave or should give.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. darëi (darfa), | I should, would, or could [give; or might give.

V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular.</th>
<th>Plural.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. . . .</td>
<td>. . . .</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. dà (dà) tu, give thou;</td>
<td>dàtè voi,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. nìa égli, let him give;</td>
<td>dìano, or dìeno let them give.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The compounds of dàre, as ridàre, 'to give again'; addàrsi, 'to devote one's self'; &c., have the same irregularities.

The verbs abbondàre, 'to abound'; accommodàre, 'to mend'; badàre, 'to mind'; accordàre, 'to grant'; circondàre, 'to surround'; fidàre, 'to trust'; freddàre, 'to cool'; gridàre, 'to cry out'; guardàre, 'to look'; guidàre, 'to guide'; lodàre, 'to praise'; predàre, 'to prey'; ricordàre, 'to remember'; rimediàre, 'to remedy'; scaldàre, 'to warm'; secondàre, 'to second'; &c., are not derivatives of dàre, and are varied like amàre.
ANALOGY.

**Färe.**

(Varied with avère.)

### I. INFINITIVE.

| Färe (fácere),* | to do, or to make. |

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>GERUND.</th>
<th>PARTICIPE.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>facéndo,</td>
<td>doing.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### II. INDICATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular.</th>
<th>Plural.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

#### 1. — Present.

1st p. *fo (fácio)*, I do or am doing; FACCIAMO, we do;
2d p. fái (fácil), thou dost; fáte, you do;
3d p. fa (fáce), he does; FÁNNO (*fán*), they do.

#### 2. — Imperfect.

1st p. to facéva or facéa (félá), I did or was doing.

#### 3. — Perfect.

1st p. férci (*féi*), I did; facémmo (*fémmo*), we did;
2d p. facésti (*féstti*), thou didst; facéste (*féste*), you did;
3d p. féce (*féš*), he did; FéCERO (*férno*), they did.

#### 4. — Future.

*1st p. faró, I shall or will do.*

---

*This verb belongs properly to the second conjugation, it being but a contraction of fácere, now become obsolete, of which it retains many of the forms.*
IRREGULAR VERBS.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io FACCIA, that I do, or may [do; if I do;]
2d p. tu FACCIA, that thou do;
3d p. égli FACCIA, that he do;

FACCIA, that we do;
FACCIA, that you do;
FACCIA, that they do.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io facessi (fessi), | if I did or should do.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. FARÉI (faría, faré'), | I should, would, or could [do; or might do.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . FACCIA, let us do;
2d p. fa (fa') tu, do thou ; | fáte, do ye;
3d p. FACCIA, let him do; | FACCIA, let them do.

The compounds of fáre, as assuefáre, 'to accustom'; confáre, 'to suit'; 'to agree'; contraffáre, 'to mimic', 'to imitate'; disfáre, 'to undo'; misfáre, 'to do wrong'; liquefáre, 'to melt'; soprassáre, 'to overpower'; stupéfáre, 'to stupefy'; 'to astonish'; &c., have the same irregularities.

Sodisfáre or soddisfáre, 'to satisfy,' is both regular and irregular.

The verbs olfáre, 'to smell'; scifáre, 'to shun'; trionfáre, 'to triumph,' are not derivatives of fáre, and are varied like amáre.
ANALOGY.

Stáre.

(Varied with éssere.)

I. INFINITIVE.

1. — Present.

Stáre, | to stand, to stay,
      | to dwell, or to be.

GERUND. PARTICIPLE.

stándo, | standing. || státo, | stood.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. sto, | I stand or am stiámo, | we stand;
       [standing;  ||       ||
2d p. stái, | thou standest; státe, | you stand;
3d p. sta, | he stands; stánno, | they stand.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. stétti | I stood; stémmo, | we stood;
       [(stéti),  ||       ||
2d p. stéstii, | thou stoodst; stéstii, | you stood;
3d p. stétte | he stood; stéttero(stéro), | they stood.
       [(sté),    ||       [stér, stiéro,]

4. — Future.

1st p. stárd, | I shall or will stand.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io stía, | that I stand or stiámo, | that we stand;
       [may stand;  ||       ||
2d p. tu stía, or that thou stand; stiáte, | that you stand;
       [stíi,       ||       ||
3d p. égli stía, | that he stand; stiéno, or stié- | that they stand.
       [no,      ||       [no,
IRREGULAR VERBS.

2. — Imperfect.
1st p. io stéssi, if I stood or should stand.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.
1st p. starmi (staría), I should, would, or could [stand; or might stand.

V. IMPERATIVÉ.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>stiamo, let us stand;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. sta (stá')</td>
<td>státe, stand ye;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>stfano, or stié-let them stand.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. stia égli,</td>
<td>[no égíno,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Stáre, is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns, mi, ti, si, &c., and the particle ne: thus, me ne sto, 'I remain here'; te ne stái, 'thou remainest here'; &c. — Me, te, &c. are then mere expletives.

The compounds of stáre, as contrastáre, signifying 'to stand against'; distáre, 'to be distant'; instáre, 'to entreat'; ristáre, 'to stop'; soprástáre or sovrastáre, signifying 'to delay,' 'to differ'; &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

Contrastáre, signifying 'to deny,' 'to dispute'; soprástáre or sovrastáre, signifying 'to stand over,' 'to threaten'; ostáre, 'to oppose'; restáre, 'to remain'; are regular, and are varied like amáre.

The verbs accostáre, 'to approach'; acquistáre, 'to acquire'; costáre, 'to cost'; manifestáre, 'to manifest'; pestáre, 'to pound,' are not derivatives of stáre, and are varied like amáre.

21
ANALOGY.

The foregoing verbs, andäre, däre, färe, and stäre, in all those forms in which, when they are simple, they form but one syllable, have in their compounds the accent on the last syllable; as, vo, da, fe', sta: — rivô, 'I go again'; ridà, 'he gives back again'; disfé', 'he destroyed'; instà, 'entreat thou'; &c.

EXAMPLES.

VA il canál per Giò, — Per Andà va il bò, — E l'ásino per Aññi. (Fran. Sacch., rime, 9.)

Or và', ch' un sol volâre è d' amendùe. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Quéstò udito dal sánâo vêcchio se ne Andò molto consolâto. (Vit. S. Ant.)

Prima ch' altri dinάnzi li rí-váda. (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Riändà le cóse, che tu gli hai dette di me. (Salv. Granch. 2., 5.)

Sono molti di sì lieve fantasia, che in tutte le loro ragioni trasandâno.† (Dant. Conv. 178.)

La senténza la quâle San Píet- tro dêttë cóntro Anània. (Câvalc. Pungill. 97.)

Al cónte piâcque molto quësta domándâ, è prestàmente rispóse di sí, e gliâle diénde. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

The horse goes by Giò, the ox by Andà, and the ass by Aññi.*

Now go, for one only will is in both of us.

Having heard this he went to the holy man quite consoled.

Ere any one repassed before him.

Examine the things, which thou hast said to him of me.

There are many of so light a mind, that in all their reasonings they [go beyond the question] wander from the subject of them.

The sentence which saint Peter gave against Ananias.

This request pleased the count much, and he immediately replied that he would, and gave them to him.

* Different interjections used by the Italians in driving those animals.
† We are aware that some copies of the Consilvio have trasandâno; trasandâno, however, is the better reading.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

And the good master of correct speaking [Dante] said: I [made myself] drew a little nearer to him who had been shown me; and He drew near me, and I drew near him.

All' inferno non sodisfano esianté le preziose cose. (Fr. Giord.)

In hell even precious things give no satisfaction.

E qui convien, ch' i' questo peso porti—Per léi, tanto ch' a Dio si soddisfacci. (Dant. Pur. 11.)

And here I must bear for it this weight, till satisfaction be made to God.

Veggendo che da niun conosciuto v' era, si stette. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 6.)

Seeing that he was known by none, he stayed there.

Posso favellare, s' io voglio; e se no, si me ne posso stare. (Fr. Giord. S. Pred. 32.)

I can speak, if I wish; if not, I can refrain from it.

Ma paura e pietàe contra stette—Al mio crudel ardire. (Ovid. Pist.)

But fear and pity stood against my fierce desire.

Rade volte addiuvien, che all' alte imprèse—Fortuna ingiuriosa non contrasti. (Petr. c. 11.)

Seldom it happens that Fortune does not oppose great undertakings.

Martucciio, veggendo la giovane, maravigliandosi, sopra stette. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

Martuccio, seeing the lass, wondering at it, tarried.

Sanza montare al dosso—Dell' arco, ove lo scoglio più sovrasta. (Dant. Inf. 18.)

Without ascending on the top of the arch where the rock is more jutting.
EXERCISE XVIII.

[In this and the following exercises on Irregular Verbs, have been introduced many of those verbs, which, although they are, or, from the similarity of their terminations, seem to be, derived from the simple irregular verbs here given, are yet regular. This has been done with a view of early accustoming the learner to make the necessary discrimination.]

I. 1.—To go. 4.—giving. 7.—made.—II. 1.—I stay, Andâre. dâre. ûäre. stâre, thou sendest, he gives again, we melt, you entreat, mandâre. ridâre. liquefâre. instâre, they go over again. 2.—I gave, thou accustomedst, dâre, assuefâre, he stood against, we asked, you granted, they triumphed. contrastâre. dimandâre. accordâre. trionfâre. 3.—I stayed, thou sendedst back, he devoted himself, we stâre, rimandâre, addâre, si, con- imitated, you delayed, they transmitted. 4.—I will make, trafâre, soprastâre. tramandâre. fâre, thou wilt oppose, he will go again, we will trust, you will ostâre, riandâre. fiddâre, so- stand over, they will praise. 5.—I have gone, thou vrastâre, lodâre. andâto, hast made over again, he has remained, we have given, rifâto, restâto. dâto, you have commanded, they have manifested. III. 1.— comandâto, manifestâto. that I deny, that thou mayest go beyond, that he may contrastâre, trasandâre, soddis- satisfy, that we may pound, that you may attend, that fâre, pestâre, badâre, they may cost. 2.—I might astonish, thou mightest costâre. stupefâre, pre- pray, he might approach, we might disdain, you might dâre, accostâre, schifâre, scal- warm, they might abound.—IV. 1.—I would do wrong, dâre, abbondâre. mifâre.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

thou wouldst acquire, he would command, we would scold, acquistáre, comandáre, gridáre,
you would smell, they would cost.—— V.—— go thou, let olsáre, costáre, andáre,

him give, let us make, stay ye, let them dispute. dáre, fáre, stáre, contestáre.

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ēre (long).

The simple irregular verbs in ēre (long) are the following; viz.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>verb</th>
<th>infinitive</th>
<th>participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>cadére,</td>
<td>to fall</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dissuadére,</td>
<td>to dissuade;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dolére,</td>
<td>to grieve;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dovère,</td>
<td>to owe;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>giacere,</td>
<td>to lie down;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>parère,</td>
<td>to seem;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>persuadére,</td>
<td>to persuade;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>piacere,</td>
<td>to please;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>potère,</td>
<td>to be able;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rimanére,</td>
<td>to remain;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sapere,</td>
<td>to know;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sedere,</td>
<td>to sit down;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tacere,</td>
<td>to be or keep si-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tenere,</td>
<td>to hold;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>valere,</td>
<td>to be worth;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vedere,</td>
<td>to see;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>volere,</td>
<td>to wish, to will,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or to be willing.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Cadére.

(Varied with essere.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPE.

Cadére, | to fall |

| cadúto, | fallen |

Digitized by Google
### II. Indicative.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. câdô (câg-)</td>
<td>I fall;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[gio],</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. câdî,</td>
<td>thou fallest;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. câde,</td>
<td>he falls;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>cadâmno (caggiâ- we fall;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[mo, cadêmo),</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>cadête, you fall;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>cadôno (câggio- they fall.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[no),</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 3. Perfect.

| 1st p. câdât (ca- | I fell; |
|  | [dêî, cadêtî), |
| 2d p. câdêsî, | thou fellest; |
| 3d p. câdéxe (ca- | he fell; |
|  | [dêô, cadêtê, |
|  | [cadê), |
|  | cadêmno, we fell; |
|  | cadêste, you fell; |
|  | cádêro(cadêro- they fell. |
|  | [cadêr; cadêro- |
|  | [no, cadêttero), |

#### 4. Future.

| 1st p. caderô (cadê), | I shall or will fall. |

### III. Conjunctive.

#### 1. Present.

| 1st p. to câda | that I fall or |
|  | [caggiâ), |
| 2d p. tu câda | that thou fall; |
|  | [caggiâ), |
| 3d p. égî câda | that he fall; |
|  | [caggiâ), |
|  | cadâmno (caggiâ- that we fall; |
|  | [mo), |
|  | cadidte (caggiâ- that you fall; |
|  | [te), |
|  | cáddano (caggiâ- that they fall. |
|  | [no), |

### IV. Conditional.

#### 1. Present.

| 1st p. caderêî (cadêî, cadería) | I should, would, or could fall; or |
|  | [cadría), |
|  | [might fall. |

### V. Imperative.

| 1st p. | |
| 2d p. câdi tu, | fall thou. |
IRREGULAR VERBS.

The compounds of cadére, as accadére, 'to happen'; decadére, 'to decline'; ricadére, 'to fall again'; &c., have the same irregularities. The poetical forms, however, ággio, ággia, aggiámo, ággiono, ággiano, are peculiar to cadére and not met with in its compounds.*

---

Dissuádère.

(Varied with either avére or éssere.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Dissuádère, |to dissuade. || DÍSSUÁSO, |dissuaded.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. DÍSSUÁSI, |I dissuaded; || DÍSSUÁDÉMNO, |we dissuaded;
2d p. DÍSSUÁDÉSITI, thou dissuadest; | DÍSSUÁDÉSTE, |you dissuaded;
3d p. DÍSSUÁSÉ, |he dissuaded; || DÍSSUÁSERO, |they dissuaded.

Dissuádère, properly speaking, is a compound of the Latin verb suadere, as well as persuadère, 'to persuade,' which has the same irregularities.

---

Dolére.

(Varied with éssere, and the conjunctive pronouns, mi, ti, si, &c.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Dolé-rí, to grieve. || dolú-tó-rí, |grieved.

* Of ricadére, Galileo has used rióggia.
### II. INDICATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>1. Present.</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. mi dólgio</td>
<td>I grieve;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(dólgio)],</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. ti dúóli</td>
<td>thou grievest;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(dóle)],</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. si dúóle</td>
<td>he grieves;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| **3. Perfect.** | |
| 1st p. mi dóls | I grieved; | ci dolémmo, |
| | [(dóls)], | we grieved; |
| 2d p. ti dolésti | thou grievedst; | vi doléste, |
| | [(dólia)], | you grieved; |
| 3d p. si dólse | he grieved; | si DÓLSERO, |
| | [(dólia)], | they grieved. |

| **4. Future.** | |
| 1st p. dorró | by contraction for I shall or will grieve. |
| | [doleró*], |

### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

| **1. Present.** | |
| 1st p. mi dólgas | that I grieve or |
| | [(dólia)], | that we grieve; |
| 2d p. ti dólgas | | may grieve; |
| | [(dólia)], | vi DOGLIÁTE, |
| 3d p. si dólgas | that thou grieve; | that you grieve; |
| | [(dólia)], | | |
| 3d p. si dólgas | that he grieves; | si DÓLGANO (dó-they grieve. |
| | [(dólia)], | | |
| | | | |

### IV. CONDITIONAL.

| **1. Present.** | |
| 1st p. dorréi (dorría) | by contraction for I should, would, or could grieve; |
| | | [tion for doleréi (dolería)!], |
| | | | |
| | | | |

### V. IMPERATIVE.

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>DOGLIÁMO-ci,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>let us grieve;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. duólit,</td>
<td>grieve thou;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>doléte-vi,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>let us grieve;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. si dólgas,</td>
<td>let him grieve;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>si DÓLGANO (dó-let them grieve.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(glíano)],</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* To distinguish it from dolero, future of the verb dolere, *to defraud. *
† To distinguish them from doleréi (dolería), forms of the conditional of the verb dolère, *to defraud.*
IRREGULAR VERBS.

The compounds of *dolére*, as *condolére*, 'to condole'; &c. have the same irregularities.

---

**Dovére.**

(Varied with *avére*.)

### I. INFINITIVE.  

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Infinitive</th>
<th>Participle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Dovére</strong> (devère*), to owe.</td>
<td><strong>dovuto</strong>, owed.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### II. INDICATIVE.

#### Singular.

| Present | 1st p. dévo, or [débbó (dégi)], I owe; | DOBBIÁMO (déb-), we owe; |
| 2d p. dévi (dèi), thou owes; | [dèiamo, deeggide-mo, devémo], thou owes; |
| 3d p. déve, or [débbé (dée), [dè'], he owes; | dévete, you owe; |
| Plural | [débbé (dée), [dè'], they owe. | [sono (deggio-no, dévono, dén-no), you owe. |

##### 3. Perfect.

| 1st p. dovēi or dovetti, | I owed. |


| 1st p. doverd or dovrè, | I shall or will owe. |

### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

#### Present.

| 1st p. io débbó, that I owe, or [déggia], [may owe; | DOBBIÁMO (deg-), that we owe; |
| 2d p. tu débbó, that thou owe; | [giámo], that thou owe; |
| 3d p. égli débbó, that he owe; | DÉBBANO (deg-), that they owe. |

---

* The Latin *débere*, from which *dovére* derives some of its forms.
IV. CONDITIONAL.

1.—Present.

1st p. doveréi or doveréi (doverfa | I should, would, or could owe; or [or dovria), | might owe.

V. IMPERATIVE.*

---

Giacére.

(Varied with either avere or essere.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Giacére, | to lie down. || giaciuto, | lain down.

II. INDICATIVE.

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{Singular.} & \text{Plural.} \\
1. — Present. & \\
1st p. giaccio, & I lie down; || giacciamo, & we lie down; \\
2d p. giaci, & thou lies down; || giaceste, & you lie down; \\
3d p. giace, & he lies down; || giacciono, & they lie down. \\
3. — Perfect. & \\
1st p. giaccui, & I lay down; || giacemo, & we lay down; \\
2d p. giacesti, & thou layest down; || giaceste, & you lay down; \\
3d p. giacque, & he lay down; || giacquero, & they lay down. \\
\end{array}
\]

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

\[
\begin{array}{ll}
\text{1st p. } to giaccia, & that I lie down or [may lie down; || giacciamo, & that we lie down; \\
2d p. tu giaccia, & that thou lie [down; || giactate, & that you lie [down; \\
3d p. egli giac- & that he lie down; || giacciano, & that they lie [down. \\
\end{array}
\]

IRREGULAR VERBS.

V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>GIACCIAI NOI, let us lie down;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. GIAÇI TU, lie thou down;</td>
<td>GIACÉTE VÓI, lie ye down;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. GIAÇÍA, let him lie down;</td>
<td>GIACCIANO ÉGLI, let them lie</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The compounds of giacere, as soggiacere, 'to be subject'; &c., as well as piacere, and its compounds compiacere, 'to please'; dispiacere, 'to displease'; &c. have the same irregularities.

Piacere and its compounds compiacere, &c., in the second person plural of the present of the conjunctive, and in the second person plural of the imperative mood, make PIACCIAIÉTE, &c.

Parere.

(Varied with ëssere.)

I. INFINITIVE.          PARTICIPLE.

Parere, to seem.        paruto (parso), seemed.

II. INDICATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — Present.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. PÁIO, I seem;</td>
<td>parámo, we seem;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. PÁRI, thou seemest;</td>
<td>paréte, you seem;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. PÁRE (pár), he seems;</td>
<td>párono, or PÁIO-[NO], they seem.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

3. — Perfect.

| 1st p. PÁRVI, I seemed; | parémmo, we seemed; |
| 2d p. PARÉSTI, thou seemedst; | paréste, you seemed; |
| 3d p. PÁRVE, he seemed; | PARVERO (párse-[RO], they seemed. |
ANALOGY.

4. — Future.

1st p. parrò [by contraction for parrèi (parria)] I shall or will seem.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. so pàia, that I seem or pàriamo, that we seem;

2d p. tu pàia, [may seem; ] pàiàte, that you seem;

3d p. égli pàia, that he seem; pàiiano, that they seem.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. parrèi (parria) [by contraction for parrèi (parria)] I should, would, or could seem; or if the verb parrèi (parria)†, I might seem.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . , . . . . . , pariámo nobi, let us seem;

2d p. pàri tu, seem thou; parète vbi, seem ye;

3d p. pàia égli, let him seem; pàiano églio, let them seem.

Persuadére.

(See dissuadére, p. 251.)

Piacére.

(See giacére, pp. 254 and 255.)

* To distinguish it from parrò, future of the verb parrè, 'to pary,' 'to adorn.'

† To distinguish them from parrèi (parria), corresponding forms of the verb parrè, 'to pary'; &c.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Potère.
(Varied with either avere or essere.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Potère, to be able. | potúto, been able.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. pósso, I am able; possámó (poté-we are able; [mo],
2d p. puói, thou art able; potète, you are able;
3d p. puó (puóte), he is able; pósso (ponno), they are able.

4. — Future.

1st p. potró [by contraction for [potéro*], I shall or will be able.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. póssa, that I be able or may [be able.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. potréi (potría) [by contraction I should, would, or could be able;
[tion for poteré (potería,]
[poría), [or might be able.

* To distinguish it from potró, future of the verb potère, 'to prune.'
† To distinguish them from poteré (potería), corresponding forms of the verb potère, 'to prune.'
V. IMPERATIVE.*

Singular. | Plural.
---|---
1st p. | POSSIAMO NOBI, let us be able;
2d p. róssë tu, be thou able; | POSSIATE VÔI, be ye able;
3d p. róssë égï, let him be able; | PÓSSANO ÉGIÎNO, let them be able.

**Rimanére.**

(Varied with ëssere.)

I. INFINITIVE. | PARTICIPLE.
---|---
Rimanére, | to remain. | RIMÁSTO (rimásò), remained.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. | 2d p. | 3d p. | we remain; | you remain;
---|---|---|---|---
rimángo | rimáníte | rimángono |
| we remain; | they remain.

2. — Perfect.

| 1st p. | 2d p. | 3d p. | we remained; | you remained;
---|---|---|---|---
rimássi | rimanéstë | rimásero |
| they remained.

4. — Future.

1st p. rimarrò [by contraction for rimanerò], I shall or will remain.

---

* "Observe that grammarians believe that this verb has no imperative; because, they say, we cannot command any one to have a power which he has not. But they have not reflected that one can give power, when he is able to do so; as in the case with God in relation to all things; and as, to a smaller extent, may be the case with man and certain relations of man. Which ideas being susceptible of being expressed also in the imperative mood, reason requires that this verb should not be so easily deprived of it." — Teor. Verb. Ital., Part. II., § 130.

Besides, the verb potére does not mean only "aver possa o virtù, ma volentid accad, ea satisfactione, e contente; c'hè non è sempre il vero dei portatori, e degli usini." — Dep. Decam., 104.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Sing. | Plur.
---|---
1st p. 1o RIMÁNGA | that I remain or | rimanidmo, | that we remain;
[(rimánga),] | may remain; | | |
2d p. 2o RIMÁNGA | that thou remain; | rimaniáte, | that you remain;
[(rimánga),] | | | |
3d p. égli RIMÁNGA | that he remain; | RIMÁNGANO, | that they remain.
[égli,] | | | |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. rimarréi (rimarría) | I should, would, or could remain; |
[by con- | [or might remain. |
traction for rimaneréi (rimane- |
[ría)], | | |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| | rimaniámo nòi, | let us remain; |
1st p. . . . . . | . . . . . | | |
2d p. rimání tu | remain thou; | rimanéte vòi, | remain ye; |
3d p. RIMÁNGA | let him remain; | RIMÁNGANO | let them remain.
[égli,] | | [égliño,] |

\[ Sapére. \]

(Varied with avére.)

I. INFINITIVE.       PARTICIPLE.

Sapére (savére*), to know. | sapúto, | known.
II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

| | sapíamo, | we know; |
1st p. so, | I know; | | |
2d p. sáí, | thou knowest; | sapéte, | you know; |
3d p. sa (sápe), he knows; | sáanno, | they know.

* This form, met with in Dante, Alamanni, and other poets, has become obsolete.
### Singular

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>3. — Perfect.</th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. sēppi,</td>
<td>I knew;</td>
<td>sapēmmo,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. sapēstī,</td>
<td>thou knewest;</td>
<td>sapēste,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. sēppē</td>
<td>he knew;</td>
<td>sēppēro,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Plural

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>we knew;</td>
<td>you knew;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>they knew.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Future

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. saprō [by contraction for sapērō], I shall or will know.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### III. CONJUNCTIVE

### 1. — Present

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. to sāppia,</td>
<td>that I know, or may know.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### IV. CONDITIONAL

### 1. — Present

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. saprēi (saprīa) [by contraction for sapērēi (saprīa)], I should, would, or could know; or might know.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### V. IMPERATIVE

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. ...</td>
<td>...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. sāppi tu,</td>
<td>know thou;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. sāppiaēgii,</td>
<td>let him know;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>sāppiamō noi,</td>
<td>let us know;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sāppiāte voi,</td>
<td>know ye;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sāppianō egīno,</td>
<td>let them know.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The compounds of sapēre, as risapēre, 'to learn,' or 'to come to know'; follow the same irregularities.

### Sedēre.

(Varied with avēre.)

### I. INFINITIVE

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sedēre (sēggere&quot;),</td>
<td>to sit down.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* This verb, now become obsolete, is still used in many of the forms of the modern verb sedēre.
### IRREGULAR VERBS.

#### GERUND.  

| sedéndo (seggendo), sitting. | sedúto, seated. |

#### PARTICIPLE.  

| sedéndo (seggendo), sitting. | sedúto, seated. |

#### II. INDICATIVE.  

**Singular.**  

1. **Present.**  

| 1st p. siéndo, or | I sit; |
| [ségga (seggia)], |

| 2d p. siédi, | thou sittest; |
| [ségga (seggia)], |

| 3d p. siéde (ségga, [de]), | he sits; |

2. **Perfect.**  

| 1st p. sedé or sedétti, | I sat. |

3. **Future.**  

| 1st p. sederó* (sédre), | I shall or will sit. |

#### III. CONJUNCTIVE.  

1. **Present.**  

| 1st p. to siédá, or | that I sit, or may |
| [ségga (seggia),] |

| 2d p. tu siédá, or | that thou sit; |
| [ségga (seggia), (or séggia),] |

| 3d p. égli siédá, | that he sit; |
| [or séggia, (or séggia),] |

| 1st p. siédi, | I sit; |
| [ségga, (or séggia),] |

| 2d p. siédé, | you sit; |
| [ségga, (or séggia),] |

| 3d p. siéde, | they sit. |
| [ségga, (or séggia),] |

| 1st p. sedé, | I sat. |
| [ségga, (or séggia),] |

| 2d p. sedéte, | you sit; |
| [ségga, (or séggia),] |

| 3d p. sedéte, | they sit. |
| [ségga, (or séggia),] |

#### IV. CONDITIONAL.  

1. **Present.**  

| 1st p. sederói (sédri, sedería), | I should, would, or could sit; or |
| [ might sit. |

---

* Mastrofini proposes sederó, and in the conditional sederói; but this, which indeed would present the advantage of distinguishing these forms from the corresponding ones of the verb sedère, 'to appease,' has not been adopted by the generality of Italian writers.
### V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>sediámo (seggia)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. siédi tu, sit thou;</td>
<td>[mo] nóí,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. siéda, or séda, or sé,</td>
<td>sedéte vói, sit ye;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[ségga égli,</td>
<td>siédano, or sé, let them sit.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[gano églio,</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Sedére** is sometimes varied with the pronouns mi, ti, st, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary **éssere**; as **mi siédo,** ‘I sit (myself)’; **ti séi sedúto,** ‘thou hast sat (thyself)’; &c.

The compounds of **sedére,** as **possedére,** ‘to possess’; **risedére,** ‘to reside’; **soprusedére,** ‘to supersede’; have the same irregularities.

---

### Tacére.

*(Varied with avére.)*

#### I. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tacére, to be or keep si-</th>
<th>taciúto, been silent.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

#### II. INDICATIVE.

1. — **Present.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p. tácio (táccio),</th>
<th>I am silent.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

3. — **Perfect.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p. tácqui,</th>
<th>I was silent;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2d p. tacésti,</td>
<td>thou wast silent;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. tácquez,</td>
<td>he was silent;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>tacémmo, we were silent;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>tacéste, you were silent;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>tácquero, they were silent.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. ɪ o tācia (táccia), that I be silent or may be silent.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .
2d p. tāci tu, be thou silent.

Tacēre is sometimes varied with the pronouns mi, tē, si, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary ēssere; mi tācio, 'I keep silent'; si ē taciūto, 'he has kept silent'; &c.

The compound of tacēre, — ritacēre, 'to become once more silent'; follows the same irregularities.

---

Tenēre.

(Varied with avēre.)

I. INFINITIVE.                   PARTICIPLE.

Tenēre, to hold. || tenūto, holden.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.                      Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. tēnō | I hold; | teniāmo (tēnā-) | we hold;
[(tēgno), [mo],
2d p. tiēni (tē- thou holdest; tenēte, you hold;
[gni],
3d p. tiēne, he holds; tēnōno, they hold.
ANALOGY.

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. TÉNNI, I held; tenémmo, we held;
2d p. tenéstis, thou halted; tenéstetis, you held;
3d p. TÉNNE, he held; TÉNNERO, they held.

4. — Future.

1st p. terró [by contraction for teneró], I shall or will hold.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. só TÉNGA, that I hold or teniámno (tegná), that we hold;
[(tégna), [mo] \[may hold;]
2d p. tú TÉNGA, that thou hold; teniátete (tegnátete), that you hold;
3d p. égli TÉNGA, that he hold; TÉNGANO (tégna), that they hold.
[(tégna), [no],

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. terréi (terría) [by contraction for teneréi (tenería)], I should, would, or could hold; or [might hold.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . . teniámno (tegná), let us hold;
2d p. TÉNI (té), hold thou; tenéteté obi, hold ye;
3d p. TÉNGA, [ti], let him hold; TÉNGANO (tégna), let them hold.
[(tégna) égli, [no] égíno,

Tenére is sometimes varied with the pronouns mi, ti, si, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary éssere; as, mi sóno tenuto, 'I have holden or restrained myself'; &c.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

The compounds of tenère, as appartenère, 'to belong'; astenère, 'to abstain'; attenère, 'to attain'; contenère, 'to contain'; 'to refrain'; detenère, 'to detain'; mantenère, 'to maintain'; ottenère, 'to obtain'; rattenère, 'to stop,' 'to restrain'; sostenère, 'to support,' 'to sustain'; &c. have the same irregularities.

---

Valère.

(Varied with either avere or essere.)

I. INFINITIVE.

| Valère, | to be worth, or | valústo (válso), | been worth. |
|        |               |              |            |
|        | [to avail.]   |              |            |

II. INDICATIVE.

|           |          |          |
| Singular: |          |          |

1. — Present.

| 1st p. válgo | I am worth; | valiámo, | we are worth; |
| [(váglio),]   | 2d p. vál,  | thou art worth; | valéte, | you are worth; |
| 3d p. válé (vál), | he is worth; | VÁLGO, or VÁLGO, | they are worth. |

2. — Perfect.

| 1st p. válsí, | I was worth; | valémmo, | we were worth; |
| 2d p. valésí, | thou wast worth; | valéste, | you were worth; |
| 3d p. válsí, | he was worth; | VÁLSÉRO, | they were worth. |

3. — Future.

| 1st p. várró | I shall or will be worth. |
| [várró], | | [valéró], |

23
III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular. | Plural.
---|---
1st p. tu **válga**, that I be worth | **valiámno**, that we be [worth;
or **váglia**, [or may be | [worth;
2d p. tu **válga**, that thou be | **valiáte**, that you be [worth;
or **váglia**, [worth; | [worth;
3d p. **égli válga**, that he be worth; | **válgano**, or **vá-** that they be [worth.
or **váglia**, [ | [GLIANO],

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — **Present**.

1st p. **várréi** (varríə) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could be worth;
[ | [or might be worth.

tion for **valéret** (valéría)], |

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . | . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . | **valiámno nóî**, let us be worth;
2d p. váli tu, | be thou worth; | **valéte nóî**, be ye worth;
3d p. **válga** | let him be worth; | **válgano**, or **vá-** let them be [worth;
[(váglia) **égli**], | [GLIANO **égli**],

The compounds of **valére**, as **disvalére**, 'to hurt'; **equiválére**, 'to be equivalent'; **invalére**, 'to lose worth or strength'; **prevalére**, 'to prevail'; **rivalére', 'to recover worth or strength'; have the same irregularities. Of the two forms of the **present**, however, that in álgo is better adapted to them; and **disválgo**, 'I hurt'; **equiválga**, 'let it be equivalent'; **inválgan**o, 'that they lose strength'; &c., are oftener met with in books than **disváglia**., &c.

The poetical form **preválso**, 'prevailed,' of the **past participle** of **preválére**, has been used by good writers even in prose. **Invalére**, in the same **participle** has **inválso**, 'having] lost strength'; only.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Vedere.
(Varied with avère.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Vedere, to see.

GERUND. PARTICIPE.
vedéndo, or vég-seeing. veduto (visto), seen.

[GÉNDÔ,]

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. védo, vég- I see; vediámo, or vég- we see;
[go, or véggio, [giámo,]
2d p. védi (vé'), thou seest; védete, you see;
3d p. vede, he sees; védono, véggo-they see.

[NO, or vég-

[GIONO,]

3. — Perfect.

1st p. vidi (víd- I saw; vedémmo, we saw;
[di],
2d p. vedéstì, thou sawest; védéste, you saw;
3d p. vdéde, he saw; vídero (víder), they saw.

4. — Future.

1st p. vedró [by contraction for vederó, I shall or will see.
[vederó],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io véda, that I see or may see; vediámo, or vég-that we see;
[végga, or [giámo,]
[véggia,
2d p. tu véda, that thou see; vediáte, or vég-that you see;
[végga, or [giáte,
[véggia,
3d p. égli véda, that he see; védano, végga-that they see.
[végga, or [NO, or vég-
[véggia,}

[GIANO,]
IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular. | Plural.
--- | ---
1st p. vedrē (vedría) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could see ; or
[ | [might see.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. | vediámō, or vēg- | let us see;
--- | --- | ---
2d p. vēdi(vē')tu, see thou; | vēdētē vōi, | see ye;
3d p. vēda, vēg- | vēdano, vēgga- | let them see.
[ | [ | [GIANO ēgliō,
[GA, or VĒGGA | [NO, or VĒG- | [GIANO ēgliō,
[ēgli,- | |

The compounds of vedēre, as antivedēre, 'to foresee'; avvedēre, 'to perceive'; divedēre, 'to be sensible of'; prevedēre, 'to foresee'; provvedēre, 'to provide'; ravvedēre, 'to amend'; rivēdēre, 'to see again'; travēdēre, 'to see one thing for another'; &c., have the same irregularities.

Antivedēre, avvedēre, divedēre, travēdēre, in the past participle make only antivedūto, 'foreseen'; avvedūto, 'perceived'; divedūto, 'been sensible of'; travēdūto, 'seen one thing for another': and divedēre, prevedēre, provvedēre, ravvedēre, travēdēre, in the future and conditional are never contracted, and make divedere, 'I will be sensible of'; prevedēri, 'I would foresee'; &c.

Volēre.

(Varied with avēre.)

I. INFINITIVE. | PARTICIPLE.
--- | ---
Volēre, | to wish, to will, | volūto, | been willing.
[ | for to be willing. |
IRREGULAR VERBS.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. vöglio, I am willing; | vögliamo (volé- we are willing;
    [vó], [mo],
2d p. vuóti (vuó- thou art willing; | voléte, you are willing;
    [li, vuó],
3d p. vuóle (vó- he is willing; | vögliono (vón- they are willing.
    [le], [no, von],

3. — Perfect.

1st p. völli | I was willing; | volémmo, we were willing;
    [(vólsi*],
2d p. volésti, | thou wast willing; | voléste, you were willing;
    [ling;]
3d p. völle, | he was willing; | völleró, they were willing.
    [ling].

4. — Future.

1st p. vorrò [by contraction for | I shall or will be willing.
    [volero†],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io vöglia, that I be willing or may | [be willing.
    [ling].

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. vorréi (vorriá) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could be will-
    [tion for voléréi (voleria)†], [ling; or might be willing.

* Vóli, as well as völe and völeró, has become obsolete; and the few examples we find in Dante, Ariosto, Berni, and Tasso, ought not to authorize the use of these forms, which properly belong to the perfect of volgere, 'to turn'; and not of volere, 'to be willing.'

† To distinguish it from the future of the verb volare, 'to fly.'

†† To distinguish them from the corresponding forms of volare, 'to fly.'

*23
V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>Vogliamo noi, let us be willing;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. vogli, be thou willing;</td>
<td>Vogliate voi, be ye willing;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. voglia, let him be willing;</td>
<td>Vogliano, let them be willing;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

[égli,] [églino,]
[ling;] [ling.]

The compounds of volère, as disvolère, 'to desire the contrary of what one has wished'; rivolère, 'to wish again,' or 'to be once more willing'; have the same irregularities.

---

**EXAMPLES.**

*E caddi, come corpo morto cade.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

Il timbre, molto più che la forza delle ragioni, lo dissuase. (Fra. Gior.)

Là dove più mi dolse [dólsi], altri si duole, e dolendo addolcisce il mio dolore. (Petr. c. 22.)

Di niuna cosa durar dobbiamo, la quale abbia forza d' offendere. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

Questi è colui, che giacque sopra 'l petto—Del nostro Pellicano. (Dant. Par. 25.)

And I fell, as a dead body falls.

Fear dissuaded him a great deal more than the power of reason.

Others grieve for what I most grieved, and grieving they assuage my grief.

We ought to endure nothing that has the power of offending.

This one is he, who lay upon the bosom of our Pelican.

* It has been asserted that volère has no imperative, but the slightest acquaintance with our classic writers might convince any one to the contrary:

Vogliens venit con méco. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 10.)

Vogli averé carità. (Gr. S. Glr. 19.) Have charity.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Or ti piaccia gradir la sua venuta. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

Non so, se a voi quello se ne parrà, che a me ne partirrebbe. (Bocc. Introd.)

Così veloci seguono i suoi vizi, — Per simigliarsi al Punto quanto pônsso, — E posson, quanto a vederci son sublimi. (Dant. Par. 28.)

Io non morì, e non rimasi vivo. (Dant. Inf. 34.)

Onde, ben sèpphe che dìarsi Dante, quando, nel Canto Décimo dell' Inferno, indùsse Farinata a dirgli quelle parole. (Salviat. Avvert. 1. 2. 12.)

Chè seggéndo in piúme in fama non si vién, né sotto cóltre. (Dant. Inf. 24.)

E giammá poi la mia lingua non tacque, — Mentre poté. (Petr. c. 4.)

Morto che ebbero Costantino loro fratello, loro dìe ténnero l'imperio. (Petr. Uom. ill.)

Nè l' un mi varrebbe, nè l' altro voglio che mi vágliá. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Nói eravám partiti già da éllo — Ch' i' vói duo ghiacciati in una búca. (Dant. Inf. 32.)

Idiò volle, in questa vita, privare nói di questa luce. (Dant. Conv. 114.)

Now may his coming please thee.

I do not know, whether it will appear to you so as it would appear to me.

Thus swift follow their hoops, approaching in likeness to the Point as near as they can; and they can the more, the loftier their vision is.

I did not die, neither remained I alive.

Therefore, Dante knew well what he said, when, in the Tenth Canto of the Inferno, he induced Farinata to say to him those words.

For neither by reposing on feathers, nor under a coverlet, is fame won.

And never afterwards was my tongue silent, whilst it could [speak].

After they had killed Constantine their brother, both of them held the empire for themselves.

Neither the one could, nor I wish that the other should, avail me.

We had now left him, when I saw two spirits by the ice pent in one hollow.

God wished to deprive us, in this life, of this light.
EXERCISE XIX.

I. 1.—To fall. 4.—lying down. 7.—remained. 
   cadère.  giacère.  rimanère.
—II. 1.—I grieve, thou art able, he sits, we seem, 
   dolère,  potère,  sedère,  parère, 
   you owe, they know. 2.—I dissuaded, thou heldest, 
   dovére,  sapère,  dissuadère,  tenère, 
   he wished, we pleased, you saw, they were worth. 
   volère,  piacère,  vedère,  valère.
3.—I fell again, thou pleasedst, he was subject, we 
   ricadère,  compiacère,  soggiacère,  ri-
   learned, they sustained.—I prevailed, thou maintainedst, 
   sapère,  sostènère.  —prevadère,  mantenère,
   he was silent again, we declined, you foresaw, they 
   ritadère,  decadère,  antivedère,  ri-
   wished again.—I consoled, thou possessedst, he ab-
   volère.  condolère,  possedère,  astè-
   stained, we provided, you hurt, they super-
   nère,  provvedère,  disvalère,  soprasse-
   seded. 4.—I will grieve, thou wilt seem, he will be 
   dolère,  parère,  potè-
   able, we will remain, you will know, they will hold. 
   ré,  rimanère,  sapère,  tenère.
III. 1.—I may entertain, thou mayest lose strength, he 
   trattenère,  invalère,  rav-
   may amend, we may displease, you may reside, they 
   vedère,  dispiacère,  risédère,  con-
   may contain. 2.—I might foresee, thou mightest please 
   tenère.  antivedère,  ripiace-
   again, he might see again, we might preside, you might 
   re,  rivedère,  presedère,  appara-
   belong, they might hate.—IV. 1.—I should grieve 
   tenère,  malvedère.
   again, thou wouldst come to know, he would attain, 
   re,  risapère,  attenère,
we would be sensible of, you would provide, they would
divedere, prosvedere, rav-

— V. — Know thou, let him seem, let us see,
vedere. sapere, parere, vedere,

please ye, let them be able.
piacere, potere.

**Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ëre (short).**

There are about four hundred verbs in ëre (short),
that are irregular; but, as their irregularity, generally,
depends on the letters which precede that termination,
they may be reduced to the following forty-one; viz.

**Verbs ending in**

ëre, preceded by a vowel; as, triëre,

bëre, " assorbere, to absorb. (Class 4th.*

ëre, preceded by

{ ë; “ cuócere, to cook.
{ ū; “ addócere, to allege.
{ r; “ vincere, to conquer.

{ ã; “ invádere, to invade.
{ ë; “ léderë, to laugh.
{ û; “ róderë, to gnaw.
{ ò; “ allóderë, to allude.
{ é; “ árëderë, to burn.

dëre, preceded by

{ en; “ accénderë, to kindle.
{ in; “ scínderë, to cut asunder.
{ on; “ rispondere, to answer.
{ ën; “ chiúdeère, to shut.
{ ië; “ chiéderë, to ask.
{ cë; “ concéderë, to grant.

{ i; “ dirigerë, to direct. (3d.)
{ g; “ léggerë, to read. (5th.)
{ l; “ vulgerë, to turn. (1st.)
{ n; “ giúngerë, to arrive. (2d.)

gëre, preceded by

{ dr; “ spárgerë, to spread.
{ ër; “ mérgerë, to dive.
{ br; “ pórgere, to offer. (2d.)
{ ug; “ distrógerë, to destroy. (4th.)

* For the convenience of learners, and the purpose of rendering more simple the
variation of these verbs, they have been arranged in classes. To facilitate refer-
ence, we here indicate the class in which they will be found.
ANALOGY.

\begin{align*}
gluère, & \quad \text{as, cóglière,} \quad \text{to gather.} \\
gnère, & \quad " \quad spégnere, \quad \text{to extinguish.} \\
guère, & \quad " \quad distinguere, \quad \text{to distinguish.} \\
lère, & \quad " \quad svélere, \quad \text{to root up.} \\
mère, \text{ preceded by } \{ i; \} & \quad " \quad esprémere, \quad \text{to express.} \\
mère, \text{ preceded by } \{ u; \} & \quad " \quad assumère, \quad \text{to assume.} \\
nère, & \quad " \quad pônerè, \quad \text{to put.} \\
rère, & \quad " \quad carrère, \quad \text{to run.} \\
tère, \text{ preceded by } \{ o; \} & \quad " \quad scuòterè, \quad \text{to shake.} \\
tère, \text{ preceded by } \{ u; \} & \quad " \quad discùiterè, \quad \text{to discuss.} \\
tère, \text{ preceded by } \{ t; \} & \quad " \quad rìdèrterè, \quad \text{to return.} \\
vère, \text{ preceded by } \{ o; \} & \quad " \quad scrìverè, \quad \text{to write.} \\
vère, \text{ preceded by } \{ i; \} & \quad " \quad muòvverè, \quad \text{to move.} \\
vère, \text{ preceded by } \{ l; \} & \quad " \quad vòlverè, \quad \text{to turn.} \\
\end{align*}

These verbs are chiefly irregular in the **perfect** of the **indicative**, which ends in *si* or *ssi*; and in the **past participle**, which ends in *so* or *sso*, in *to* or *tto*, or in *sto*. We shall, therefore, first classify them according to the termination of their **perfect** and **participle**, and then we shall vary one of each class, and such of the same class as may be otherwise irregular, and note, by way of exceptions, those verbs which depart in any respect from their paradigm.

[The letters *a*, *e*, *ae*, between parentheses, prefixed to the following verbs, denote the auxiliary with which they are varied: — (a), *avère*; (e), *ésère*; (ae), *avère* or *ésère*.]

**FIRST CLASS.**

\begin{tabular}{|l|l|l|l|}
\hline
Infinitive & Perfect. & Participle. & Infinitive & Perfect. & Participle. \\
\hline
\text{à -dere,} & (a) \text{inva-derè,} & \text{inva-si,} & \text{inva-so.} \\
\text{é -dere,} & (a) \text{lé-derè,} & \text{lé-si,} & \text{lé-so.} \\
\text{i -dere,} & (a) \text{rì-derè,} & \text{rì-si,} & \text{rì-so.} \\
\text{ó -dere,} & (a) \text{ró-derè,} & \text{ró-si,} & \text{ró-so.} \\
\text{ù -dere,} & (a) \text{allù-derè,} & \text{allù-si,} & \text{allù-so.} \\
\text{r -dere,} & (a) \text{ár-derè,} & \text{ár-si,} & \text{ár-so.} \\
\text{én -dere,} & (a) \text{accèn-derè,} & \text{accè-si,} & \text{accè-so.} \\
\text{íù -dere,} & (a) \text{chiù-derè,} & \text{chiù-si,} & \text{chiù-so.} \\
\text{ár -gere,} & (a) \text{spár-gerè,} & \text{spár-si,} & \text{spár-so.} \\
\text{ér -gere,} & (a) \text{mèr-gerè,} & \text{mèr-si,} & \text{mèr-so.} \\
\text{-rere,} & (a) \text{côr-rere,} & \text{côr-si,} & \text{côr-so.} \\
\text{r -lère,} & (a) \text{rivèr-tere,} & \text{rivèr-si,} & \text{rivèr-so.} \\
\hline
\end{tabular}
IRREGULAR VERBS.

SECOND CLASS.


-berë, 
    (ae) assôr-berë, assôr-si, assôr-to.
    (a) vin-berë, vin-si, vin-to.
    (a) tôr-berë, tôr-si, tôr-to.
    (a) völ-berë, völ-si, völ-to.
    (a) giûn-berë, giûn-si, giûn-to.
    (a) pôr-berë, pôr-si, pôr-to.
    (a) có-berë, có-si, có-to.
    (a) spén-berë, spén-si, spén-to.
    (a) distin-berë, distin-si, distin-to.
    (a) svél-berë, svél-si, svél-to.
    (a) assûn-berë, assûn-si, assûn-to.
    (a) völ-berë, völ-si, völ-to.

THIRD CLASS.

cé-berë, 
    (a) concé-berë, concé-si, concé-sso.
    (a) scïn-berë, scï-si, scï-sso.
    (a) esprï-berë, esprï-si, esprï-sso.
    (a) scuô-berë, scô-si, scô-sso.
    (a) discû-berë, discû-si, discû-sso.
    (a) connêt-berë, conné-si, conné-sso.
    (a) muô-berë, mó-si, mó-sso.

FOURTH CLASS.

g-berë, 
    (a) cuô-berë, cô-si, cô-to.
    (a) addû-berë, addû-si, addû-to.
    (a) diri-berë, diri-si, diri-to.
    (a) lég-berë, lég-si, lég-to.
    (a) distruûg-berë, distruû-si, distruû-to.
    (a) scriû-berë, scriû-si, scriû-to.
    (a) tràû-berë, tràû-si, tràû-to.

FIFTH CLASS.

ó-berë, 
    (a) rispôû-berë, rispôû-si, rispôû-sto.
    (a) chiûû-berë, chiûû-si, chiûû-sto.
    (a) pó-berë, pó-si, pó-sto.
ANALOGY.

Variation of the Verb Invádere.

(Paradigm of the First Class of the verbs in ēre (short).)

I. INFINITIVE.          PARTICIPLE.
Invá-nvēre,  |to invade.       |invá-so,     |invaded.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.          Plural.
3. — Perfect.

1st p. invá-st,  |I invoked;     |invadémmo,   |we invaded;
2d p. inváděstī, |thou invoked;  |inváděste,   |you invaded;
3d p. invá-še,  |he invoked;    |invá-sēro,   |they invaded.

The verbs evádere, 'to evade'; — lédere, 'to offend';
ridere, 'to laugh'; dividere, 'to divide'; conquí-
dere, 'to conquer'; intridere, 'to temper'; uccídere,
'to kill'; — ródere, 'to gnaw'; — allúdere, 'to allude';
delúdere, 'to delude'; illúdere, 'to illude'; — árdere,
'to burn'; mórderere, 'to bite'; — accéndere, 'to kin-
dle'; incéndere, 'to set on fire'; offéndere, 'to offend';
scéndere, 'to descend'; spéndere, 'to spend'; téndere,
'to stretch'; vilipéndere, 'to vilify'; — chiúdere, 'to
shut'; — spárgerere, 'to spread'; — mérgerere, 'to sink';
térgere, 'to wipe'; aspérgere, 'to sprinkle'; — córrere,
'to run'; — rívértere, 'to turn'; and their compounds,
have the same irregularities.

The compounds of córrère, — occórrere, 'to occur'; soccórrere, 'to
succeur'; in the future and the conditional are often contracted; and
make accorrà, 'it will occur'; soccorrébbe, 'he would succour.'

Difféndere, 'to defend'; pérdere, 'to lose'; and réndere, 'to ren-
der,' are both regular and irregular; and make in the perfect, diféndéti
or difésti, 'I defended'; and in the participle, diféndúto or diféso,
'defended'; &c.
IRRÉGULAR VERBS.

Féndere, 'to cleave'; is both regular and irregular; and makes, in the perfect, fendéi or fessi, 'I cleaved'; and in the participle, fendúto and fessó, 'cleaved.'

Préndere, 'to take'; and rádere, 'to shave'; are both regular and irregular in the perfect; but in the participle are irregular only, and make préso, 'taken'; and ráso, 'shaven.'

The verbs péndere, 'to hang'; spléndere, 'to glitter'; vándere, 'to sell'; stridere,* 'to shriek'; and their compounds, are regular, and are varied like téssere.}

Variation of the Verb Assórbere.

(Paradigm of the Second Class of the verbs in ére (short).)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPE.

Assórb-ERE, |to absorb. | assórb-to, | absorbed.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. assôr-st, | I absorbed; | assorbémo, | we absorbed;
2d p. assorbésti, thou absorbedst; | assorbéste, | you absorbed;
3d p. assôr-se, | he absorbed; | assôr-sero, | they absorbed.

Verbs ending in glître, gnère, and lère, besides the above, have also other irregularities, as will be seen by the following Paradigms:

* Alfonso Varano has written strísce, 'he shrieked'; and strísse, 'they shrieked.'
### ANALOGY.

**Cógliere.**

(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *gliere.*)

#### I. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cógliere, or to gather.</th>
<th>Cółto,</th>
<th>gathered.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[cóllre (cor)]</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### II. INDICATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — Present.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. cóglió, or I gather or am</td>
<td>cógliámó,</td>
<td>we gather;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[cóllgo, gathering;]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. cógliú, thou gatherest;</td>
<td>cógliéste,</td>
<td>you gather;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. cóglié, he gathers;</td>
<td>cógliéno, or cól-</td>
<td>they gather.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[gono,]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

|                          |                   |                |
| 3. — Perfect.            |                   |                |
| 1st p. cólši (co-I gathered; | cógliémmó, | we gathered;   |
|                          | [glié,]           |                |
| 2d p. cógliésti, thou gatheredst; | cógliéste, | you gathered; |
| 3d p. cólše (co- he gathered; | cólšero (coglié- | they gathered.|
|                          | [glié, cógliétte;] |                |
|                          | [gono, cógliétte- |                |
|                          | [ro],             |                |

|                          |                   |                |
| 4. — Future.             |                   |                |
| 1st p. cógliérdò, or corrò, | I shall or will gather.

#### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

|                          |                   |                |
| 1. — Present.            |                   |                |
| 1st p. io cógliá, that I gather or | cógliámó, | that we gather;|
|                           | [or cólga,]       |                |
| 2d p. tu cógliá, that thou gather; | cógliáte, | that you gather; |
|                           | [or cólga (cogli] |                |
| 3d p. égli cógliá, that he gather; | cógliáno, or cól- | that they gather-
|                           | [or cólga,]       |                |
|                           | [gano,]           |                |
IRREGULAR VERBS.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. coglieréi, or corréi (co- [glieria, or corria]), I should, would, or could gather; [or might gather.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular. | Plural.
---|---
1st p. . . . | cogliámo noi, let us gather;
2d p. cogli (có') | cogliéte vi, gather ye;
[tu,] |
3d p. coglia, or [c] | cogliano, or [c] | let them gather.
[ch] | [gano églio],

Spégnere.

(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in gnère.)

I. INFINITIVE. | PARTICIPLE.
---|---
Spégnere, or to extinguish. | spénto, extinguished.
[spéngere,]

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. spéngo, or I extinguish or spéngtamo, we extinguish;
[spéngo,] [am extinguishing-]
2d p. spégni, thou extinguish- | spéngéte, you extinguish;
[est;] |
3d p. spégne, he extinguishes; spéngono, or they extinguish.

[spéngono,]

3. — Perfect.

1st p. spénsi, I extinguished.
ANALOGY.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. io spégna, that I extinguish; spégntámo, that we extinguish;
[or spénga, or may extinguish;]
[guish;]

2d p. tu spégna, that thou extinguish; spégntáte, that you extinguish;
[or spénga, guish;]
[(spégna), guish;]

3d p. égo spégna, that he extinguishes; spégntano or spégntán, that they extinguish;
[or spénga, guish;]
[spénga, guish.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . spégntámo nóbí, let us extinguish;
2d p. spégna tu, extinguish thou; spégntáte vóbí, extinguish ye;
3d p. spégna, or let him extinguish; spégntáno, or spégntán, let them extinguish;
[spénga égo, guish;]
[spénga, guish;]

Svéllere.

(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in lère.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Svéllere, | to root up. | svéltó, rooted up.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. svéllo, or svéllo, I root up; svellámo, we root up;
2d p. svélí, thou rootest up; svelléte, you root up;
3d p. svélle, he roots up; svellénone, or svélle, they root up.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. svéliso, I rooted up.
### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

#### Singular.

| 1st p. to svélla, [or svélA] | svélliamo, | that I root up; or that we root up; |
| 2d p. tu svélla, or [svélA(svélí), or svélghi] | svéllidte, | that thou root up; that you root up; |
| 3d p. égí svélla, [or svélA] | svéllano, or svél-[gano], | that he root up; that they root up. |

#### Plural.

| 1st p. . . . . | svélliamo noi, | let us root up; |
| 2d p. svéli tu, | svéllête voi, | root ye up; |
| 3d p. svélía, or [svélA égit], | svéllano, or svél-[gano égíno], | let them root up. |

### V. IMPERATIVE.

| 1st p. . . . . | svélliamo noi, | let us root up; |
| 2d p. svéli tu, | svéllête voi, | root ye up; |
| 3d p. svélía, or [svélA égit], | svéllano, or svél-[gano égíno], | let them root up. |

The compounds of assórbere, ‘to absorb”; cògliere, ‘to gather”; and the verbs vincere, ‘to conquer”; tórcere, ‘to twist”; vólgere, ‘to turn”; rifílgere, ‘to shine”; giángere, ‘to arrive”; múngere, ‘to milk”; púngere, ‘to prick”; úngere, ‘to anoint”; piángere, ‘to weep”; frángere, ‘to break”; cingere, ‘to gird”; fingere, ‘to fast”; pingere, ‘to paint”; spingere, ‘to push”; tingere, ‘to tinge”; pórgere, ‘to offer”; accórgere, ‘to perceive”; sógere, ‘to rise”; scéglíere, ‘to choose”; scióglier, ‘to untie”; tóglier, ‘to take away”; distinguere, ‘to distinguish”; estínguer, ‘to extinguish”; avéllere, ‘to pull by force”; divéllere, ‘to pluck up”; assumere, ‘to assume”; vólvere, ‘to turn”; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

**Rifílgere has no participle.**

Sógere has been by poets changed into súrgere, and so throughout its inflexions: — súrsi, ‘I rose’; súrto, ‘risen’; &c.

Stringere, ‘to bind”; and its compounds, as astringere, ‘to constrain”; &c., in the participle makes strétto, ‘bound’; astrétto, ‘constrained’; &c.

Invólvere, ‘to involve’; and devólvere, ‘to devolve’; in the participle make involúto, ‘involved’; devolúto, ‘devolved.’

Presumére, ‘to presume’; and riassúmere, ‘to re-assume’; absólvere, ‘to absolve’; dissólvere, ‘to dissolve’; and risólvere, ‘to resolve’; in the perfect are both regular and irregular; and make presuméi or presúinsi, ‘I presumed’; assolvéi or assólsì, ‘I absolved’; &c.

Assólvere, dissólvere, and risólvere in the participle make, assolúto, ‘absolved’; dissolúto, ‘dissolved’; risolúto, ‘resolved.’

The verb sólvère, ‘to untie,’ ‘to solve,’ is regular, and is varied like téssere.

**Variation of the Verb Concédere.**

(Paradigm of the Third Class of the verbs in ère (short.).)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Concé-DERE, | to grant. | concé-sso, | granted.

II. INDICATIVE. Plural.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. concé-ssi, | I granted; | concedémmo, | we granted;
2d p. concedésti, thou grantedst; | concedéstè, | you granted;
3d p. concé-ssè, he granted; | concedéssero, | they granted.

The verbs scindere, ‘to cut asunder’; — esprimere, ‘to express’; — scuótère, ‘to shake’; percuótère, ‘to

* For this participle we, generally, substitute discíllo, a corresponding form of the verb discílgière, ‘to dissolve’; to distinguish it from the word dissolúto, ‘dissolate.’
IRREGULAR VERBS.

strike'; — discútere, 'to discuss'; concútere, 'to shake';
— connéttére, 'to connect'; — muóvere, 'to move';
and their compounds have the same irregularities.

Rédimere, 'to redeem'; in the perfect makes redénsi, 'I redeemed';
and in the participle, redénsi, 'redeemed'.

Méttére, 'to put'; and its compounds amméttere, 'to admit'; com-
méttere, 'to commit'; &c., in the perfect make misi, 'I put'; ammi-
si, 'I admitted'; &c.

Concédere, 'to grant'; intercédere, 'to intercede'; précédere, 'to
precede'; and succédere, 'to succeed,' are both regular and irregular,
and make, in the perfect, concéssii or conceilléi, 'I granted'; and in the
participle, concéssus or concedétsi, 'granted'; &c.

Connéttére, signifying 'to reason,' is regular, and makes, in the
perfect, connéttéi, 'I reasoned'; and in the participle, connéttétsi,
'reasoned.'

The verbs cédere, 'to yield'; accédere, 'to accede';
eccéderi, 'to exceed'; procédere,* 'to proceed'; —
prevéndere, 'to prescind'; — prémere, 'to press';
sprémeri, 'to squeeze'; — rifléttére, 'to reflect'; and
butéri, 'to beat'; and its compounds, are regular, and
are varied like tésseere.

Rifléttére, when applied to 'light,' 'sound,' &c., in the participle
makes rifléssus, 'reflected.'

Variation of the Verb Cuócere.

(Paradigm of the Fourth Class of the verbs ending in
ère (short).)

I. INFINITIVE. PArtICIPLE.

Cuób-cere, || to cook. || Cb-tts, || cooked.

* Of this verb, Castilione has used procéssus, 'he proceeded.'
ANALOGY.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.
1st p. có-sstí, I cooked;
2d p. cocéstí, thou cookedst;
3d p. có-ssté, he cooked;

| cóctamno, | we cooked;
| cóctste, | you cooked;
| cóctse, | they cooked.

Adducere.

(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in úcere.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Addúcere, or to allege. || addótto, alleged.
[addúbre,]

II. INDICATIVE.

3. — Perfect.
1st p. addússi, I alleged.

4. — Future.
1st p. addúrro [by contraction for addúceró], I shall or will allege.
[for addúceró],

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.
1st p. addúrrést (addúrría) [by contraction for addúcerést (ad-
[ducería)],

I should, would, or could allege; or [might allege.

Rilúcere, 'to shine'; and traslúcere, 'to shine through'; are never contracted in the infinitive, and make, in the future, rilúcerát, 'it will shine'; traslúcerát, 'it will shine through'; and in the conditional, rilúcerébbé, 'it would shine'; &c.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Distruggere.

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPE.

Distruggere, or to destroy. distrutto, destroyed.
[distrúre,]

II. INDICATIVE.

3. — Perfect.
1st p. distuggerò, I destroyed.
4. — Future.
1st p. distreggerò, or distruggerò, I shall or will destroy.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.
1st p. distruggeréi, or distrurre. [réi (distruggería or distrurria),]
I should, would, or could destroy; [or might destroy.

Struggere, 'to melt'; is never contracted in the infinitive, and makes, in the future, only struggerò, 'I will melt'; and in the conditional, struggérei, 'I should melt.'

Tráere.*

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPE.

Tráere, or trár- to draw. tratto, drawn.
[re,]

* From the Latin tráere, converted also by the Italians into trággere, now become obsolete, but of which it retains many of the forms.
ANALOGY.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. trággo, I draw; | trávamo, or trac- we draw;
2d p. trái, thou drawest; | tráte, [giámo,
3d p. tráe (trág- you draw;
[ge],] trággono (trán- they draw.
[no],]

3. — Perfect.

1st p. trássi, | I drew.

4. — Future.

1st p. trarrò [by contraction for | I shall or will draw.
[traerò],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. to trágga, that I draw or | trávamo, or trac- that we draw;
[may draw; | [giámo,
2d p. tu trágga, that thou draw; | trásâte or trac- that you draw;
3d p. égli tráe- that he draw; | trággano, that they draw.
[ga,

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. trarrèi (trarría) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could draw; or
[tion for traerèi (traería)], [might draw.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . | trávamo or trac- let us draw;
2d p. trái tu, draw thou; | [giámo,
3d p. trágga, let him draw; | tráte, draw ye;
[égli,] trággano, let them draw.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

The compounds of cuócere, 'to cook'; tràere, 'to draw'; and the verbs indúcere, 'to induce'; condúcere, 'to conduct'; dedúcere, 'to deduct'; producere, 'to produce'; ridúcere, 'to reduce'; sedúcere, 'to seduce'; tradúcere, 'to translate'; — dirigere, 'to direct'; erígere, 'to erect'; negligere, 'to neglect'; prediligere, 'to have a predilection for'; — leggere, 'to read'; réggere, 'to support'; protéggere, 'to protect'; — striggere, 'to melt'; — scrivere, 'to write'; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

Figgere,† 'to fix'; insfiggere, 'to infix'; trasfiggere, 'to transfix'; in the participle end both in sso and tto; and make fissio or fitto, 'fixed'; insistio or institto, 'infixed'; &c. — Afiggere, 'to affix'; crocifiggere, 'to crucify'; prefiggere, 'to prefix'; end in sso; and make affissio, 'affixed'; crocifisso, 'crucified'; &c. — Configgere, 'to thrust into'; sconfiggere, 'to defeat'; friggere, 'to fry'; soffiggere, 'to fry'; affiggere, 'to afflict'; infiggere, 'to inflict'; end in tto; and make confitto, 'thrust into'; fitto, 'fried'; institto, 'inflicted'; &c.

Rilúcere, 'to shine'; tralúcere, 'to shine through'; are both regular and irregular, and make rilucéi or rilussi, 'I shone'; tralucé or tralusse, 'it shone through'; but they have no participle.

Esigere, 'to exact'; in the perfect is both regular and irregular, and makes esigéi or esassi, 'I exacted'; and in the participle makes esátto, 'exacte.'

Vivere, 'to live'; in the participle makes vivúto or vissúto, 'lived'; and in the future and conditional, is often contracted into vivrò, 'I will live'; and vivréi (vivría), 'I would live.'

* Erígere is often by poets contracted into ergere, but then has no participle. The érto mentioned by Mastrofini, notwithstanding its derivation from eréstio, participle of erígere, is used in Italian as an adjective, but not as a participle.

† Figgere, and some of its compounds, as affiggere, &c., are sometimes spelt with one g only: — figere, affigere; and then make, in the perfect, fissi, affisi; and in the participle, fissio, affissio; &c.
ANALOGY.

Variation of the Verb Rispóndere.

(Paradigm of the Fifth Class of the verbs in -ere (short).)

1. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Rispóndere, | to answer. || rispó-sto, | answered.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. rispó-sti, | I answered; || rispondémmo, | we answered;
2d p. rispondésti, thou answeredst; rispondéste, you answered;
3d p. rispó-sto, he answered; || rispó-stero, they answered.

Chiédere.

1. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Chiédere, | to ask. || chiésto, | asked.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. chiédo | I ask or am asking; || chiédiamo(chieg-ing); chiédiamo(chieg-ing); we ask;
[(chiéggio),] [giámo, chiéde-]
2d p. chiédí, thou asks; || chiédéte, you ask;
3d p. chiéde, he asks; || chiédono (chiég-[gono),

3. — Perfect.

1st p. chiési, | I asked.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular. | Plural.
---|---
1st p. io chiédà| that I ask, or chiediamo(chieg-)
[(chiéggia, | that we ask;
[chiéggia), | [giámo),
2d p. tu chiédà| that thou ask;
[(chiéggia, | chiedete (chieg-
[chiéggia, | [gidte),
3d p. égli chiédà| that he ask;
[(chiéggia, | chiédano (chieg-
[chiéggia), | [giano, chieg-

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . | . . . | chiediamo nóbí, | let us ask;
2d p. chiédi tu, | ask thou; | chiedete vói, | ask ye;
3d p. chiédà| let him ask; | chiédano (chieg-
[(chiéggia) égli, | | [gano) égliño, | let them ask.

Pónere.

I. INFINITIVE. | PARTICIPLE.
---|---
Pónere, or póner,| to put. | pósto, | put.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. póngo | I put; | póniamo, | we put;
[(póno),
2d p. póni, | thou puttest; | ponéte, | you, put;
3d p. póne, | he puts; | póngono, | they put.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. pósi, | I put.

4. — Future.

1st p. pórrò [by contraction for | I shall or will put.
[pónerò],

25
ANALOGY.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

**Singular.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p. <strong>to póna</strong></th>
<th>that I put;</th>
<th>poniámo,</th>
<th>that we put;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2d p. tu <strong>póna</strong></td>
<td>that thou put;</td>
<td>poniáte,</td>
<td>that you put;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>(pógni)</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. égl <strong>póna</strong></td>
<td>that he put;</td>
<td>póngano,</td>
<td>that they put.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>(pógna)</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Plural.**

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. **porréi** (porría) by contraction for **poneréi** (ponería), I should, would, or could put; or [might put.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . . | . . . . . | poniámo nós, | let us put; |
| 2d p. póni tu, | put thou; | ponete vós, | put ye; |
| 3d p. póna égli, | let him put; | póngano égli, | let them put. |

The verbs **corrispónedere**, 'to correspond'; **ascéndere**, 'to conceal'; **nasçóndere**, 'to hide'; — **richiéderé**, 'to request'; — and all the compounds of **pónere**, 'to put'; have the same irregularities.

**Ascéndere** and **nasçóndere**, in the participle, end also in **so**, making ascóso, 'concealed'; and nascóso, 'hidden'.

**Fóndere**, 'to melt,' and its compounds **confóndere**, 'to confound'; &c. in the **perfect** make fós, 'I melted'; confós, 'I confounded'; &c.; and in the **participle**, fós, 'melted'; confós, 'confounded'; &c.

**Fóndere** is also regular, making also, in the **perfect**, fondéi, and in participle, fonduto.

**Tóndere**, *'to shear'; and scérnere, 'to distinguish';† discérrnere, 'to discern'; concérrnere, 'to concern'; are regular, and varied like tèssere.

* The participle tóso, erroneously attributed to tóndere, is a contraction of teóso, participle of the verb teódre, 'to shear.'

† Mansoni has written scérse, 'she distinguished;' and scérsero, 'they distinguished.'
Variation of other Irregular Verbs in ēre (short), not included in any of the preceding classes.

To the above five classes of verbs in ēre (short) must be added the verbs,

\begin{align*}
\text{conōscere,} & \quad \text{to know;} & \quad \text{nāscere,} & \quad \text{to be born;} \\
\text{crēscere,} & \quad \text{to grow;} & \quad \text{rōmpere,} & \quad \text{to break;} \\
\text{nuōcere,} & \quad \text{to hurt;} & \\
\end{align*}

which, in the perfect, end in bbi, cqui, ppi; and in the participle, in āto, to, tto: thus,

\begin{align*}
\text{Infinitive.} & \quad \text{Perfect.} & \quad \text{Participle.} \\
\text{conōscere,} & \quad \text{conō-bbi,} & \quad \text{conosci-ūto;} \\
\text{crēscere,} & \quad \text{crē-bbi,} & \quad \text{cresci-ūto;} \\
\text{nuōcere,} & \quad \text{nō-cqui,} & \quad \text{noci-ūto;} \\
\text{nāscere,} & \quad \text{nā-cqui,} & \quad \text{nā-to;} \\
\text{rōmpere,} & \quad \text{rū-ppi,} & \quad \text{rō-tto.} \\
\end{align*}

Conōscere.

(Varied with avēre.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

\begin{align*}
\text{Conōscere,} & \quad \text{to know.} & \quad \text{conosci-ūto,} & \quad \text{known.} \\
\end{align*}

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.

\begin{align*}
\text{1st p. conō-bbi} & \quad \text{I knew;} & \quad \text{conoscēmmo,} & \quad \text{we knew;} \\
\text{[(conoscēi),} & \quad & \quad & \quad \text{we knew;} \\
\text{2d p. conosciēsti,} & \quad \text{thou knewest;} & \quad \text{conosciēste,} & \quad \text{you knew;} \\
\text{3d p. conō-bbe} & \quad \text{he knew;} & \quad \text{conō-bberē,} & \quad \text{they knew;} & \quad \text{[(conoscē),} \\
\end{align*}
ANALOGY.

The compounds of conóscre, — and the verb créscre, 'to grow,' and its compounds, — have the same irregularities.

Nuócre.

(Varied with avère.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPIE.

Nuócre, | to hurt. || noci-úto, | hurt.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. nó-cúr, | I hurt; | nócémno, | we hurt;
2d p. nócésiti, | thou hurtest; | nócète, | you hurt;
3d p. nó-cúre, | he hurt; | nó-cúre, | they hurt.

Rínúócre, 'to hurt again,' — and the ver. náscre, 'to be born'; and its compound rináscre, 'to be born again,' — in the perfect, have the same irregularities.

Náscre, and its compound rináscre, in the participle make ná-to, 'been born'; riná-to, 'been born again.'

The verb páscre, 'to feed,' although it has the same termination as conóscre, créscre, náscre, is regular. The verb méscre, signifying 'to pour,' is regular, but signifying 'to mix,' in the participle, is irregular, and makes místo, 'mixed.'

Rómpere.

(Varied with avère.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPIE.

Rómpere, | to break. || ró-tto, | broken.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. róppi, (róppi, rómpéi), I broke; rómpémmo, we broke;
2d p. rómpésti, thou brokest; rómpéste, you broke;
3d p. róppé, he broke; róppé, they broke.

[(róppi, rómpéi),]

The compounds of rómpere, as corrómpere, 'to corrupt'; dirómpere, 'to break'; &c., have the same irregularities.

Variation of the Verb Bévere.

Bévere, 'to drink,' is a regular verb; but, as it has been by poets so contracted as to give it the appearance of an irregular one, we will here give its variation.

Bévere.

(Varied with avére.)

I. INFINITIVE.

(Bévere) bére, | to drink.

GERUND. PARTICIPLE.

bérendo (béendo), drinking. bévato, | drunk.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. bévo (béo), I drink; beviámo, we drink;
2d p. bévi (bét), thou drinkest; bevéte (béte), you drink;
3d p. béve (bét), he drinks; bévono (béno), they drink.

25°
### ANALOGY.

#### 2. — Imperfect.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>¿bevēva or bevēa,</td>
<td>thou drank;</td>
<td>he drank;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I drank;</td>
<td>¿bevémo,</td>
<td>we drank;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bevētti, bēvvi</td>
<td>bevēste,</td>
<td>you drank;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(bēbbi),</td>
<td>bevēnero or be-</td>
<td>they drank.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[bētero, bēv-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[yro (bēbbe-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[rō, bēvvono),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 3. — Perfect.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>¿bevēi or bevē</td>
<td>thou drankest;</td>
<td>he drank;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I drank;</td>
<td>¿bevémo,</td>
<td>we drank;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bevētti, bēvvi</td>
<td>bevēste,</td>
<td>you drank;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(bēbbi),</td>
<td>bevēnero or be-</td>
<td>they drank.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[bētero, bēv-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[yro (bēbbe-</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[rō, bēvvono),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 4. — Future.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>¿beerē</td>
<td>thou wilt drink;</td>
<td>he will drink;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I shall or will</td>
<td>¿beerēmo,</td>
<td>we will drink;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bevē,</td>
<td>bevēste,</td>
<td>you will drink;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[bērā,</td>
<td>[(berē; bēa,bēi),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[berē,</td>
<td>[(bēra),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(rāno),</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### III. CONJUNCTIVE.

#### 1. — Present.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>¿bēva</td>
<td>thou drink;</td>
<td>he drink;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>that I drink or</td>
<td>may drink</td>
<td>that he drink;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>¿bēvamo,</td>
<td>beviate,</td>
<td>bēvano (bēano),</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>that we drink;</td>
<td>that you drink;</td>
<td>that they drink.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(bēa),</td>
<td>[(bēvi;bēa,bēi),</td>
<td>[(bēa),</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### 2. — Imperfect.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2d p.</th>
<th>3d p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>¿bevēssi</td>
<td>thou drinkest;</td>
<td>he drinks;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>if I drink;</td>
<td>¿bevēsto (beestē),</td>
<td>if they drink.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>¿bevēssimo (beesmo),</td>
<td>if we drink;</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[(beēssi),</td>
<td>[(beēsti),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[(beēsser),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>[sero, beēssono),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
IRREGULAR VERBS.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. (beveré) I should, would, (beverémmo) we would drink;
   [(beveria)] beré] or could drink; [bérema,
   [(bería),] or might drink; [réma,

2d p. (beveréste) thou wouldst (beveréste) you would drink;
   [berést], thou wouldst drink; [ste,

3d p. (beverébbe) he would drink; (beverébbhe) they would drink.
   [(beveria)] be-
   [róbbe (bería),

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . beviámno nós, let us drink;
2d p. bévi (béi) drink thou; bevéte (beéte) vói, drink ye;
   [tu,]
3d p. béva (béa) let him drink; bévano (béano), let them drink.
   [égha,]

The compounds of bévere, as imbévere, 'to imbibe'; ribévere, 'to drink again'; have the same irregularities.

REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS.

All verbs ending in úcere, as addúcere, 'to allege'; inducere, 'to induce'; &c. in the participle, besides changing cére into tte, change also the u into o; and make addótto, 'alleged'; indótto, 'induced'; &c.

Rilúcere, 'to shine'; and tralúcere, 'to shine through'; have no participle.

Verbs ending in glière, as cógliere, 'to gather'; tógliere, 'to take away'; &c., in the perfect and participle retain the l of their termination; and make cólisi,
'I gathered'; cóllo, 'gathered'; tólsi, 'I took away'; &c.

All verbs ending in ndère, as accéndere, 'to kindle'; scíndere, 'to cut asunder'; ríspondere, 'to answer'; &c., in the perfect and the participle lose the n; and make accési, 'I kindle'; accéso, 'kindled'; scíssi, 'I cut asunder'; &c.

Verbs ending in ngère may end also in gnère, and vice versa; thus, giúngere or giúgnere, 'to arrive'; spégner or spéngere, 'to extinguish'; &c. When they end in gnère, in the perfect and participle they retain the n of their termination; and make spénsi, 'I extinguished'; spénto, 'extinguished'; &c.

The transposition of the n in verbs in ngère ought not to be made except in those inflexions in which ng is followed by e or i; as, giúngo, 'I arrive;' giúgni, 'thou arrivest;' giúgne, 'he arrives;' giúgniámus, 'we arrive;' giúngete, 'you arrive;' giúngono, 'they arrive;' and vice versa in verbs in gnère, it ought not to be made but in those inflexions in which gn is followed by o or a; as, spéngo, 'I extinguish;' spégni, 'thou extinguishest;' &c., spéngoa, 'that I extinguish;' &c.

Verbs ending in ígere and ímere, as dirigere, 'to direct'; esprimere, 'to express'; &c., in the perfect and participle change the i into e; and make diréssi, 'I directed;' dirésto, 'directed;' espréssi, 'I expelled;' expréssus, 'expressed;' &c.

The verb redímere, 'to redeem;' and verbs ending in úmere, as assúmere, 'to assume;' &c., in the perfect and participle, change the m of their termination into n, and make redénsi, 'I redeemed;' assúnsi, 'I assumed;' assúnto, 'assumed;' &c.

The verbs tráere, 'to draw;' pónere, 'to put;' and their compounds; and all verbs ending in glière, úcere, úgge; as cógliere, 'to gather;' addúcere, 'to allege;' distrúggere, 'to destroy;' are, in the infinitive contracted into trárre, pórre, córre, addúrre, distrúrre;
and make, in the future,—trarrot, ‘I will draw’; porrot, ‘I will put’; &c., and in the conditional,—trarroti, ‘I would draw’; &c.

Rilucere, ‘to shine’; tratulucere, ‘to shine through’; and struggere, ‘to melt’; are never contracted in any of the above inflexions.

All verbs ending in òre (short), preceded by the diphthong uó (accented), as cuóere, ‘to cook’; scvótere, ‘to shake’; muóvere, ‘to move’; nuóceré, ‘to hurt’; &c., in the perfect and participle,—and in all the inflexions in which the diphthong loses the accent, drop the u; and make, cóssi, ‘I cooked’; cótto, ‘cooked’; scóssi, ‘I shook’; &c.—cociamo, ‘we cook’; scotete, ‘you shake’; moverot, ‘I will move’; nocerébbe, ‘it would hurt’; &c.

Examples.

Ad ambidûe questi fini ha qui allùso parimenti il Signôre con un tal detto. (Segn. Mann. Nov. 16.)

Non istette guàri, che egli perdè la vista, e la parola. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 7.)

Quèsta voltà io divò, como si dice, — D’ essermi persa anch’ io la lisciatùra. (Buon. Fier. 2. 4.)

Tagliando il fendè quasi in- sino a dènti. (Bocc. Filoc. 1.)

Colui fèsse in grèmbo a Dio — Lo cuòr che in sul Tamigi anèbr si cóla. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Che, per l’ effètto de’ suoi mà pensièri, — Fidándomi di lui, io

To both these objects has the Lord here equally alluded with such words.

It was not long before he lost both his sight and speech.

This time I will say, as we are wont to say, that I have missed the object in view.

With a cut he clove him as far as the chin.

That one smote in the bosom of God the heart which is yet honored on the Thames.

That, through the effect of his evil thoughts, I, trusting in him,
was taken and afterward put to death, there is no need that I should tell.

Having taken the metal, I shaved it on both sides.

And that along with him one storm had swallowed up so many illustrious princes.

You will find the apothecary on the way, going to take the measure of the confections.

Never may a poet gather of it, nor Jupiter give it any privilege.

If it [the wine] tastes too dry or has a bad odor, let lighted torches be thrown into it, and be extinguished in it.

Let the grass always be pulled up around it.

That Christ appeared unto the two upon their way, new-risen from his vaulted grave.

He kept his purse close in honoring others.

From the fair nest of Leda rapt me forth, and waited me on into swiftest heaven.

Which is wrapt in turbid mists.

Clodius gave money to the judges and was acquitted.

This powerful aridor of mine elevates me from the earth, and carries my heart, where by its own power it is not permitted to ascend,
IRREGULAR VERBS.

A che, e côme concedétique
Amòre — Che conoscéste i dubbiósi desíri? (Dant. Inf. 5.)

Rédénto, da Redímere. (Crusc.)

M mísé dèntro àle sgrété obse. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Ne ànche ben capíscse l' illázione che fa Apéllé, del dovérsi
concédere quálche tume rifléssso
della térra. (Gal. Macch. sol. 168.)

Quándo Fétonte abbandonó li fréni,— Perché 'l ciél, côme páre
ancór, si cósse. (Dant. Inf. 17.)

Dáto che quéstà ragióne si
potéssé addúcere. (Borg. Rip. 30.)

Nói, sémpré che verrà propósí-
to, adducchini simili antiché e-
sémpl. (Dav. Stor. 3.)

E' suónó, che si fa nelle sélve
dai caccaiatóri, perché li câni
trággano al suónó. (But. Inf. 31.)

Via córta e spedísta.— Trar-
bébbe a fin quest' áspra péná, e
dura. (Petr. c. 18.)

Sóno físo in un lino, che non
trovà fóndo. (Vit. SS. Pad.)

Lo tráfítto il miró, ma nûlla
disse. (Dant. Inf. 25.)

Libero spírito od à subi mém-
brí appéssso. (Petr. s. 118.)

Tentó di trár dálía profoná
piága la conféttta saéttta. (Guar. Past. Fíd. 5, 7.)

E tánta grázia sôvra me rilú-
sse. (Dant. Par. 22.)

La lúce nélle ténebre rilú-
cétte. (Arr. Vang.)

By what and how did Love grant
that you should know your uncer-
tain wishes?

Redeemed, from to redeem.

He led me on into those seclud-
ed regions.

Neither can I understand the
inference which Apelles makes,
that some reflected light must be
granted to the earth.

When Phæton abandoned the
reins, whence heaven, as it yet
appears, was wrapt in flames.

Even could this reason be al-
leged.

Whenever it shall be conven-
ient, we will always allege similar
ancient examples.

It is a sound, which is made by
hunters in the woods, that the dogs
may come to that sound.

A short and expeditious way
would bring to an end this severe
and hard pain.

I am fixed in a marshy soil
which has no bottom.

The pierced spirit looked on
him, but did not speak.

Free spirit or still confined to
its limbs.

He tried to draw from the deep
wound the fixed arrow.

And so much grace shone over
me.

Light shone in the darkness.
ANALOGY.

Esatto, da Esigere. (Crusca.)

Che gli fussse oscurata la fama d'principij della sua milizia da un popolo vivuto in lunga pace. (Guicc. Stor. 5.)

Ma il ben vissuto vecchio s'insegnavi di mostrare la verità della cosa. (Firenz. Asin.)

Vivrò, com’ to son vissu.* (Petr. s. 118.)

Allora dimandò come si chiamava quell’ isola; fu risposto per li marinai, che per antico si chiamava Jerusalem. (Giov. Vill. 1. 4. c. 18.)

Ne può grazia negar che tu gli chiesia. (Alam. Colt. 1. 10.)

E se ne venne a ponerle oste a Fiesole. (Pecor. g. 11. n. 1.)

Per due fiammette, che vedemmo forre. (Dant. Inf. 8.)

Chi porrà ben la mente e l’intellietto. (Franc. Barb. 168.)

Lo duce ad io, per quel cammino ascoso; — Entrammo a ritornar nel chiudo mondo. (Dant. Inf. 34.)

La pietà dè duo cognati, — Che di tristizia tutto mi confuso. (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Tutte le campate che èrano in quello trováronsi quasi tutte fondate, come fossero colate nella fornace. (Matt. Vill. 3. 42.)

Il Saladino conobbe costui ottimamente essere saputo uscir del laccio, il quale davanti a' piedi teso gli avea. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Ben ti dèe ricordar, che non ti n'ocque. (Dant. Inf. 20.)

Exacted, from to exact.

That the fame of the beginning of his military life should be obscured by a people who had lived in long peace.

But the well-lived old man endeavoured to show the truth of the thing.

I shall live as I have lived.

Then he asked how that island was called; he was answered by the sailors, that anciently it was called Jerusalem.

Nor can he deny any favor that you may ask.

And came to encamp at Fiesole.

By two small flames, which we saw kindle.

He who will reflect well.

My guide and I entered by that hidden way to return to the bright world.

Pity for the kindred shades, whence grief wholly overcame me.

All the bells which were there, were found almost all melted as if they had been put in a furnace.

Saladia saw that he had known how to get out of the snare, which he had spread before his feet.

Thou oughtest to remember well, for it did thee good service.

* By contraction for vissuto.
He went to Pavia on account of a dissension sprung up among the people of Beccheria.

The citizens' blood, that now is mixed from Campi, and Certaldo, and Figgine, ran pure through the last mechanic's veins.

And eats, and drinks, and sleeps, and puts raiment on.

---

**EXERCISE XX.**

I. 1.—To gather. to allege. to destroy. to draw. to put. to take away. 7.—cloven. taken. shaven.

Cógliere. addúcere. distrúgere. tráere. fèndere. prénđere. rádere.

pómere. tógliere. accéndere. devólvere. stríngere. redimere. spégnere.

kindled. devolved. bound. redeemed. extinguished. cooked. answered. born. directed. lived. broken.

cuócere. rispóndere. náscere. dirigere. vivere. rómpere.

alleged.—II. 1.—I gather, thou extinguishest, he addsúcere. cógliere. spégnere. ri-

reduces, we ask, you draw, they take away. —

dúcere. chiéder. tráere. tógliere.

I absorb, thou choosest, he rises, we assume, you assóbrere. scégliere. sòrgere. assúmere. a-

compel, they root up. 3.—I offended, thou vilifiedst, stringere. stéllere.

lédere. vilipéndere, he ran, we bite, you sprinkled, they kindled.—

correre. mórdere. aspérger. accéndere.

I expelled, thou invadedst, he knew, we wiped, espéllere. inváder. conoscer. tergere.
you. shut, they descended. — I cut asunder, thou
chiüdere, scindere. con-
grantedst, he redeemed, we sheared, you chose, they
cédere, redímero, tóndere, scégliere, mél-
put. 4. — I will succour, thou wilt drink, it will occur,
tere. soccorrere, bèvere, occórrere,
we will shake, you will draw, they will destroy. —
squeótere, tráere, distruggere.
I will put, thou wilt move, he will turn, we will untie,
pónere, muóbere, volvere, sciógliere,
you will reflect, they will melt. — III. 1.— I may
distinguish, thou mayest milk, he may know, we may
tinguere, múngere, náscere, protég-
protect, you may cook, they may conquer. — I may
gere, cuócere, vincere. sci-
choose, thou mayest fry, he may request, we may
gliere, fríggere, richiédero, controp-
oppose, you may hurt, they may drink. — IV. 1.—
pónere, nuócere, bèvere.
I should drink again, thou wouldst break, he would
ribévere, frángere, rihu-
shine, we would live, you would produce, they would
cere, vivere, producere, cré-
grow. — V. — write thou, let him feign, let us answer,
scrívere, fingere, rispondere,
pour ye, let them feed.
máscere, páscke.
VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD
CONJUGATION.

The following are the simple irregular verbs of the
third conjugation; viz.

\[
dire, \quad \text{to say, or to tell;}
\]
\[
mortire, \quad \text{to die;}
\]
\[
salire, \quad \text{to ascend;}
\]
\[
seguiire, \quad \text{to follow;}
\]
\[
udire, \quad \text{to hear;}
\]
\[
uscire, \quad \text{to go out;}
\]
\[
venire, \quad \text{to come.}
\]

**Dire.**

(Varied with avère.)

I. INFINITIVE.

\[
\text{Dîre (dîcere),} \quad \text{to say.}
\]

**GERUND.**

\[
dîcendo, \quad \text{saying.}
\]

**PARTICIPLE.**

\[
dîtto (ditto), \quad \text{said.}
\]

II. INDICATIVE.

**Singular.**

1. — **Present.**

\[
\begin{align*}
1\text{st p. } & \text{dico, I say; } \\
2\text{d p. } & \text{dici or dîf', thou sayest; } \\
3\text{d p. } & \text{dice, he says; }
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{dîcâmo, } & \text{we say; } \\
\text{dîrî, } & \text{you say; } \\
\text{dîcono, } & \text{they say.}
\end{align*}
\]

2. — **Imperfect.**

1\text{st p. to dîcèva or dîcèa, I said.}

---

* This verb belongs, properly, to the second conjugation, it being but a contras-
tion of dîcere, now become obsolete, of which it retains many of the forms.
ANALOGY.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. dìssì</td>
<td>I said;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd p. dicèstì</td>
<td>thou saidest;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd p. dìssè</td>
<td>he said;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

4. — Future.

1st p. dìrò [by contraction for dicerò], I shall or will say.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. dìco dìca, | that I say or may say.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. dìcèssi, | if I said or should say.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. dìmerì (dirì) [by contraction for dicerèì (dicerìa)], I should, would, or could say; or [might say.]

V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th>2nd p.</th>
<th>3rd p.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>...</td>
<td>dìcì</td>
<td>dìcì</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dì fì tu,</td>
<td>dìcìmo nòì,</td>
<td>dì fì fì,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dìca ègì,</td>
<td>dìcìmo nòì,</td>
<td>dìcìmo ègì,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The compounds of dire, as ridire, ‘to say again’; contradire or contraddire, ‘to contradict’; interdire, ‘to forbid’; bendire, ‘to speak well of’; maldire, ‘to speak ill of’; have the same irregularities.

Benedire, ‘to bless,’ and maladire or male dire, ‘to curse,’ in the perfect, are both regular and irregular, and make benedì or benedìssi, ‘I blessed’; maledì or maledìssi, ‘I cursed.’
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Morire.
(Varied with essere.*

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

Morire, || morro, || to die. || dead.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. muóre, | I die; | mórío, | we die;
[muóio (móio).] [mórío (móio).]
2d p. muóri, | thou diest; | mórítte, | you die;
[muóro (mório).] [muóro (mório).]
3d p. muórte, | he dies; | mórítte, | they die.
[(muór).] [(muór).]

4. — Future.

1st p. morirò or morrò, | I shall or will die.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io muóra, | that I die, or | móriamo, | that we die;
[or muóia (móia).] [or móría (móia).]
2d p. tu muóra, | thou may die; | mórâte, | that you die;
[or muóia (móia).] [or móría, mório].
3d p. égli muó, | that he die; | muóranò, or | that they die.
[ra, or muóia] [muóianò, or muóianò] [(móra or móia),
[(móra or móia),]

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. moriréi or morréi (moririá) | I should, would, or could die; or
[or morrí,] [or mórí,] [mógri,]
[or morriá,] [or morriá,] [or morriá,]
[might die.

* Morire may be varied also with are; but then, as we have already observed (p. 919), it takes the nature of an active verb, and signifies 'to kill,' and not 'to die.' 26*
### ANALOGY.

#### V. IMPERATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td><em>moríamo nósí,</em>&lt;br&gt;die us;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. <em>muóri tu,</em>&lt;br&gt;die thou;</td>
<td><em>moríe vós,</em>&lt;br&gt;die ye;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. <em>muórás,</em>&lt;br&gt;or let him die;</td>
<td><em>muórás,</em>&lt;br&gt;or let them die.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>muória</em> (móra)&lt;br&gt;[or móia] égli,</td>
<td><em>muória</em> (móra)&lt;br&gt;[or móia] égli,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The compounds of *moríe*, as *premoríe*, 'to die before'; *&c.*, have the same irregularities.

---

### Salíre.

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.

#### I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

| Salíre (sagíre*), to ascend. || salité, | ascended. |

#### II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. salígo, or salíscio | saliómo, or sa-*we ascend. |
| 2d p. salí or sa-*thou ascendest; | salíte, | gliámo, | you ascend; |
| 3d p. salíce or sa-*he ascends; | salígono, or sa-*they ascend. |

---

* From this verb, now become obsolete, are derived many of the forms of the modern verb *salíre*.

† The forms *salíscio* and *sagíamo*, of the present of the indicative and of the imperatives; and *sagíamo* and *sagíaste*, of the present of the conjunctive mood, are to be preferred when *sali*, *saliómo*, *salíte*, might be confounded with *adli*, *saliómo*, and *salíste*, corresponding tenses of the verb *salíre*, 'to salt.'
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Singular.                                Plural.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. sali{(sálsi)}, I ascended;            salímmo, we ascended;
2d p. salisti, thou ascendedst; salíste, you ascended;
3d p. salit (sálse), he ascended;           salírono (sálse), they ascended.
     [sálfo],                                  [salíro, salír],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. to sálga, or that I ascend, or    salíamo, or sa-
     [saliscsa (ságia)], [may ascend;     [gliámo,]
     [gliámo],                                      [gíámo,]

2d p. tu sálga, or that thou ascend;     saliáte, or sa-
     [saliscsa (sálghi)], [you ascend;         [gíáte,]
     [gíáte,]

3d p. égli sálga, that he ascend;        sálgano, or sa-
     [or saliscsa]                                [líscano (sá-
     [líscano,]

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p.    . . .     . . . . .     salíamo, or sa-
             [gliámo nói,] [gíámo nói,]

2d p. salí, or sa- ascend thou;           salíte nói, ascend ye;
     [lísce tu,]                                [lísce tu,]

3d p. sálga, or let him ascend;          sálgano, or sa-
     [saliscsa égli,]                            [líscano égli,]
     [líscano égli,]

The compounds of salíre, as risalíre, ‘to reascend’; assalíre, ‘to assail’; &c., have the same irregularities.
ANALOGY.

Seguire.

(Varied with either avere or essere.)

I. INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Seguire,</th>
<th>to follow.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>seguito,</td>
<td>followed.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

II. INDICATIVE.

| 1st p. séguo, | we follow; |
| 2d p. ségui, | you follow; |
| 3d p. ségue, | they follow. |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

| 1st p. io ségua, that I follow; or séguiamo, that we follow; |
| 2d p. tu ségua, that thou follow; séguiate, that you follow; |
| 3d p. egli ségua, that he follow; séguano, or ségiuno, that they follow. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| 1st p. ... séguamo nobi, let us follow; |
| 2d p. ségui, follow thou; séguiete vobis, follow ye; |
| 3d p. ségua, let him follow; séguano, or ségui uno églin, let them follow. |

The compounds of séguire, as conseguire, 'to obtain'; inseguire, 'to pursue'; proseguire, 'to prosecute'; susseguire, 'to follow immediately after'; have the same irregularities.
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Udìre.

(Varied with avère.)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPLE.

\[ UdÌre \text{(odìre*), } | \text{to hear; } | udÌto, | \text{heard.} \]

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. ódo, | I hear; | udiámo, | we hear; |
| 2d p. ódi, | thou hearest; | udiète, | you hear; |
| 3d p. óde, | he hears; | ódono, | they hear. |

4. — Future.

1st p. udirô or udrô, | I shall or will hear.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. io óda, | that I hear or [may hear; | udiámo, | that we hear; |
| 2d p. tu óda | that thou hear; | udiète, | that you hear; |
| (ódi), | 3d p. égli óda, | that he hear; | ódano, | that they hear. |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. udiréi or udréi (udiriá or [udiriá), | I should, would, or could hear; | [or might hear. |

V. IMPERATIVE.

| 1st p. . . . . . . . . | . . . . . . | udiámo nóí, | let us hear; |
| 2d p. ódi tu, | hear thou; | udiète nóí, | hear ye; |
| 3d p. óda égli, | let him hear; | ódano égliño, | let them hear. |

* From this form, now obsolete, are derived ódo, ódi, &c., of udiré.
ANALOGY.

The compounds of *udire*, as *riudire*, 'to hear again'; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Esaudire*, 'to grant'; is regular, and varied like *esibire*.

---

**Uscire.**

(Varied with *essere.*)

I. INFINITIVE. PARTICIPE.

**Uscire (essere*”), to go out;|| *uscito,* ||gone out.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. *éscifice, I go out; *| *uscíamo,* |we go out; 2d p. *éscice, thou goest out; *| *uscíte,* |you go out; 3d p. *éscize, he goes out; *| *éscicono,* |they go out.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. *éscica, that I go out, or* | *uscíamo,* |that we go out; 2d p. *éscica, that thou go out; *| *uscíate,* |that you go out; 3d p. *églie, that he go out; *| *éscano,* |that they go out.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . | . . . | *uscíamo nói,* |let us go out; 2d p. *ésci tu,* go thou out; | *uscíte nói,* |go ye out; 3d p. *éscia égli,* let him go out; | *éscano églino,* |let them go out.

The compound of *uscire*, — *riuscire*, 'to succeed,' has the same irregularities.

* From this verb, now become *obsolete*, are derived the forms *éce, éce,* &c., of the verb *uscere.*
IRREGULAR VERBS.

Venire.

(Varied with esse.)

I. INFINITIVE.   PARTICIPE.

Venire, || to come. || VENUTO, ||come.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.    Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. VENGO [(véngo),] I come; || veniam o (vegna-) we come;
2d p. VIÉNI, thou comest; || venite, you come;
3d p. VIÉNE, he comes; || vengan o (véngo- they come.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. VÉNNI, I came; || venimmo, we came;
2d p. venist i, thou camest; || veniste, you came;
3d p. VÉNNI, he came; || vennero (veni- they came.

4. — Future.

1st p. verrò [by contraction for [venirò],] I shall or will come.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io VÉNGA [(vénga),] that I come or that we come;
2d p. tu VÉNGA [(végni),] may come; || veniàte (vegna-) that you come;
3d p. égà VÉNGA [(végni),] that he come; || vengan o (vé- they they come.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. verréi (verría) [by contraction for veniréi (veniría)], I should, would, or could come; || or might come.
ANALOGY.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1st p. . . . . veniámó nóbí, let us come;
2d p. viéni tu, come thou; venité vóbí, come ye;
3d p. vénga, let him come; véngano (vénga) églíó, let them come.
((vénga) églíó),

Venire is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns mi, ti, si, &c. and the particle ne; thus, me ne véngo, ‘I am coming thence’; te ne viéni, ‘thou art coming thence’; &c. — Me, te, &c., are then mere expletives.

The ‘compounds of venire, as convenire, ‘to agree’; divenire, ‘to become’; invenire, ‘to find’; prevenire, ‘to anticipate’; souvenire, ‘to assist’; &c. have the same irregularities.

Variation of the Verb Offerire.

Offerire, ‘to offer,’ is both regular and irregular; and it has, besides, been so contracted by poets, as to render it important to give here its variation.

Offerire.

(Varied with avére.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Offerire or offíre, | to offer.

GERUND. PARTICIPE.

offeréndo or offering. ||offeríto) offeré, offered.
[(offéndo),] [to,]
IRREGULAR VERBS.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.
1st p. offerisco or offro, | I offer.

2. — Imperfect.
1st p. io offeriva or offriva, or offería | I offered.
[or offria,]

Singular. Plural.

3. — Perfect.
1st p. offerii, offri, or offerí | I offered;
[or offerí,]
2d p. offeristi or offeristi or thou offeredst;
3d p. offerit, offrit, he offered;
[or offerit,]
[offert,]

offerimmo or offrimmo or offrimmo, we offered;
offeriste or offriste, you offered;
offeritro or offrìtro or offerítro, they offered.
[or offerítro,]
[or offerítro,]
[or offerítro,]
[or offrìtro,]
[or offerítro,]

4. — Future.
1st p. offeriro or offrirò, | I shall or will offer.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.
1st p. io offerisca, offrisca, or offerìa, | that I offer, or may offer.

2. — Imperfect.
1st p. io offerissi or offerissi, | if I offered, or should offer.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.
1st p. offerirei or offerírei (offeriría | I should, would, or could offer;
[or offeriría),] [or might offer.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. ...
2d p. offerisci or offri tu, | offer thou.
27
The verb *sufferere*; 'to suffer,' has the same irregularities.

*Confertire,* 'to confer'; *differtire,* 'to differ'; *infertire,* 'to infer'; *proferire,* 'to proffer'; *refertire,* 'to refer'; *trasferire,* 'to transfer'; are never contracted; and in the *perfect* and *participle* have the terminations in *i* and *ito* only; and make, *confertii,* 'I conferred'; *differti,* 'I differed'; *conferito,* 'conferred'; &c.*

**REMARKS ON OTHER VERBS IN iRE.**

The verbs *convertire,* 'to convert'; *sovertire,* 'to subvert'; are both *regular* and *irregular,* and in the *perfect* make *convertii* or *conver'si,* 'I converted'; *sovertii* or *souvre'si,* 'I subverted'; and in the *participle,* *convertito* or *conver'sso,* 'converted'; *sovertito* or *souvre'sso,* 'subverted.'

*Divertire,* 'to divert'; *pervertire,* 'to pervert'; have the terminations in *i* and *ito* only; and make *divertii,* 'I diverted'; *pervertii,* 'I perverted'; *divertito,* 'diverted'; *pervertito,* 'perverted.'

*Apparire* and *comparire,* 'to appear'; and their compounds, are both *regular* and *irregular,* and in the *perfect* make *apparii* or *appar'vi* (appar'si); *comparii* or *compara'vi* (compar'si), 'I appeared'; &c., and in the *participle,* *apparito* or *appar'so*; *comparito* com-

*Aprire,* 'to open'; *coprire,* 'to cover'; and their compounds, in the *perfect* are both *regular* and *irregular,* and make *aprii* or *apri'si,* 'I opened;' *coperii* or *coper'si,* 'I covered'; &c., but in the *participle* are *irregular* only; and make *aperto,* 'opened'; *coper'to,* 'covered'; &c.

*A few instances may be found among the classics in which riférsi, 'I referred,' and profersi, 'I proffered'; profetor, 'proffered;' have been used.*
IRREGULAR VERBS.

EXAMPLES.

A cui il frate disse: "Dillo sicuramente." (Bocc. g. l. n. 1.)

E muóiono in questa fólle speranza. (Gr. S. Gir. 2.)

Deesi intenderre, per lo pade re e per lo figliuolo, tutti colóro, che salgono, e iscendono per retta linea. (Maestruzz. 2. 28.)

Ond'io per lo tuo mé' penso, e discerno,—Che tu mi segui, ed io sarò tua guida. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

Fioren tinó—Mi sèmbri veramente quand'io t'ódo. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Quál èscè alcuna volta di galoppo—Lo cavalier di schiera, che cavàlchi. (Dant. Purg. 24.)

Avendo fatto fare un grandissimo fuoco in una sua canminata, in quella se ne venne. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2)

Dinanzi ògli occhi mi si fu offerto—Chi per lungo silénzio parèa òcò. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

Téli còse, proferite così in astratto, hànno qualche difficoltà all'esser comprese. (Gall. 228.)

Per lo qual è chi crèda—Più volle 'l mondo in Caos convérso. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Apparì una gran mortalità, ec. . . . . Stando costui nel principio del suo capitandó, apparve un caso, ec. . . . . (Franc. Sacch. n. 158.)

Gli accorgimenti e le copérette—Lo séppi tutte. (Dant. Inf. 27.)

To whom the friar said: "Say it frankly."

And die with this foolish expectation.

For father and son, must be understood, all those who ascend or descend in a direct line.

Wherefore I, pondering for thy profit, devise, that thou mayest follow me, and I will be thy guide.

Florentine thou seemest to me, in truth, when I hear thee.

As sometimes one knight pricks forth at a gallop from a troop of ranked chivalry.

Having caused a large fire to be made in one of her halls, there she came.

There presented itself to my sight, the form of one, whose voice seemed faint through long disuse of speech.

Such things, spoken so in abstract, are difficult to be comprehended.

Whereby, there are some who deem that the world has often been turned into chaos.

There came a great mortality, &c. . . . . He being yet in the beginning of hiscaptaincy, an accident there happened, &c.

I knew all subtleties, and covered ways.
EXERCISE XXI.

I. 1.—To say. 4.—contradict. 7.—blessed. come.

Dire. contradire. benedire. venire.
died. advised. offered. transferred.—II. 1.—I die, morire. avvertire. offerire. trasferire. mortire,

thou ascendest, he follows, we hear, you go out, saire, seguire, udire, uscire,

they come. 2.—I languished, thou saidst again, he venire. langueur, ridire, pre-

anticipated, we contradicted, you re-opened, they re-

venire. contradire, riaprire, rin-

covered their senses. 3.—I cursed, thou reascendedst, venire.

maledire, risalire,

he became, we suffered, you diverted, they referred.—
disenire, sofferire, divertire, riferire.

I appeared, thou finishest, he opened, we heard, you apparire, finire, aprire, sentire, con-

agreed, they covered. 4.—I will say, thou wilt arrive,

ventre, coprire. dire, pervenire,

he will die, we will differ, you will discover, they will

morire, differire, scoprire, as-

assail. —III. 1.—I may die before, thou mayest obtain,
saire. premortire, conseguire,

he may hear again, we may convert, you may find,

riudire, convertire, invenire,

they may succeed. 2.—I might say, thou mightest contra-

riuscire.
dire, con-

dict, he might bless, we might forbid, you might say again,

tradire, benedire, interdire, ridire,

they might curse. —IV. 1.—I would assist, thou wouldst

maledire.

souvenire, sof-
suffer, he would forbid, we would re-assail, you would come

ferire, interdire, riassalire, riven-

again, they would hear one thing for another. —V. — con-

re, traudire,
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

tinue thou, let him grant, let us prevent, proffer ye, let
seguire, esaudire, preventire, proferire, subvert.

[For a Table of Irregular Verbs, see Appendix.]

CHAPTER XI.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Defective verbs ending in ëre (long):

Calère, to care for; pavère, to fear;
colère or colère, to adore; silère, to be, or keep,
lecère & licèrë, or lécere to be lawful; solère, to be wont;
& licere, stupère, to be astonished.

Defective verbs ending in ëre (short):

Allgere, to be chill; ridère, to return;
dangere, to afflict; sérpere, to creep;
arrigere, to add; soffòlicere or
càpere, to contain; soffòlgere,
chévere, to ask; tangere,
convellere, to convulse; tòllere,
sèdère, to wound; tòrpere,
lícere, to shine; urgere,
mólcerë, to assuage; vigere,
to support;
to touch;
to take away;
to be bènumbed;
to urge;
to be vigorous.

Defective verbs ending in ïre:

Pire, to go; olière, to smell.

gire,
VARIATION OF DEFECTIVE VERBS.

[These verbs are used only in the tenses and persons, which are here given.]

**Calère.**

1. **Present.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3d p. cálé or cál, he cares for.</td>
<td>: : : :</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. **Past.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>GERUND</th>
<th>PARTICIPLE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>caléndo, caring for.</td>
<td>calúto, cared for.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**II. INDICATIVE.**

1. **Present.**

| 3d p. cálé or cál, he cares for. |
| : : : : |

2. **Imperfect.**

| 3d p. caléva or caléa, he cared for. |
| : : : : |

3. **Perfect.**

| 3d p. cálsi, he cared for. |
| : : : : |

**III. CONJUNCTIVE.**

1. **Present.**

| 3d p. cáglia, that he care for, or may care for. |
| : : : : |

4. **Imperfect.**

| 3d p. calésse, if he cared for, or should care for. |
| : : : : |
DESTRUCTIVE VERBS.

Singular.  Plural.

V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. cáglıa égli,* | let him care for.  |  

Calërè is generally used with the conjunctive pro-
nouns mi, ti, ci, vi, gli; thus, mi calérè, 'I care for'; ci
calérva, 'we cared for'; &c.

Colërè or cólerè.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Colërè or cólerè), | to adore.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. (cólo),  I adore;  
3d p. (cóle),  he adores.

Lécërè & licërè, or lécere & licere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Lécërè & licërè, or | to be lawful.  | être lécito or | to be lawful.
[lécerè & licere),  |  | licito,†

* As it has been questioned whether calërè is used in the imperative, we cite from
the classics the following examples to prove that it is so used:

"Non ve ne ca'agliâ no, to so ben to cîd
che mi fo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)"  Do not trouble yourselves about it, I
know very well what I am doing.

"Del cóme non ti ca'agliâ, il perché ti
dirò. (Bocc. Filoc. 6.)"  Do not trouble thyself about the how,
I will tell thee the why.

"Or se frattânto — Son le nostre castella
opressa, e sèrve — Non ce ne ca'agliâ.
(Tass. Ger. 6. 11.)"  Now if, in the mean time, our castles
are oppressed and conquered, let us not
care about it.

† From this form are derived é lécito, 'it is lawful'; èra or fu lécito, 'it was law-
ful'; sare lécito, 'it will be lawful'; &c., which are used to supply the tenses in
which lécërè is defective.
ANALOGY.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.                                           Plural.

1. — Present.

3d p. léço or tâce, it is lawful. || :: :: :: || :: :: ::

Pavére.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Pavére), to fear.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

3d p. (pâve), he fears. || :: :: :: || :: :: ::

Silére.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Silére), to be, or keep, silent.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

2d p. (sili), thou art, or keep- || :: :: :: || :: :: ::

[est, silent;]

3d p. (sîle), he is, or keeps, || :: :: :: || :: :: ::

[silent;]
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Solére.

I. INFINITIVE.

Solére, | to be wont. | essere sólite, | to be wont.

GERUND.

soléndo, | being wont.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. | Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. sóglia, | I am wont; | sogliamo (sóle- | we are wont; | mo),
2d p. suóli, | thou art wont; | soléte, | you are wont; | [le],
3d. p. suóle (só- | he is wont; | sogliono, | they are wont.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io soléva or soléa, | I was wont.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io soglia, | that I am wont, or may be wont.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io soléssi, | if I were wont, or should be wont.

Stupére.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Stupére), | to be astonished.

* From this form are derived sono sólite, 'I am wont'; éri sólite, 'thou wast wont'; &c., which are often used instead of soglia; solevi; &c.
ANALOGY.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.  

1. — Present.

3d. p. (stúpe), | he is astonished. ||: : : : : 

——

Álgere.

1. INFINITIVE.

(Álgere), | to be chill.

II. INDICATIVE.

3. — Perfect.

1st. p. (álsí), | I was chill; || (álgesmno), | we were chill;
2d. p. (algéstí), | thou wast chill; || (álgeste), | you were chill;
3d. p. (álse), | he was chill; || (álsero), | they were chill.

——

Ángere.

1. INFINITIVE.

(Ángere), | to afflict.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

3d. p. (ángé), | it afflicts. ||: : : : : 

2. — Imperfect.

3d. p. (ángéva), | it afflicted. ||: : : : :
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Arrógere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Arrógere, to add.

GERUND. PARTICIPLE.

arrogéndo, adding. ARROTO, or ARROSO, added.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. · · · · · · | · · · · · · | arrogúamo, | we add;
3d p. arrogé, he adds; | | arrogóno, | they add.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. to arrogéva or arrogéa, I added.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. ARROSI, I added; | arrogémmo, | we added;
2d p. arrogésti, thou addest; | arrogéste, | you added;
3d p. ARROSE, he added; | ARROSERO, | they added.

Cápere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Cápere), to contain.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

3d p. (cápe), it contains. | · · · · · · |

2. — Imperfect.

3d p. (cápéva), it contained. | · · · · · · |
ANALOGY.

Chérere.

I. INFINITIVE.
(Chérere), | to ask.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. (chéro), I ask ; he asks.

3d p. (chére), he asks.

Convellere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Convellere, | to convulse.

GERUND. PARTICIPLE.

convellendo, convulsing. convulso, convulsed.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

3d p. convéllle, he convulses ; convélleono, they convulse.

2. — Imperfect.

3d p. convelléla, he convulsed ; convellélan or convelléano, they convulsed.

[or convelléa, convelléano,]

4. — Future.

3d p. convelléra, he shall or will convelleráno, they shall or will convulse.

[convulse;] [convulse.]
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singuler.

2. — Imperfect.

3d p. convellésse, if he convulsed, convelléssero, if they convulsed;

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

3d p. convellebbero, they should, would, or could convulse; or might convuls.

Fiedere.

I. INFINITIVE.

Fiedere, * to wound.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. fiédo, I wound; 2d p. fiédi, thou woundest; 3d p. fiéde, he wounds; fiédeno, they wound.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io fiedéva or fiedéa, I wounded.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. fiedéi, I wounded.

* Ancient writers said also fíggere, 'to wound, to strike'; from which are derived the forms fíggens, 'they strike'; which we meet in the Aeneasströmanti; and fíggia, 'it strikes,' in the Inferno of Dante.
ANALOGY.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. to <em>fi̞da</em></td>
<td>that I wound;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>((fi̞ggia),</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. égli <em>fi̞da</em></td>
<td>that he wound;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>((fi̞ggia),</td>
<td><em>fi̞dano</em>,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>that they wound.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. to *fi̞dessi*, |
| if I wounded. |


\[ \text{Lúcere.} \]

I. INFINITIVE.  
GERUND.

| Lúcere, | to shine. || lucéndo, | shining. |

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

| 1st p. . . . | . . . . | lucámo, | we shine; |
| 2d p. luci, | thou shinest; | lucéte, | you shine. |
| 3d p. luce, | he shines; | . . . . | . . . . |

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. to *lucéva*, |
| I shone. |

3. — Perfect.

| 1st p. . . . | . . . . | lucémmo, | we shone; |
| 2d p. lucésti, | thou shonest; | lucéste, | you shone. |
| 3d p. . . . | . . . . | . . . . | . . . . |

4. — Future.

1st p. lucerò, |
| I shall or will shine. |
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td>lucémō,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p.</td>
<td>lucēte,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. égī (lūca), that he shine;</td>
<td>(lūcāne), that they shine.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io lucēssi, if I shone or should shine.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — Present.

1st p. lucērēi (lucerīa), if I should, would, or could [shine; or might shine.

Mōlcere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Mōlcere), to assuage.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

2d p. (mólici), thou assuagest; 3d p. (mólice), he assuages.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io (molcē- [vs]), I assuaged; 2d p. (molcēvi), thou assuagest; 3d p. égī (mol- [cēva]), he assuaged.
### ANALOGY.

#### Riédere.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I. INFINITIVE.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Riédere,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>II. INDICATIVE.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Singular.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. — <em>Present.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. riédo,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. riédi,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. riédé,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>2. — <em>Imperfect.</em></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p. io riédéva,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or riédëa,]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. riédévi,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. égli riédéva,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or riédëa,]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>III. CONJUNCTIVE.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — <em>Present.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1st p. io riéda,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[or may return;]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p. tu riéda,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d p. égli riéda,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

#### Sérpere.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I. INFINITIVE.</th>
<th>GERUND.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(Sérpere),</td>
<td>to creep.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(sérpendo),</td>
<td>creeping.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. | Plural.
--- | ---
1st p. (sérpo), | I creep; | . . . . . . . .
2d p. (sérpi), | thou creepest; | . . . . . . . .
3d p. (sérpe), | he creeps; | (sérpono), | they creep.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. io (serpé), | I crept; [vo], | . . . . . . . .
2d p. (serpēvi), | thou crepest; | . . . . . . . .
3d p. égī (serpē) | he crept; [vo], | (serpēvano), | they crept.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. io (sérpa) | that I creep; or | . . . . . . . .
2d p. tu (sérpa) | that thou creep; [may creep; | . . . . . . . .
3d p. égī (sérpa) | that he creep; | (sérpano), | that they creep.

Soffólcer or Soffólger.

I. INFINITIVE. | PARTICIPLE.
--- | ---
(Soffólcer or | to support. | (soffólto), | supported.
Soffólger, [soffólger],

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

3d p. (soffólce or | he supports. | . . . . . . . .
soffólge),

3. — Perfect.

3d p. (soffólcs, | he supported. | . . . . . . . .
252°
ANALOGY.

Tāngere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Tāngere), | to touch.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

3d p. (tānge), he touches.  |

Tóllere.

I. INFINITIVE.

(Tóllere), | to take away.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. thou takest away;  |

3d p. (tólle), he takes away.  |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

2d p. tu (tólla), that thou take away;  |

3d p. égū (tólla), that he take away.
## DEFECTIVE VERBS

### V. IMPERATIVE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3d p. (tölla) égli, let him take [away.</td>
<td>: : : :</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Estóllexer, 'to lift'; compound of töllere, is not defective but in the participle, and in all the persons of the perfect of the indicative.*

---

### Tórperæ

#### I. INFINITIVE

(Tórperæ), to become numb.

#### II. INDICATIVE

1. — Present.

| 1st p. (tóro), I become numb; | : : : : |
| 3d p. (tópe), he becomes numb. | : : : : |

#### III. CONJUNCTIVE

1. — Present.

| 1st p. io (tóropa), that I become numb; | : : : : |
| 2d p. tu (tóro), that thou become numb; | : : : : |
| 3d p. égli (tóro), that he become numb. | : : : : |
ANALOGY.

*Urgere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

*Urgere,* to urge.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.                                Plural.

1. — Present.

3d p. urge, he urges.                           || : : : : |

2. — Imperfect.

3d p. égli urgeva [or urgea], he urged; || urgevano or ur- [géano], they urged.

---

*Vigere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Vigere), to be vigorous.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — Present.

3d p. (víge), he is vigorous; || : : : : |

4. — Future.

3d p. (vigerà), it will be vigor- [ous]. || : : : : |
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Gire.

I. INFINITIVE.

Gire, | to go. || gido, | gone.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular. Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. . . . . . . . | . . . . . . . | gido, | we go;  
2d p. . . . . . . . | . . . . . . . | gite, | you go.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. gixo or gix, | I went.

3. — Perfect.

1st p. igo gix, | I went.

4. — Future.

1st p. giró, | I shall or will go.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — Present.

1st p. . . . . . | . . . . . . . | gido, | that we go, or
2d p. . . . . . . | . . . . . . . | gite, | that you go.

2. — Imperfect.

1st p. igo gixsi, | if I went, or should go.
ANALOGY.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1st p. girēi (gīrīa), | I should, would, or could go; or [might go.

V. IMPERATIVE.

| 1st p. |  |  | gādmo, | let us go;  
| 2d p. |  |  | gīte, | go ye.  

---

Íre.

I. INFINITIVE.  

| fre, | to go. | íto, | gone. |

PARTICIPLE.

II. INDICATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Singular.</th>
<th>Plural.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. — Present.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d p.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| 2. — Imperfect. | | |
| 1st p. íva, | I went; |  |  |
| 3d p. églí íva, | he went. |  | ivāno, | we went. |

| 3. — Perfect. | | |
| 2d p. ísti, | thou wentest; |  |  |
| 3d p. | (íro, ír), | they went. |
### DEFECTIVE VERBS

#### 4. — Future.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SINGULAR</th>
<th>PLURAL</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st p.</td>
<td><em>irémo</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd p.</td>
<td><em>iréte</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd p.</td>
<td><em>iráno</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### IV. CONDITIONAL.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>3rd p.</th>
<th><em>(iráno)</em></th>
<th>they should,</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[would, or could [go; or might [go.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### V. IMPERATIVE.

| 2nd p. | *íte*  | go ye. |

---

### Olire.

#### I. INFINITIVE.

*Olire,* | to smell.

#### II. INDICATIVE.

2. — Imperfect.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1st p.</th>
<th><em>io olíva,</em></th>
<th>I smelled;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2nd p.</td>
<td><em>olívi,</em></td>
<td>thou smelledst;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd p.</td>
<td><em>égli olíva,</em></td>
<td>he smelled.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td><em>olívano,</em></td>
<td>they smelled.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
EXAMPLES.

CALÉNDOGLI vie più la salute propria che gli interessi dei Semi-
foniti. (Stor. Semif. 36.)

Lo cuòr che 'n sul Tamigi an-
cbr si cóla. Dant. Inf. 12.—
Cóla, cioè cóle. (Buti. Com.
Dant.)

Quantunque alla natura unpa-
na lèce — Atër di lume. (Dant.
Par. 13.)

E dé' nemici fàve e dé' sog-
gétti: (Tass. Ger. 1. 83.)

Présio del nuovo canto, stópe e
sile: (Boez. Varch. 3. 12.)

Io dubito che Vossignoria non
abbia occupato il primo luogo
nella gràzia di Sua Beatitudine,
il quale sèleva essere il mio.
(Cas. lett. 19.)

Àlèsi ed ìrsi gran tém-po.
(Varch. Rim. 8.)

Tantà paúra e duòl l' álma
trista ànge. (Petr. s. 236.)

Arnosero génie nuovo per séi
Prioráti. (Giov. Vill. 9. 2.)

So di sapér ch' io sia ti cal
cotánto. (Dant. Inf. 19.)

Chi sa cómo difende e cómo
féré, — Soccórso a' suoi perigli
altro non chérè. (Tass. Ger. 2.
85.)

Dopo alcùni stràni avvolgemen-
ti casò mòrta, convùlsa e in-
tirizzita. (Red. Vip. 1. 83.)

"O figliuíl," disse, "quál di
questa gréggia — S' arresta pùn-
to, giáce poi cent' anni — Sánz-
za arrostarsi quando 'l fóco il
réggia." (Dant. Inf. 15.)

Caring more for his own safety
than for the interests of the Semi-
phonitians.

That heart which is yet honored
on the [bank of the] Thames.

Whatever of light is allowed to
human nature.

And fears both his enemies and
his subjects.

Transported by the new song,
he is astonished and keeps silent.

I doubt whether your Lordship
has not occupied the first place in
the favor of His Holiness, which
was not to be mine.

I was chill and burned for a great
while.

So much fear and grief afflicts
my sad soul.

They added new people for six
successive Priorates.

If it imports thee so much to
know who I am.

He who knows how it [the hand
of God] defends, and how it of-
fends, asks no other assistance in
his perils.

After some strange whirlings, she
fell down dead, convulsed and stiff
with cold.

"O son," said he, "]whoever of
this throng stops one instant, lies
then a hundred years, without any
ventilation, when the fire smites
him."
DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Lucévan gli occhi suoi piú che la stélla. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

E già il sòle a mézza térza ríede. (Dant. Inf. 34.)

Chi puó dir cómo sérpa, o cómo crésca,— Giá da più látì il foço? (Tass. Ger. 12. 45.)

Perché la vista túa pur si sot-tóle— Laggiú tra l'ombre tri-ste smozziáte? (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Io son fútta da Dio, súa mercè, tóle— Che la vóstra miséria non mi tàngne. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Che dóna.e tólle ógni áltro ben fortúna. (Arios. Fur. 27. 84.)

Si la gran frónte e le gran cór-na estólle. (Tass. Ger. 4. 7.)

À' Gréci — Il favéllár non tór-fe infra le lábbra. (Buon. Fier. 2. 5. 5.)

Che l' úna párté e l' áltra tira ed úrge — Tin tin sónándo con sí dólce nóta. (Dant.Par. 10.)

Per mostráre che la carítá sém-pre vígérna in lóró. (But. Par. 7.)

E la ingegnósa pécchia al pri-mo albóré— Gíva predándo or úno or áltro fíóre. (Poliz. St. 1. 25.)

Íte, cáldi sospíri, al fréddo córe. (Petr. s. 120.)

Mescoláto insíme con quello di mótle áltre cósé, che per lo giardíno olívano. (Bocc. g. 3.)

Her eyes were brighter than the star [of day].

And now the sun returns within one hour and a half of noon.

Who can say how the fire creeps, and already increases on every side.

Why dost thou fasten thy sight below among the maimed and miserable shades?

I am so made by God, thanks to his grace, that no sufferance of your misery touches me.

For fortune gives and takes away every other good.

So high he raises his great brow and horns.

To the Greeks the speech does not languish in their lips.

In which the one part draws and the other pushes, sending out a tinkling sound of note—so sweet.

To show that charity will always be in vigor among them.

And the industrious bee, at the first dawn, was rifling now this and now the other flower.

Go, warm sighs, to the cold heart.

Mingled with the scent of many other things, which through the garden spread their fragrance.

As most of the foregoing defective verbs are of rare occurrence, and can be used with propriety only in verse, an Exercise upon them has been here thought needless.

29
GENERAL REMARKS ON ITALIAN VERBS.

Verbs, which in the infinitive end in āre, ēre or ēre, īre; as fa'īre, to make; tēsēre, to weave; ūdrēre, to hear; followed by a word beginning with a consonant, except z or s followed by another consonant, often drop the last vowel; as,

far difēsa, to make defence;
tēsser fiscēlle, to weave baskets;
udi novēlla, to hear news.

Those verbs, which, by contraction, end in ārre, ērre, ārre; as, tra'rre from trāere, to draw; impōrre from impōnere, to impose; introdūrre from introducere, to introduce; drop the last syllable; as,

tra' non puōte, he cannot draw;
impōr leggi, to impose laws;
introduct' costūme, to introduce a custom.

The first and third persons plural of tenses of verbs ending in mo, and no, ro; as, eravāmo, we were; parlāvano, they spoke; căddero, they fell; often drop the last vowel; as,

eravām partitti, we had departed;
parlāvan rádo, they spoke seldom;
cădder nel bollente stāgno, they fell into the boiling lake.

Those persons which end in nno; as, sarānno, they will be; hānno, they have; drop the last syllable; as,

tutti-sarān serrāti, they shall all be closed;
l' han prōprio a nóia, they really hate him.

Infinitives of verbs, and the first and third persons plural of their tenses, drop constantly the last vowel
or syllable, when they are followed by a conjunctive pronoun; as,

Parlärne, to speak of it;
Andiammi, let us go thither;
Aiutärónmi, they assisted me;
Dídoergli, they gave him.

The third person singular of the present of the indicative of the verbs calére, 'to care for'; dolére, 'to grieve'; rimanére, 'to remain'; solére, 'to be wont'; tenére, 'to hold'; valére, 'to be worth'; volére, 'to be willing'; veníre 'to come'; and the second person singular of the imperative of the verbs rimanére, tenére, veníre; drop the last vowel, especially when they are followed by a conjunctive pronoun; as,

se vi cal di me, if you care for me;
Duvólti ch' to ti vinco? does it grieve thee that I conquer thee?
Dvólmi abbagliáre, it is wont to dazzle me;
Tién dal Cidó, she holds from Heaven;
Rimánti con nóí, remain with us;
Non si vuól díre, it must not be said;
Vienne quà, come [thence] hither.

The first person singular of the present of the indicative of the verb essere, 'to be'; and the second person singular of the imperative of the verb pómere, 'to put'; drop the last vowel, and when followed by the conjunctive pronoun mi, they change n into m; as,

I' son coléi, I am she;
Pómmi bve 'l Sol uccide i put me where the sun kills the floweri,

All forms of verbs followed by a conjunctive pronoun (as we have already observed, p. 110, and the foregoing examples clearly show,) are joined to them so as to form one single word. Now, if the form of the verb consists
of one syllable; as, è, 'it is'; ha, or à, 'it has'; di', 'tell thou'; fà', 'make thou'; sa, 'he or it knows'; vo, 'I go'; &c.; or if it bears the accent on the last syllable; as, dirò, 'I will tell'; mostrò, 'he showed'; &c.; in being joined to a conjunctive pronoun, the consonant of the pronoun is doubled, and the accent when marked is suppressed; as,

evvi caduto dalla memoria?
hammi a tal conditton,
avvi letto,
dimmi, maestro mio,
fatti ben sentire,
sallo lddio,
vonmene a guisa d'orbo,
diroxti perch' i stenni,
mostrocci un'ombra,

has it escaped from your mind?
she has reduced me to such a condition;
there are beds;
tell me, my master;
make thyself to be heard well;
God knows it;
I go on like a blind man;
I will tell thee why I came;
he showed us a spirit.

EXCEPTION.
The g of the pronoun gli, is never doubled, although the accent of the verb is always suppressed; as,

MANDOGLI dicendo,
sent him word.

The forms trài, 'thou drawest' or 'draw thou'; tràe, 'he or it draws'; of the verb tràere or tràrre, 'to draw'; when joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop the last vowel, and require that the consonant of the pronoun be doubled; as,

tranne lo Scricca,
trammi di mortàl letargo,
except Scricca;
it draws me from a mortal lethargy.

Finally, infinitives of verbs, like present participles in English, are often used in Italian as substantives; as, il parlare, 'the speaking'; l'abbracciare, 'the embracing'; il favellare, 'the manner of speaking'; and then
REMARKS ON VERBS.

have a plural, which they form like substantives, by changing e into i; as,

li sózzi parlári,
gli abbracciári,
i próprì favellári,
immodest [speaking, or] conversations;
the [embracings or] embraces;
one’s own manners of speaking.

EXAMPLES.

Dinánx a lái non vále—
NASCÓNDER, nè FUGGÍN, nè FÁR
diféssa. (Petr. s. 203.)

E véde un úbom canúto all’ óm-
bre aménè—TÉSSE R FISCÉLLE
dilla sua gréggia accánto. (Tass.
Ger. 7. 6.)

Ed élla—Di quéstá cós a udí
non uóí NOVÉLLA. (Bern. Orl.
l. 9.)

TRAR mólto il débil fidéncio óltra
non puóte. (Tass. Ger. 19. 28.)

E léggi impóre, ed INTRODÚR
costúme,— Ed órti e ciúlo di
veráce Núme. (Tass. Ger. 1. 9.)

Nóí ERÁVAM PARTÍTI già da
déll. (Dant. Inf. 32.)

PARLÁVÁN RÁDO con vócì sódvi.
(Dant. Inf. 4.)

E amendúce — CáDDER NEL
mézzo del BOLLÉNTE STÁGNO.
(Dant. Inf. 22.)

TÓTTI SARÁN SERRÁTI—Quán-
dó di Josaffa quit torneránnó.
(Dant. Inf. 10.)

Tánto L’ HAN PRÓPRIO i suóí
figiúddhi A NOÍA. (Bern. Rim.)

29*

Before him it does not avail to
conceal, to fly, or to make defence.

‘ And she sees a hoary old man in
the pleasant shade, weaving bas-
kets by the side of his flock.

And she does not wish to hear
speaking about this thing.

He cannot draw his feeble frame
much further.

And to impose laws, and to in-
troduce customs, and arts, and the
worship of the true God.

We had already departed from
him.

They spoke seldom, but with mel-
odious voices.

And both fell into the middle of
the boiling lake.

They [the sepulchres] shall all
be closed, when they [the spirits]
shall have once more come here,
returning from Jehosaphat.

So much his own children hate
him.
Égli mi piáce di parlárne.
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Andiámvi, ben mi piáce [di vedério]. (Nov. Ant.)

Aiutáronmi elle béné. (Bocc. g. 4. Proem.)

Díserglio (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

Sè vi cal di me, venité méco sino a palágio. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)

Che avéstì, Anichino? Duólti cost ch'io ti vínco? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

Mótre ha spénto quél sol, che abbagliár suólmi. (Petr. s. 311.)

E 'l nóbile ingénio che dal cielo — Per grázia tién dell' immótole Apollo. (Petr. c. 5.)

Státi e rimánti con nóí, se ti piáce. (Vit. SS. P.P. 2. 317.)

Comáre, égli non si vuól díre. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Adriáno díssé: "Sì, viénne qual." (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

I' son coléi, che ti dié tánla guérria. (Petr. s. 261.)

Pómmi óve 'l sol uccide i fíóri e 'l érba. (Petr. s. 113.)

Ora evvi cosi ísto dál¿la mé-
mória cadúto? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

El' gíta al cielo; ed hammi a
tal condútto. (Petr. s. 247.)

Ed avvi létí, che vi parré-
ber piú béli che quelli del Dóge
di Vinégia. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

Dimmi, máestro mio! Dimmi,
signóre! (Dant. Inf. 4.)

It pleases me to speak of it.
Let us go [thither], I should be
glad to see it.
They assisted me well.
They gave him.
If you care for me, come with
me as far as the palace.
What ails thee, Anichino? Does it grieve thee thus that I conquer thee?
Death has extinguished that sun,
which is wont to dazzle me.
And the noble mind which he
holds from Heaven, through the
favor of the immortal Apollo.
Stay and remain with us, if thou
likest.
Gossip, it must not be said.
Adrian said: "Yes, come [thence]
hither."
I am she, who caused you so
much grief.
Put me where the sun kills the
flowers and the herbage.
Now has it so soon escaped from
your mind?
She is gone to Heaven; and
has reduced me to such a condition.
And there are beds, which would
appear to you better than those
of the Doge of Venice.
Tell me, my master! tell me,
my sire!
REMARKS ON VERBS.

Grida fôrte, fatti ben sentire. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

Sallo Iddio. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Vommena a guisa d'érbo senza luce. (Petr.)

D'rottì perché' f' venni, e quel ch' io 'ntési. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Mostrocchi un' ombra dall' un canto sola. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

E per lettera mandogli dicendo, che da Brandizio si dovesse levare. (Gio. Vill.)

Tranne lo Scricca, — Che sepp pe far le moderate spese. (Dant. Inf. 29.)

O' do io la voce — Di Davide? . . . Trammi di mortal letargo. (Alf. Saul. 3. 4.)

E' l suo parlare, e 'l bel viso, e le chiome — Mi piacque si . . . . (Petr. c. 7.)

Non hanno parole né favella ri proprì. (Varch. Ecol. 329.)

Li sozzi parlari corrompono di buoni costumi. (Albert. c. 10.)

Le ténere lágrime, gli abbracciare, e gli onestì baci. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

O elètti di Dio! gli cùi soffrire — E giustizia e speranza fàn mén dûrì, — Drizzate noi verso gli alti salìri. (Dant. Pur. 19.)

Cry out loud, make thyself to be heard well.

God knows it.

I go on like a blind man without light.

I will tell thee why I came, and what I heard.

He showed us a spirit by itself retired apart.

And send him word by letter, that he should depart from Brundusium.

Except Scricca, who knew how to lay out his fortune temperately.

Do I hear the voice of David? . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . It draws me from a mortal lethargy.

And her conversation, and her beautiful countenance, and her hair pleased me so . . . .

They have neither words nor manners of speaking of their own.

Immodest conversations corrupt good morals.

The affectionate tears, the embraces, and the chaste kisses.

O ye elect of God! whose sufferings both justice and hope mitigate, direct our way towards the steep ascents.
CHAPTER XII.

PARTICIPLES.

ITALIAN participles may be considered either as forms of the verbs from which they are derived, or as adjectives.

Considered as adjectives, they follow the same rules as adjectives with regard to gender and number.

Present participles end in e, are of the common gender, and form the plural by changing e into i; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{imperatôre trionfânte, m. s.,} & \quad \text{[triumphing emperor;}
\text{trionfânte, m. & f. s., triumphing;}
\text{tûrbâ trionfânte, f. s., triumphing;}
\text{[ing militia;}
\text{uòmini tempestânti, m. p.,} & \quad \text{[tempest-tost men;}
\text{tempestânti, m. & f. p., tempest-tost;}
\text{nàvi tempestânti, f. p., tempest-tost ships.}
\end{align*}
\]

Present participles are sometimes used substantively, as, amânîte, 'lover'; ascollánti, 'listeners'; they follow however invariably the same rule.

Past participles end in o, are masculine, and become feminine by changing o into a; they form the plural by changing o into i, and a into e; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{forâto, } & \quad \text{pierced;}
\text{forâtà, } & \quad \text{mémbrô forâto, m. s., pierced limb;}
\text{gôlà forâtà, f. s., pierced throat;}
\text{accési, } & \quad \text{cubrî accési, m. p., kindled hearts;}
\text{accész, } & \quad \text{fîmmë accész, f. p., kindled flames.}
\end{align*}
\]

Some verbs have a future participle; as, durâtûro, 'to last'; fattûro, 'about to do'; futûro, 'future', or 'to be'; perîtûro, 'about to perish'; ventûro, 'about to come'; which follow the same rules as past participles.

Many past participles of verbs of the first conjugation are frequently contracted; as, cérco for cercâto, 'search-
ed'; désto for destáto, 'awakened'; mózzo for mozzáto, 'cut off'; &c.; these, when contracted, are alike the first person of the present tense of the indicative mood, and are subject to the same inflections as the other participles which are not so; as,

[iō] cérco, I search;  
cérco, searched;
[iō] désto, I awake;  
désto, awaken;
[iō] mózzo, I cut off;  
mózzo, cut off:

désto, awaken;
mózzo, cut off;
cérche, searched;
uómó désto, m. s., man awakened;
mánó mózza, f. s., hand cut off;
próvincé cérche, f. p., provinces searched.

Italian participles agree with substantives in gender and number; as,

ménte avvézza,
mind accustomed;
rággi perdúti,  
rays lost;
cóse sapútè,  
things known;
cóse détte,  
things said.

[For a List of Contracted Participles, see Appendix I.]

Italian participles when used as adjectives form their comparatives and superlatives, according to the rules already given; as,

lucénte, bright;  
più lucénte, more bright;
nocénte, guilty;  
menó nocénte, less guilty;
amáto, loved;  
mólto amáto, very much loved;
ríveríto, revered;  
il piú ríveríto, the most revered;
intendénte, versed;  
intendentiíssimo, very well versed.
ANALOGY.

EXAMPLES.

Sicchē 'l tuo cuór, quantunque pud, giocendo — Si appresenti dalla TÜRBA TRIONFANTE, — Che liēta vién per questo étéra tóndo. (Dant. Par. 22.)

Una nāve portānte uōmini tempestanti, pericolanti, soggiacenti a tantī marōsi. (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 3.)

Quando leggēmmo il disidato riso — Esser baciato da cotanto amante. (Dant. Inf. 5.)

Ciò, che avvenuto éra, distintamente narrò, con gran maraviglia degli ascoltanti. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.)

... E quāl forāto sūo membro, e quāl mozzo — Mostrāsse, d'aggiugliar sarébbe nūlla — Il modo della nōna bólgia sozzo. (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Un altro che forāta avea la gōla. (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Supérbia, invidiā, e avariziā sono — Le tre faville c'hanno i cuóri accési. (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Evēde présso a sē le fiāmme accēse. (Dant. Inf. 23.)

E che il principe ne nominasse dōdici, duratūri cinque anni. (Dav. Tac. Ann. 2. 40.)

Fātto avea prīma e poi éra fattūro. (Dant. Par. 6.)

Tēmpo futūro m' è già nel cospētto. (Dant. Par. 23.)

Più ardentemente cercano i secolari le cose peritūre, che noí le útili. (Cavalc. Espos. Simb. 1.)

Vigilāte d'ogni témpo, sicchē siate dégni di fugirē l'ira venētūra. (Cavalc. Frutt. Ling.)

So that thy heart should present itself as joyful as it can to the triumphant militia [church], which joyfully proceeds through this round space.

A ship carrying men, wrecked, endangered and subject to so many storms.

When we read of those dear lips so rapturously-kissed by one so deep in love.

He related distinctly what had happened, to the great wonder of the listeners.

... And if some should have a limb pierced, and some cut off, they could badly equal the vile mode of punishment of the ninth bolge.

Another who had his throat pierced.

Pride, envy, and avarice are the three sparks which have kindled their hearts.

And sees near her the flames kindled.

And that the prince should appoint twelve of them, who were to last [or remain in office] five years.

He had done [that sign], and afterward he was to do again.

Future time is already in my presence.

Men in the world seek with more eagerness perishable things, than we do useful ones.

Be always diligent that you may deserve to avoid approaching wrath.
PARTICIPLES.

Perchê, essendo desto, gli parve sentire scendere nella casa persone. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Un, ch' avéa l' ùna e l' altra man mòzza. (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Avendo cérche molte provinçe Cristianë. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Lassái quel, ch' è più bramó; ed ho si avvëzza — La mënte a contemplar sòla costei. (Petr. s. 93.)

Avéa la lúna perdóti i rághi suoi. (Petr. c. 38.)

Fo non ho quëste cose sapaté da' vicini, èlla medésima mèle ha dëtte. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Ond' èlla féssi — Lucénte più assái di quël ch' èll' èra. (Dant. Par. 5.)

Èssa tánto più impaziente sosteneva quësta nóia, quanto mëno si sentiva nocénte. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

O móloto amàto cuòre, ogni mio ufficio verso te è fornito. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Tra i quàli il maggiàre e il più riveréto da tutti, a quelle stagióni, èra Jacopo di Carino. (Matt. Vill. 1. 72.)

Aristófane è persona inten-déntíssima — Della scritùra. (Cecch. Spir. 5. 5.)

Because, being awake, he seemed to hear people descend into the house.

One who had the one and the other hand cut off.

Having searched through many Christian provinces.

I left what I desire most, and I have my mind so accustomed to contemplate her alone.

The moon had lost her rays.

I have not heard these things from the neighbours, she herself has told them to me.

Whence she became far more bright than she had been.

She bore this vexation so much the more patiently, the less she felt guilty.

O very much loved heart, I have done towards thee all that I could.

Amongst whom the greatest and the most revered by all, at that time, was Jacopo di Carino.

Aristophanes is a person very well versed in writing.
EXERCISE XXII.

Before (to the) his eyes they slew her crying for mercy and assistance. To him, residing in Flan-
ders, came a desire to hear. Apollo holding that part of the Heaven, which he now traverses, was embel-
lishing more (the) their works. In a book which I intend

| to | make, God granting it, on vulgar eloquence. |
| di | fare, Dio concedere —, di volgare eloquenza. |

It happened that during the war the queen of France —

fell, very sick.

After that the lady had made herself to be besought very much. They had all their heads surrounded with oak leaves — leaves of oak.

(The) my skin is bronzed (on me), and (the) mio pelle esseré abbrunire sopra di io,

my bones are dried up on account of the heat.

Nor were the faults of the Vitellians punished, but well paid on the other side. The jealous man

had put some little stones in his mouth. There

is a tree more above, whose fruit was bitten

éssere — Légno più su, che essesse mérderes
by Eve. How many verses I have already spread about. All were beaten with (the) rods in the middle
gere. Tutto essere batters Verga mézzo
of the square, and had (the) their head cut off. They
piàzza, avère 3 -- testa tagliare.

| have promised, and sold me to a merchant, who
avère 2 promettere 2, 4 vindere 4 M 11 mercante,
| is to carry me to the Sultan in the Levant.
| det 6 portar 2 mi 4 1 Soldano 3 Leodane.

Let the ages to come judge from this who
| età 4 venire 2 estimare 2 Quinci 6
| Otho was. The present (age shall hear) and the
Ottone 8 essere 4 presento 7 mondo 6 udire 6
| future ages shall hear (the) my protestations.
essere 10 udire 8 protésto 9.

CHAPTER XIII.

ADVERBS.

SIMPLE ADVERBS IN COMMON USE.

Adverbs of Time.

Oggi, to-day; diánzi,† before;
térra, yesterday; innánzi,†
dománii, to-morrow; prima,
óra, testi,
adesso, now; poi,§
mò,† afterwards;

* From the Latin de and manu.
† From the Latin made.
‡ From di, in, and the Latin ante: -- the Celtic ant, 'opposite.'
§ From the Latin pone: -- the Celtic duo or box, changed into pon, 'the last.'
|| From the Celtic de, 'after,' and pon, 'the last.'
ANALOGY.

sémpre, * always; tôsto, soon; 
mái, never; prêsto, quick; 
epésso, often; adágio, slow; 
sovente,† sometimes; pásso, early; 
talvolta, talora, perítempo, late; 
sóstava, still; già, already; 
tuttora, intanto, in the mean 
eognora, frattinto, time; 
alória, mentre, whilst; 
súbio, immediately; 

Adverbs of Place.

Qui, elsewhere; 
quê, wherever; 
á,§ here, hither; 
ér, there, thither; 
cóli, there, thither; 
colâ, suí, up; 
costi, there near you; sóbra, upon, above; 
costô, entro, under, below; 
tri, dentro, 
quivi, within; 
indi, without; 
quindi, from hence; 
quinci,§§ before; 
costinci, from thence; 
ove, from thence; 
dove, where; 
dónde, whence; 
onde, where; 
dónde, whence; 

* From the Latin semper : the Celtic chemp or semp, 'without,' and or or er, 'end.'
† From the Latin subinde.
‡ From the Latin hanc haram.
§ From the Latin illic, illae.
¶ From the Latin qua and istic, istas.
¶¶ From the Latin qui and hanc.
** The Latin super : — the Celtic sup, 'upon.'
†† From the Latin sub, subtus : — the Celtic sub, 'under.'
††† From the Celtic particles en and tre.
§§ The Latin foris, foras : — the Celtic for, 'out.'
|| From the Celtic ab, 'far,' and ant, 'opposite.'
¶¶ From the Celtic dcre, 'back.'
*** From the Celtic for, 'circle.'
### Adverbs of Order.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Priá</th>
<th>primo</th>
<th>poi</th>
<th>dopo</th>
<th>indi,</th>
<th>quindì,</th>
<th>appresso,</th>
<th>infine,</th>
<th>afterwards; finally.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

### Adverbs of Quantity and Quality.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Più,</th>
<th>meno,</th>
<th>máncò,</th>
<th>móltò,</th>
<th>assái,</th>
<th>treppò,</th>
<th>guártì,</th>
<th>tântò,</th>
<th>pòco,</th>
<th>affutò,</th>
<th>too much; not much; so much; little; any at all.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>more;</td>
<td>less;</td>
<td></td>
<td>much;</td>
<td>well;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Béné,</th>
<th>male,</th>
<th>well;</th>
<th>indeed, truly; in truth; exactly so.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>davvéro, disútì, appuntò,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Adverbs of Affirmation, Negation, and Doubt.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Si,</th>
<th>guà,</th>
<th>certo,</th>
<th>bène,</th>
<th>daùvèro,</th>
<th>disútì,</th>
<th>appuntò,</th>
<th>indeed, truly; in truth; exactly so.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>yes,</td>
<td>indeed;</td>
<td>certainly;</td>
<td>well;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No,</th>
<th>non,</th>
<th>mài,</th>
<th>giammài,</th>
<th>mîca,</th>
<th>pûtìo,</th>
<th>affutò,</th>
<th>not at all.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>no,</td>
<td>not;</td>
<td>never</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Fórse,</th>
<th>circa,</th>
<th>perhaps; about; almost.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>préssò, quãstì,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Adverbs of Comparison and Interrogation.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Si,</th>
<th>così,</th>
<th>méno,</th>
<th>lântò,</th>
<th>quaúntò,</th>
<th>a-guìsa,</th>
<th>a-môdo,</th>
<th>less; so much, as; as; like.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>così,</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>so, thus; as; so, as; more;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* From the Celtic prem, 'near.'
† From the Celtic trops, 'troop,' 'multitude.'
‡ From the Latin gors, — the Celtic gor.
ANALOGY.

dove? whither? perché? how much?
ché? how?

Adverbs of Choice and Demonstration.

Anzi, rather; piuttosto, sooner.
prima, sooner.
Ecco, behold; eccoli, there is;
ecquoli, there are;
ecquolà, there are;
ecquodi, there are;
when lo.

The adverbs oggi, 'to-day'; ieri, 'yesterday'; and domani, 'to-morrow'; are often used as substantives; as,

questo di d' oggi,
this day;
il giorno di ieri,
yesterday;
domani e venerdì,
to-morrow is Friday.

Mai, 'never,' is sometimes used in the signification of 'ever'; as,
quaii barbari fur mai?
what savage women were
there ever?
cosi bello come fu mai,
as beautiful as ever was.

Qui, quà, 'here'; and quivi, 'from hence'; indicate a place near the person speaking: costì, costà, 'there near you'; and costinci, 'from thence where you are'; indicate a place near the person spoken to: and là, là; colì, colà; ivi, quivi, 'there'; indi, 'thence', and quindi, 'from thence'; indicate a place at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to; as,
cosi qui mi disse,
so he said to me here;
ADVERBS.

Quinci non pàssa mai ánima buônica, no good spirit ever passes hence;
tante belle giovani che costà sono, so many beautiful girls as there are near you;
dité costinci, tell it from where you are;
nè lì guàri lontâno, not far from thence;
vuòlsi così collà dòve si puòte ciò che si vuòle, so it is willed there, where will is power;
quivi si piágon li spietáti dànni, here they wail their merciless wrongs;
comandòlèle che indi non uscisse, he ordered her not to go out from thence.

Si, ‘yes’; and no, ‘no’ or ‘not’; are sometimes used as substantives; as,
il mio no, my negative;
il suo sì, his affirmative;
sì e no nel capò mi tenzònà, yes and no struggle in my head.

Si is used sometimes instead of the conjunction e, ‘and,’ and may be rendered in English by the word both; as,
sì per la sua forma, e sì per la nobilità del pàdre, both for his personal beauty and for the nobility of his father.

No sometimes takes the place of a whole sentence; as,
o voléssero, o no [o non voléssero], whether they wished, or not [or they did not wish];
quello che io avò fatto, e quel che no [e quel che non avò fatto], what I shall have done, and what not [and what I shall not have done].

No is used only in answering a question, or when used absolutely: non, in all other instances, and particularly when the negative is followed by a verb or another adverb; as,
signôr, no, no, sir;
ANALOGY.

**I do not rave, no;**
no, the bargain will not be broken off on this account.

*O' ve,* 'where,' in poetry, is often changed into *u*; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{v' sono i verbi?} & \quad \text{where are the verses?} \\
\text{v' son giunte le rime?} & \quad \text{where are the rhymes gone?}
\end{align*}
\]

The adverbs *bene,* *già,* *mài,* *mica,* *pùnto,* *non,* *ècco,* are often used as mere *explicative*; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{si ìnà,} & \quad \text{yes indeed;} \\
\text{èl Dìo non vòglia,} & \quad \text{may God forbid;} \\
\text{si giàce mài sémprè in ghiàccio,} & \quad \text{lies always frozen;} \\
\text{non màic di pòcò aftàre,} & \quad \text{not at all of little' consequence;} \\
\text{non è pùnto mèrto,} & \quad \text{he is not at all dead;} \\
\text{appènà ancora non hà,} & \quad \text{he has hardly yet;} \\
\text{ècco, non so dir di no,} & \quad \text{I cannot say no.}
\end{align*}
\]

**Examples.**

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Quèsto dì d' oggi è stato dàto} & \quad \text{This day has been given to kings,} \\
\text{a rì, e a soldàni, e a si fàtta géné-te.} & \quad \text{and to sultans, and to similar people.}
\end{align*}
\]

Quanto mi fu il giorno di ieri imposto alla sua partenza.  "What was ordered to me yesterday at your departure.

**Domàni è Venerdì, e il seguente di Sábato.**  "To-morrow is Friday, and the following day Saturday.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Quài bàbbare fur mài, quài Saracine?} & \quad \text{What savage women, what Saracens were there ever?} \\
\text{Così è oggi bìello il ciélò còme fu mài.} & \quad \text{The sky is as beautiful to-day as it ever was.}
\end{align*}
\]

Qui fuì con Pamphilo, e così qui mi fìsse, e così qui facemmo.  "Here was I with Pamphilus, and so he said to me here, and so we did here."
**ADVERBS.**

Quinci non passa mai anima buona. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Veggendo tanto male giovan che costà sono. (Bocc. Filoc. 2.)

Ditelo costinci, se non, l'arco tire. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Nè lì guari lontano fuor di via — Un suo bel velo lasciava fuggendo. (Bocc. Vis. Am. 20.)

Vuolsi così colla dove si puote — Ciò che si vuole, e più non dimandare. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Quivi si piangon li spietati danni: — Quivi è Alessandro, e Dionisio fero — Che fe' Sicilia aver dolorosi anni. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Comandolle cheindi non uscisse infino a tano, che egli che l'avea rinchiusa, non l'aprisse. (Passav. 78.)

Tanto vale il mio no quanto il suo si. (Cecch. Esalt. or. 2. 3.)

Che sì e no nel capo mi tenzona. (Dant. Inf. 8.)

Era Cimone, sì per la sua forma, e sì per la nobiltà e ricchezza del padre, quasi nòto a ciascuno. (Bocc: g. 5. n. 1.)

Io vi dirò quello che io avrò fatto, e quell che no. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

Il famigliare rispose: 'Signor, no.' (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Disse allora Pirro: 'Non farmentico, no, Signora.' (Bocc.)

No, per quello non rimarrà il mercato. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)

Hence no good spirit ever passes.

Seeing so many beautiful girls as are there near you.

Tell it from where you are, or else I draw my bow.

Not far from thence flying out of the way, she left a beautiful veil.

So it is willed, there where will is power, and ask no more.

Here they wait their merciless wrongs: here dwells Alexander and the fierce Dionysius, who wrought for Sicily many years of woe.

He ordered her not to go out from thence until he, who had shut her up there, should come to open for her.

My negative is as good as his affirmative.

For yes and no struggle in my head.

Cimon was, both for his personal beauty, and for the nobility and wealth of his father, known to almost every one.

I will tell you what I shall have done, and what not.

The domestic replied: 'No, sir.'

Then Pyrrhus said: 'I do not rave, Madam, no.'

No, the bargain will not be broken off on this account.

---

* 'At war 'twixt will and will not.' — Shakespeare, Measure for Measure.
U' sono i verbi, u' son giun- 
te le rime? (Petr. c. 46.)

Disse Calandrino: 'Si bene.' (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Il necromante disse: 'Gil dico 
non voglia.' (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.)

Un' parte del mondo è, che si 
giac — Mai sempre in ghiaccio. (Petr. c. 5.)

Un'na do, non mica d' uomo 
di poco affare: (Bocc. g. 
10. n. 6.)

Teddido non è punto morto. 
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Questo nostro fanciullo, il quale 
aprèna ancòra non ha quattordici anni. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.)

Écco, io non so dir di no. 
(Bocc. g. 8. p. 7.)

**COMPOUND ADVERBS.**

Compound adverbs are formed of an adjective, and 
the substantive mente, 'manner.' Mente being of the 
feminine gender requires that the adjective be of the 
same gender; as,

savia, wise;  
savia-mente, in a wise manner, or wise-
[ly;  
onesta, honest;  
onesta-mente, in an honest manner, or 
honestly;  
cortese, courteous;  
cortese-mente, in a courteous manner, 
[or courteously;  
prudente, prudent;  
prudente-mente, in a prudent manner, 
[or prudently;  

* From the Celtic *mente, 'manner.' It is from this language that the Latins 
borrowed their mente, and formed such expressions as fortì mente, clara mente, deco-
tà mente, &c., which afterwards passed to the Italianas, as *mente* in Boccaco-
cio (g. 9. n. 9.); affectuosa mente in Ariosto (Orl. Fur.); eterna mente in Monti (Bassv.) 
may prove; although they are now generally written in one word; as, *fortemente, 
strongly; oriamente, clearly; devotamente, devoutly; sanamente, wisely; 
eaffectuosamente, affectionately; eternamente, eternally; &c.
If the adjective ends in *le,* or *re,* for the sake of euphony the *final e* is dropped in the formation of the adverb; as,

- festèvole, merry;
- FESTEVOLO-MÉNTE, merrily;
- particolàre, particular;
- PARTICULAR-MÉNTE, particularly.

Sometimes the adverb is an adjective only, without the addition of the word *mente*; as,

- CHIÁRO [for chiaraménte], clearly;
- DOLCE [for dolceménte], sweetly.

The following are the

**Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs.†**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fórtè,</td>
<td>very strong;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sódo,</td>
<td>fast, hard;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>álto,</td>
<td>softly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bássò,</td>
<td>low;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cértò,</td>
<td>certainly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>triste,</td>
<td>sadly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liéto,</td>
<td>merrily;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dólce,</td>
<td>sweetly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chiáro,</td>
<td>clearly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sciùro,</td>
<td>darkly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schiéatto,</td>
<td>candidly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>piáno,</td>
<td>low, softly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lènto,</td>
<td>slowly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prónto,</td>
<td>readily;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rállo,</td>
<td>speedily;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tánto,</td>
<td>so much;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ráro,</td>
<td>rarely;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sólo,</td>
<td>only;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>títto,</td>
<td>all;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>póco,</td>
<td>little;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mólto,</td>
<td>much;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tróppo,</td>
<td>too much;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>béllo,</td>
<td>handsomely;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>buòno,</td>
<td>very well;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>apérito,</td>
<td>openly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sicúro,</td>
<td>surely;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>diméssò,</td>
<td>lowly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>somméssò,</td>
<td>humbly;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vicína,</td>
<td>near;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lontáno,</td>
<td>far.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* This rule with regard to adjectives ending in *le* is not without exceptions, as may be seen in the following passages:

  - Similèmènte il mal sème d' Adàmo. (Dant. Inf. 3.) → In like manner Adam's evil brood.
  - Io la ricéggia stárui umilemènte. (Petr. s. 211.) → I see her remaining humbly.
  - Unilemènte vi priégo. (Bocc.) → I humbly entreat you.
  - Cősa ràde vólle usátà per lo comòne, ma stilemènte fáta. (Matt. Vill. 9. 28.) → A thing seldom used by the community, but usefully done.

† In order to know when these words are adjectives, and when adverbs, it is sufficient to observe whether, in the discourse, they are added to, or used for, a sub-
ANALOGY.

Adverbs formed of an adjective, and the adverbs presto, sovente, pertémpo, adágio, volentíri, affatto, may be used in a comparative and superlative degree, which is formed thus:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Italian</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tranquillamente</td>
<td>tranquilly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>piú tranquillamente</td>
<td>more tranquilly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tranquillissima-mente</td>
<td>very tranquilly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felicemente</td>
<td>happily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>meno felicemente</td>
<td>less happily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>felicissima-mente</td>
<td>very happily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schietto</td>
<td>candidly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>piú o meno schietto</td>
<td>more or less candidly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>schiettissima-mente</td>
<td>very candidly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lieto</td>
<td>merrily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>piú o meno lieto</td>
<td>more or less merrily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lietissima-mente</td>
<td>very merrily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>volentíri</td>
<td>willingly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>piú o meno volentíri</td>
<td>more or less willingly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>volentissima-mente</td>
<td>very willingly</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The adverbs bene, 'well'; and male, 'badly'; in their comparative and superlative, make,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Italian</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>meglio</td>
<td>better</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ottimamente o benissimo</td>
<td>very well</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>peggio</td>
<td>worse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pessimamente o malissimo</td>
<td>very badly</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Assai, in the superlative makes assaissimo, 'very much.'

stantive, or not; for, if so, they are adjectives; otherwise they are adverbs. Thus, in these examples,

'S f' meriti di voi assai o poco. If I deserved of you either much or little.

Bérgn manifesto di poco sensu. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) A manifest sign of little wisdom.

E per poco, se tu mi dicessi, che to andassi di qui a Perétola, to credo ch'io go there.

the word poco is an adverb in the first instance, where it modifies the verb meriti; but it is an adjective in the other two, where, in the first, it is added to the substantive sensu, and, in the second, stands for a substantive; being equivalent to poes cosa, 'little thing.'
ADVERBS.

Béne, póco, adágio, píano, tânto, as we have already observed at p. 86, have also a diminutive,

Benîno, pretty well; | adagîno, very slow;
pochîno, very little; | píanîno,
pocolîno, | tântîno,
pochettîno, very little.

Béne, has also an augmentative: benône, 'very well.'

ADVERBS IN COMMON USE.

Di stúbito, suddenly;
di bôto, presently;
in un bulêno, in an instant;
in un bâler d' occhio, in the [twinkling of an eye;
póco fa, a little while ago;
frá póco, in a short time;
un pézzo fà, some time ago;
délle vàlîte, at times;
all' improviso, unexpectedly;
alìa ventûra, at random;
all' avventura, in future;
a mínûto, in detail;
a vicênda, by turns;
a gûra, emulously;
a cáso, by chance;
a tórto, wrongly;
per accidênte, by chance;
per sôrte, ;
per avventûra, by chance;
pur tròppo,* too truly, too well;
di frêscô, newly;
di buôn grádo, willingly;
suo malgrádo, against one's will;
senza méno, positively;
quânto prima, very soon;
asu pôsta, at one's
asu sêmno, s pleasure;
da sénnîo, seriously;
a bêllo stúdio, designedly;
a bélâ pôsta, unless;
a méno che, unless;
se non che,† except;
da per tâto, everywhere;
per ogni dôve, everywhere;
ad un trâtto, at once;
di râdo, seldom, rarely;
di râro,;
infâtti, in fact;
difâtto,;
di gran lûnga, by far;
a lûngo andârê, in the long [run, in time;
a piu polâre, with all one's [might;
di màla voglia, unwillingly;
a un di pâesso, almost;
d' allôra in quâ, since that time;
d' ôra innànnî, henceforth;
in quel mentre, in or at that time;
di pûnto in pûnto, exactly;
di pûnto in bianco, point blank;
di quândo in quàndo, now
di trâtto in trâtto, and
di tânto in tânto, then;
il più per lo piú, on the whole,
[at the utmost.

* An elliptical expression for the phrase è pur tròppo vére, 'it is too true'; è pur tròppo bêne, 'it is too well.'

† An elliptical expression for the phrase È non fôsse, or fôsse státe, che, 'were it not,' or 'had it not been.'
Saviaménte sì spussono loro ambasciata. (Gio. Vill. I. 8. c. 1.)

Mángiano cò forestieri festevolmente. (Dav. Germ.)

L’altre donne, udita Pamphínea, avien già più particolarménte tra sé cominciato a trattár del módò. (Bocc. Introd.)

Assáti la véce lór chiáro l’abbaia. (Dant. Inf. 7.)

Cóme dolcè parla, e dolcè ride. (Petr. s. 126.)

Quando púre máncà delle cose nel luógo, díve nòi siamo, ce n’ andiamo in un altro felicissimamente. (Gell. Circ. I. 31.)

Nessún visse giammá più di me liéro. (Petr. s. 7.)

Quësta grasézza non impedi-se il ricevimento del métallo, ánzi l’ accieta piú volentieri dell’ altra terrá. (Ben. Cell. Oref.)

Io m’asterrá volentierissimamente da così fatta preparazione. (Red. Cons.)

Il quidé giá ottimamente la linguá sapéa. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

Tu ti porti malíssimo con co-ki al quidé tu desideri che gli Déi nócciano. (Varch. Sen. Ben. 6.)

Oh, mi rallegró assáissimo — Vedérvi vivo e prosperóso. (Ambr. Cot. 5. 6.)

Ègli stan pur benin con quellé bórse — Di rásá al cóllo. (Buon. Fier. Introd.)

Thus wisely they delivered their message.

They eat merrily with strangers.

The other ladies, having heard Pamphínea, had already begun more particularly to devise the means.

Their words reveal their fault too clearly.

How sweetly she speaks, and how sweetly she smiles.

Whenever things are wanting in the place where we are, we go to another very happily.

None ever lived more happy than I.

This richness [of this earth] does not prevent the metal being received in it; on the contrary it receives it better than the other earth.

I would abstain very willingly from such preparation.

Who knew already the language very well.

Thou conductest thyself very badly with him whom thou wishest that the gods should injure.

Oh, I rejoice pretty much to see you alive and prosperous.

They look pretty well with those bags of satin hung to their necks.
**ADVERBS.**

May you be pleased to lend to this pen for a very little while your wearied finger.

You ought to praise me a little.

Be assured, that I love you hugely.

---

**EXERCISE XXIII.**

Where thou yesterday a little before (to the) day? Where dost thou run? What fury urges thee no? — corrar? furia sospingere


how can this be? I have seen him here to-day. There must be there some places covered with small bushes and grass, where the hares now virgulto érba, lèpre and then can conceal themselves. It is not pòssano? nascondere — essere

this the earth, which I touched before. The boy terréno, toccare fanciúllo

not answering him, he began to call more loud. rispondere? cominciare chiamare

You are now already old and can ill endure èssere vecchio potètè durár

fatigue. Without thinking at all, as if he had fatica. Sénza pensare? quasi? avesse?

thought a long time (much time), he said. pensare? — tempo? disse.
behoves (to) me | to go soon to Florence. Ah! yes, 
conviene | andare | Firenze. Deh! ,
for the love of God | let it be done | quick. I 
per amore | Dio | facciasì
received, a little while ago, letters from Messina. 
ricevere,
| Go, | and | see | who cries above. How (much) 
vad, | vidi | piangere
far are we from (the) our quarters? | See | who 
contrada? | Vedete
knocks below. He hoped | to | be able to have 
picchiare | sperare | poter avere
the city of Lucca easily. He | goes | running here 
città | cassa, | va córrere
and there as if he were crazy. The good woman 
andare | essere pazzo.
returned | after | (the) her chest, and carried it back 
ritornare | per | cassa, | riportare
there from whence she had taken it. Tell me, whence 
avere levere. Dì, 
art thou, and of what condition art thou? 
esser, | condizione —
And he replied: "I am from Syria, and I am 
rispose: " esser | di | Sorta, — esser
a king." He acts carelessly. And having been 
operare trascurato.
put in prison, he was cruelly treated by them. 
messo | prigionie, | fu | crudelmente trattare
Observe it more particularly. And having departed 
osservare | particolare.
(himself) from thence, he went (thence) to Naples, 
si, — andò | ne | Napoli,
where he lived most tranquilly. 
visse | tranquillo.
PREPOSITIONS.

CHAPTER XIV.

PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS IN COMMON USE.

Di,* of; accanto, aside, about,
ad,† to, in, at; allato, near, by;
da,‡ from, by, on, at; attorno, about, around;
in,§ in, on, upon; dattorno, on, upon, about;
con, with; addosso, near, almost;
per, through, by, on ac-
count of, in order [to, for;
su, on, upon;
sópra, under;
sotto, amongst, within;
gra, in, in about;
tra, intr, prima, before; verso, at, with, in com-
infra, après, parallel with; ólra, towards;
dópo, after; iltre, beyond, besides;
dázi, tango, along;
inánzi, sino, till, until;
dinánzi, insino, as far as;
avánti, contra, against;
davánti, cóntro, cóntra,**
détro, a-fronte,†† opposite;
didértro, rimpétto, without;
éntré, dirimpétto,
dentro, sénza,†† except, excepted;
fuóra, sálvo, except, excepted;
óuóra, eccéllto, except, excepted;
óuóri, tránne, except, excepted;

* From the Celtic de, a sign of qualification. † From the Celtic da, 'at.'
‡ From the Celtic a, 'near,' 'joining with.' § From the Celtic on, 'in.'
‖ From the Latin apud: — Celtic ap, 'joint,' 'attached.'
¶ From the Latin versus: — Celtic grovo, 'to turn.'
** From the Celtic con, a sign of opposition; and trach, 'side.'
†† From the Latin from: — Celtic from, 'before.'
‡‡ (And sánza and san, used by old writers,) from the Latin sine: — Celtic sy, 'want,' 'privatión.'
The nature of most of the foregoing prepositions is such as to admit of no other significations than those which have been given above; there are however some which are made, in Italian, to express so many different relations, that it has been thought indispensable to add the following remarks:

The preposition *di* may express a relation of *possession*, of *extraction*, or of *qualification*; as,

- *il denario di lui*, his own money;
- *figlio del figliuolo*, son of the son;
- *la statua di marmo*, the statue of marble;
- *uomini di grosso ingegno*, men of dull understanding.

*A* may express a relation of *attribution*, of *end* or *tendency* of *action*, or of *proximity* to a *place*, *person*, or *thing*; as,

**AL TEMPO DELL’ IMPERADORE** in the time of the emperor

- *Federigo Primo*, Frederic the First;

---

* From the Latin *justa* — Celtic *ajusta*, to adjust.

† Some of the foregoing prepositions are the same as the adverbs; as, *sopra*, *sotto*, *prima*, *appresso*, *dopo*, *dentro*, *difunri*, &c., which, when they are followed or preceded by a noun, a pronoun, or a verb which they govern, are always prepositions, but otherwise are adverbs. Thus in the following examples,

> *O via mettiti avanti, io ti servò appresso.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

> *Dalla madre della giovane prima, e appresso da Currado sopraprassì farono.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Now go before, I will follow after thee.

They were first surprised by the mother of the girl, and afterwards by Currado.

The word *appresso*, in the first instance is a *preposition* because it governs the pronoun *ti*; but in the second is an *adverb* because it governs no other word.
PREPOSITIONS.

VÉNGA A VEDÉRLA, 
chè il vósto lignaggio AN-
DÁSSE A POVERTÀDE, 
TROVÁNDOSI A PARÍGII, 
ALLÁTO ÁLLA DÓNNA, 
s’ AVVICINÁVA ÁLLE TÉRRE 
del Dúca, 
let him come to see her; 
that your lineage should be-
come poor; 
finding himself in Paris; 
by the side of the lady; 
he approached the land of the 
Duke.

Da may express a relation of derivation, of departure, 
of separation, of dependence, of difference, of designa-
tion, of destination, of similitude, of fitness, aptitude, or 
capability, of presence, of passage through or by, of un-
certainty of number, of time, of place, of loneliness, or of 
instrumentality; as,

Cino da Pistoia, 
le grázie vénsono da Dío, 
tornándo da Parígi, 
partiti da cotésti, 
m’ allontána dal vólgo, 
DÍPÈNDE DA queL PUNTO, 
ALTRE’ ÚMÔ DA queLLO che 
to sóno, 
Gugliélmo dal Córno, 
Cino of Pistoia; 
favors come from God; 
returning from Paris; 
go away from those spirits; 
she separates me from the 
common people; 
it hangs upon that point; 
a different man from what I 
am now; 
William [surnamed] from the 
Horn; 
etatable things; 
a foolish man; 
before himself; 
before the house of the lady; 
above ninety thousand mouths; 
a long time since; 
to this side; 
of me; by yourself; 
built by Tarquin.
Besides the above relations, the preposition da is often used to express with brevity the habitation of a person; and is equivalent to the words a casa, a casa di, 'to one's house';* as,

*da [or a casa di] me, to me [or to my house];
*da [or a casa di] lui, to his house;
*da [or a casa di] lei, to her house;
*dal [or a casa del] Cardinale, to the Cardinal's.

In expresses a relation of interiority, or a relation between two objects of which the one contains, and the other is contained; as,

dormiva in un letticciuolo, he slept in a little bed;
corsi in mercato, I ran to the market;
era in Parigi, in un albergo, there were in Paris, in a hotel.

The Italians consider as containing-objects, the divisions of time, the parts of one's body, the apparel we wear, and sometimes even the surface of bodies; as,

cento novelle raccontate in dieci giorni, one hundred stories related in ten days;
pudica in faccia, chaste in her countenance;
la corona in fronte, the crown on the forehead;
in abito di pellegrini, in pilgrim's dress;
gli furono stracciati i panni, all the clothes he had on were torn;
in mare, e in terra, on the sea, and on the land.

Con expresses a relation of company; and the Italians

* The Italian has derived this usage from the Celtic language, in which the word da was a synonyme of, and often used for, the word cas or chas, 'habitation'; the casa of the Italian.
generally consider as companions the instruments, the means, or the manner in which an action is performed,—

vengo a desinare con voi,
che con lo stile, con la pen-
na, o col pennello non
dipignesse,
sacendogli cénno col lá mà-
no,
incomincia a dire con umil
voce,
con fatiga gli rispose,

I come to dine with you;
which with his style, with his
pen or with his pencil, he
could not paint;
making him a sign with her
hand;
began to say with a humble
voice;
with difficulty he replied to
him.

Per expresses the way through, or the means by, which
a thing is done; the reason why, or the object for which,
it is done; it expresses also a relation of space with
regard to time or place; and a relation of instrumentali-
ty, of qualification, of destination, or of distribution;
as,

per me si va nella città do-
lente,
per li cui prieghi costei
sovvvenni,
non per crudeltà della
donna amata, ma per so-
vérchio fuoco,
vo pé dolci pomi,
per più di dimorando,
per li campi, per le vie, e
per le case morteno,
promessi a me per lo verá-
ce doça,
e riputato per santo,
saréi per Currado ogni cosa,
dici ducati per uno,

through me you go into the
city of woe;
at whose entreaties I have
aided this one;
not on account of the cruelty
of the beloved lady, but on
account of an excessive
flame;
I go for the sweet fruit;
remaining for several days;
through the fields, through
the streets, and in the hous-
es they died;
promised to me by my sure
guide;
he is reputed a holy man;
I would do for Currado every
thing;
ten ducats each.
**ANALOGY.**

*Per* is also used to *entreat* or to *swear by*; as,

\[ \text{PER quellà pàce che per vòi s' aspètì, ditene . . . .} \]
\[ \text{TI GIÚRO, PER quello amore che to ti pòrto, che . . . .} \]

by that peace which is prepared for you, tell us . . . .; I swear to thee, by that love, which I bear thee, that . . . .

The preposition *a*, as it was mentioned p. 37, followed by a word beginning with *a vowel* takes a *d* after it, and *su* followed by another *u* takes an *r*; *fuora, fuori*, and *fino, sino, infino, insino*, followed by a word beginning with *a consonant* often *lose* the *last vowel*; and *verso, loses* the *last syllable*; as,

\[ \text{ad ubìmo d' intellètto,} \]
\[ \text{sur un' ásse,} \]
\[ \text{infin da óra,} \]
\[ \text{voltà ver me,} \]

*to a man of sound judgment; upon a board; henceforth; turned towards me.*

**EXAMPLES.**

_E con il denáro di lui il pagò._ (Bocc.)

_Fù figliùlo del figliuòlo del Conte d' Artésè._ (Gio. Vill. 11. 54.)

_La statúta di mármo, o di legno, o di metallo, rimàsa per memória d' alcùn valènte ubìmo._ (Dant. Conviv.)

_Érano ubìmini e fèmmine di gróssso ingéngo._ (Bocc. Intr.)

_Al tèmpo dell' imperadòre Federìgò Prímo._ (Bocc. g.10. n. 9.)

_Chi noi crède, vèngà égli a vedérìa._ (Petr. s. 210.)

And paid him with his own money.

He was son of the son of the Count of Artois.

The statue of marble, or of wood, or of metal, remaining there in memory of some great man.

They were men and women of dull understanding.

In the time of the emperor Frederic the First.

He who does not believe it, let him come to see her.
PREPOSITIONS.

A voi non vi sarébbe onore che 'l vostro lignaggio andâtisé a povertàde. (Nov. Adi. 46.)

Trovândosi égli una volta a Parigi in povero stato. (Bocc.)

Allâto allà donna la pòse. (Bocc.)

Alle térre del Dùca s'avvicinava. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Écco Cín dã Pistòia. (Petr. Fy. Am. 4.)

Da Dio vénghono le grâzie. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.)

Da Parígi a Génova tornândo. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

E tu che sè' costi, ánima viva, — Partiti da cotesti che sono morti. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Quêsta sóla dal volgo m'âl-lontâna. (Petr. c. 19.)

Da quel punto — Dîpende il Cielo e tutta la natura. (Dant. Par. 28.)

Quand' èra in pàrte altr' uom da quel ch' è sonò. (Petr. s. 1.)

Il quale avea nóme Gugliélmò dal Córno. (Gio. Vill. 9.)

Le cõse da mangiare non si stimano dall' uso o dall' affetto, ma dalla consuetudine. (Varch.)

Tu sè' più da pòco che Mâso, che sì lasciava fuggire i pèsèi cótti. (Lasc. Spir. 5. 7.)

Pòco avânti da sè, vide le cèneri rimâsse d' A'ttila, flagèllo di Dio. (Bocc. Floc. 4.)

Dal frâte partìtosi, dalla càsa n' andò della donna. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

It would not be honorable to you, that your lineage should become poor.

Finding himself once in Paris in poor circumstances.

By the side of the lady he put it.

He approached the lands of the Duke.

Behold Cino of Pistoia.

Favors come from God.

Returning from Paris to Genoa.

And thou who standest there, living spirit, go away from those spirits who are dead.

She alone separates me from the common people.

Heaven and nature hangs upon that point.

When I was in part a different man from what I am now.

Who was named William [surnamed] from the Horn.

Eatable things are not valued from their use or their taste, but from habit.

Thou art more foolish than Mâso, who let the cooked fish escape from him.

At a little distance before himself, he saw the ashes left by A'ttila, the scourge of God.

Leaving the friar, he passed before the house of the lady.
Stimâvasi avere in Firenze da Novanta mila bocche, tra uomi,
mini, femmine, e fanciulli. (Gio. Vill. 11. 93.)

Già da gran tempo nullo più ne conosci. (Alf. Fil. 4. 2.)

Si dura poca fatica a farlo inchinare da questa o da quella parte. (Mach.)

Pòscia rispose lui : " Da me non venì. " (Dant. Pur. 1.)

Voi ve ne avvedréte da per voi nel leggere questo frammento. (Red. lett.)

Il campidoglio fu edificato da Tarquinio, assediado da Brenno, e liberato da Camillo. (Vanz.)

Torna qui da me. (Mach.)

Adunque, andatevene da lui. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Essendo Salabaetto da lei andato una sera. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

Dal cardinale di Morone, appena arrivato, andarono tutti gli ambasciadori. (Pall.)

In un letticciuolo assai piccolo si dormiva. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Io corsi in mercato per dir telo. (Mach. Coin.)

Era in Parigi, in un albergo, alquànti mercatanti Italiani. (Bocc.)

Intendo di raccontare cento novelle, raccontate in dieci giorni. (Bocc. Intr.)

Pudica in fàccia, e nell andre onesta. (Dant. Pur. 8.)

It was thought that there were in Florence about ninety thousand mouths, among men, women, and children.

It is already a long time since thou forgottest them all [thy pangs of remorse].

One meets with very little difficulty in making him lean to this or to that side.

Then he replied to him : " I did not come of myself."

You will perceive it by yourself in reading this fragment.

The capitol was built by Tarquin, besieged by Brennus, and delivered by Camillus.

Return here to me [or to this my house].

Go, then, to his house.

Salabaetto having gone one evening to her house.

All the ambassadors went to the Cardinal of Morone's, as soon as he arrived.

He slept in a very small bed.

I ran to the market to tell it to you.

There were in Paris, in a hotel, a number of Italian merchants.

I intend to relate one hundred stories, to be related in ten days.

Chaste in her countenance, and modest in her carriage.
Fulgévami già in fronde la corôna. (Dant. Pur. 8.)

In ábito di peregríni. (Bocc.)

Tutti i pánni gli furono in dosso stracciati. (Bocc. g. l. n. 1.)

Comandamento ebbero dal lor comune d’abbattere la forza dè' Viniziani in mare, e in terra. (Gio. Vill.)

Signóre, io vengo a desinare con vó, e con la vóstra briga-ta. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Niúna cosa fu, che egli con lo stíle, con la pénnà, o col penneèlo non dipignéssé sìmile a quélia. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

E l’ invitò ad avvicinársi, facéndogli cénno cólla manó. (Bocc.)

Incominciò con úmil voce a díre — Quél ch’io vó all’ altro canto differire. (Arios. Fur.)

Tito, non restando di piangere, con fatíca cóst gli rispóse. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Per me si va nélle cittá dolente, — Per me si va nell’ eterno dolore, — Per me si va tra la perduta gente. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Dómana scése dal cielo, per li cúi prieghi — Délla mia compagna costúi sovvennì. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

Non per crudeltà délla dòna amáta, ma per sovérchio fuóco nelía mente concéto da poco regolato appetito. (Bocc. Proem.)

Láscio lo féle, e vo fé’ dolci pomi — Proméssi a me per lo veráce Dúca. (Dant. Inf. 16.)

The crown thone already on my forehead.

In pilgrim’s dress.

All the clothes he had on were torn.

They were ordered by their community to destroy all the forces, which the Venetians had on the sea, and on the land.

Sir, I come to dine with you, and with your company.

There was nothing, that he could not with his style, with his pen, or with his pencil, paint like it.

And she invited him to approach, making him a sign with her hand.

He began to tell with an humble voice what I choose to leave for the next canto.

Titus, without ceasing from weeping, with difficulty replied to him thus.

Through me you go into the city of woe, through me you go into eternal pain, through me you go amongst the damned spirits.

A dame descended from heaven, at whose entreaties I have aided this one with my guidance.

Not on account of the cruelty of the beloved lady, but on account of the excessive flame kindled in his mind by an unruled passion.

I leave the gall, and go for the sweet fruit promised to me by my sure guide.
There remaining for several days.

Through the villages, and through the fields; through the streets, and in the houses, both by day and by night, they died.

Having been a very bad man in his life, he is in death reputed a holy man.

I would do for Currado everything that I could.

And gave them ten ducats each.

O chosen spirits, for that peace, which, as I deem, is for all of you prepared, tell us where the mountain low declines.

I swear to thee by that indissoluble love, which I bear thee, that the fourth month will not pass, ere thou wilt see me again.

It does not seem undeserved to a man of sound judgment.

Beaten upon a board with a knife.

Let every other thing be freely yours henceforth.

Turned towards me, she said.
EXERCISE XXIV.

He gave us the key of his house. This gentle lady being very often urged by the messages and entreaties of each one of them. Both inflamed by a fierce vengeance, turned towards (to) these walls (the) their sword still warm with civil blood.

It is believed that he is the richest prelate that there is in the church of God (from) the Pope excepted. They were all garlanded with leaves of oak. We will give thee so many blows upon (the) your head, that we will make thee fall down dead. I have a farm very near to the bank of the river. Then came the time of going out against the prince, who was approaching (himself) already to the lands of the Duke. They made him put to sit down just opposite to the door of the room, whence the abbot was obliged.
to come out into the dining room. Here thou — uscire

seest a temple by-the-side of the sea. The emperor being one day between these two sages, the
vedere tempio a mare.

peraltre Essere giorno

one stood on the right of him, and the other
stare a destra gli,
on the left. Having gone out from the city they a sinistra. — Uscire città

put themselves on the way. He put a ring on
mettere si via. — Mettere anello

the finger of Torello. Looking fixedly in his face — at him fixedly in the face, in order to
— fiso viso,

see whether he was speaking seriously. Having vedere se dire

put (herself) on a great black pelisse, he arranged Mettere nero, — accocciare

himself in that in such a manner, that he looked like a bear. With the best harmony in the world all (and) four dined together. He began with the
guaitro desinare insieme. — incominciare

piece of wood to give him the greatest blows in stecca dardo Gil maggiore colpo

the world, now on (the) his head, and then on mondo, — testa, e

(the) his sides. I wish first to go to Rome, and — fiasco volere andare Roma,

there to see him (the) whom thou sayest to be — vedere dire

that he is vicar of God on earth. There sounded essere vicario Dio terra. — Suonare
through the city a wonderful report, that the tombs of the Scipios were discovered. By that steep way I arrived at the tombs of the valorous race.

Neither by letter did she dare let him hear it. Not seeing through the wood any path. You will receive a hundred (of them) for every-one. He went to Ravenna in-order-to speak to the army. No, I never will mention it — will not mention it ever.

a low voice he replied thus. This ferocious man, having usurped with (the) frauds and with (the) acts of violence a throne not his own, sought to preserve it with (the) terror and with (the) cruelty.

Without any fail I promise to thee, upon (the) my faith, that within — among a few days thou wilt find thyself with me. I wish that we should descend (until) there below.
CHAPTER XV.

CONJUNCTIONS.

CONJUNCTIONS IN COMMON USE.

E, o, nè, se, ma, però, che, pùre, già, ìanzi, anche, ânco, eziantìo, altresì, ancòra, eppùre, ossia, ovvero, oppùre, nemmèno, nemmáncò, neppùre, néânche, tampòco, nettampòco, se mài, se pùre, se però, se non, se non che,

and; or, either; nor, neither; if, whether; but; that; yet, nevertheless; yet, already; nay, rather, on the contrary; also, even; also, even, again; yet, nevertheless; or, either; neither, not even; if ever, if indeed; if however; unless, except; but;

non già, non sòlo, non che, purchè, a mèno chè, ìanzi che, ìanzi che no, si, costì, còme, sicòme, sicchè, così che, taltchè, giacchè, ciòè, ciòè a dire, vâle a dire, almèno, almanòco, di più, inoltre, oltrechè, oltraccìò, d' altrònè, dúnque, adúnque, ìnde, laùnde, quindi, perciò,

not at all, not indeed; not only; not merely; provided; unless; rather, sooner; rather than not; rather so than; otherwise; so, thus; as, like; so, thus, wherefore; so, so that; since; that is; that is to say; at least; moreover; besides, besides this; then; therefore; wherefore, whereupon; therefore, for; which reason;
CONJUNCTIONS.

accio,
acciocchè,
affine,
affinchè,
ché,
perché,
poichè,
pochè,
pocciachè,
perocchè,
imperocchè,
imperciocchè,
conciossiachè,
quantunque,
sebbene,
benchè,
comechè,
avvegnachè,
ancorchè,
contuttocchè,
nostante,
nondimeno,
nientedimeno,
con tutto ciò,
non per tanto,
non per questo,
ciò non ostante,
ciò non dimeno,
tuttavia,

in sòmama,
in fine,
sia che,
vuoi,
del resto,
per altro,
tanto,
quanto,
quando,
quando anche,
in guisa che,
in modo che,
in maniera che,
di modo che,
di maniera che,

in short,
in conclusion;
in conclusion;
whether,
or, either;
otherwise,
besides;
as;
when;
even when;

so that, in such
a manner;
in the mean
time, mean-
while, whilst;
whilst,
whilst that;
save, saving,
except;

perhaps;
now.

Many of these conjunctions, as nondimeno, ciò non ostante, &c. contain in themselves a pronoun, a preposition, an adverb, &c.; but, from their office of joining sentences together, they are commonly reckoned amongst conjunctions, though in fact they are but conjunctive phrases.

* Some of these conjunctions might be mistaken for prepositions or adverbs, and the conjunction che, for the relative pronoun che, 'who,' 'which,' 'that'; their character however will soon be ascertained by considering the office which they perform in a sentence. Thus in the following examples:

Idò ni mi ha fatto tanta grazia, che io

A'nni la mia morte ho veduto alcuni della
miò fratelli. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Attempatilla era, e A'nni superba che

no. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

Po era ben cost, me non per natura,

A'nni per una informità. (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 1.)

God has granted me such a favor as to
enable me to see some of my brothers
before my death.

She was a little advanced in years and
rather proud.

I was indeed not naturally so, but by
a disease.

the word d'nni is a preposition in the first instance because it governs la mia morte:

32*
ANALOGY.

The conjunction _ne_ is sometimes used in the signification of _e, ‘and’_; as,

*dolci né céri,*  
*parlai né scrissi,*  

sweet and dear;  
I spoke and wrote.

_Ma_ is often used in the signification of _più, ‘more’_; as,*

*ma che uno,*  
*non ma che di sospiri,*  

more than one;  
no more than sighs.

_Che_ is sometimes used in the signification of _fra or tra, ‘between’_; as,

*méglia di diecimila dóbbre,*  
*che in giòtie, e che in denári,*  

more than ten thousand pistoles between jewels and money.

_Pùre_ is often used in the signification of _ancóra, ‘also,’ ‘even’_; _sólo, solamente, ‘only’_; as,

*è pùre peccató,*  
*s’io avéssì avuto pùre un pensierazzo,*  
*natura non avéa ivi pùr di-pinto,*  

it is also a sin;  
had I had even the slightest thought;  
nature had not only painted there.

The conjunctions _quantúnque, sebbéne, benché, comeché, avvegnaché, anchorché, contuttoché_, are generally followed by one of the conjunctives, _pùre,_

it is an _adverb_ in the second because it modifies the verb _éra_; and it is a _conjunction_ in the last because it _connects_ the clause (_éra_) _per natura_ with (_éra_) _per dina informit._

And in the following:

_Cominciárono a díre, ché quélle_, _ché égill avéa risposto, non veniva a dir nul- 
le._ (Bocc. _g._ 6. _n._ 9.)

They began to say that what he had replied was without meaning.

_the first che is a conjunction, because it connects díre, with what follows_; and
_the second is a relative pronoun, because it refers to quélle, its antecedent._

* From these and similar examples it seems as if the Italian _ma_ were derived from the Latin _magis_: — the Celtic _mai, ‘great.’*
CONJUNCTIONS.

nonostante, nondiméno, nientediméno, con tutto ciò, ciò non ostante, ciò non di méno, non per tanto, non per questo tuttavia; as their correlatives; as,

*comeché varie cose gli an-dasse per lo pensiero di fare, pure deliberò . . . . ,* although it passed through his mind to do various things, yet he determined . . . .

Often the *correlative* conjunction is suppressed; as,

Arriguccio, *contuttocché fosse mercatante,* era [nondiméno] un fiero uomo,

*Arriguccio, although a merchant, was a proud man.*

*Non solo, non che,* are followed by *ma, ma ancora;* as,

*sia bene di costi fatti cose non che gli amici, ma gli stra-nieri di ripigliare,*

*it is well to reprimand for such things, not only friends, but even strangers;*

*il vino non solo conforta il naturale calore, ma ancora chiarifica il sangue,*

*wine not only assists the natural heat, but it clears the blood.*

*Non che* is often an *elliptical expression* for the phrase *non solamente dico che,* *ma,* 'I say not only that, but'; as,

*spéro trovar pietà non che perdono [non solamente dico che spéro trovar per-dono, ma pietà],*

*I hope to find not only pardon, but pity;*

*avrebbero potuto muovere la guerra, non che difender-si [dico non solamente che avrebbero potuto di-fendersi, ma muovere la guerra],*

*they could have not only defended themselves, but even waged war.*

*Tanto* is followed by *quanto,* and sometimes by *che;* corresponding to the English words *both . . . and;* as,

*TANTO CRUDI QUANTO COTTI,* both raw and cooked;

*TANTO MÁSCHI, CHE FEMMINE,* both men and women.
The conjunctions e, o, followed by a word beginning with a vowel often take a d after them; and pure, ep-pure, oppure, almèno, nemmèno, óra, ancóra, followed by a consonant drop the last vowel; as,

dùre, ed éspre battaglie,
on'omba, od úomo cérto,

che il cuòr mi preme giù pur
pensándo,
ch'ancóra lassù vedère spé-
ra,

hard and severe battles;
whether a spirit or a living
man;
which to think of oppresses
my heart;
which he hopes to see also
there in heaven.

Pùre, già, óra, are sometimes mere expletives; as,

la còsa andò pur così,
fossero tassi pur gial disposti,
órà le parole furono assai,

the thing passed just so;
would that they were disposed;
now the words were many.

EXAMPLES.

Se gli òcchi subì tì fur dòlcì,

If her eyes were sweet and dear
to thee.

Quanto di lei parlò, nè scrìs-

How much I spoke and wrote
si. (Petr. s. 296.)
of her.

Or cuiù chiàmi tu Iddio? Ògli

Now whom callest thou God?
non è ma che ùno. (Nov. Ant.
There is no more than one.
78.)

Quivi, secondo che per oscol-
tàre,—Non arà òpanto, ma che

There, as well as my ear could
di bosphùri—Cho v'aurà etérna
note, no other plaints were heard
facévan tremàre. (Dant. Inf. 4.)
than sighs, which caused the etern-

Donòlì che in gòixe, e che

He gave her between jewels,
in vasellàmentì d' óro e d'arién-
and gold and silver vases, and
to, e che in dénàri, quello che
money, what would be worth
vélsè mègliò d' àltre dìcimila
more than ten thousand pistoles.
dòbbe. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

E pogòdàmo, che non lo faccia-

And let us suppose, that we do
dò mo a málizia, purè nientidimé-
don't do it through malice, yet
no è purè peccàto. (Cavalc.\nnevertheless it is also a sin.
Pungill. 195.)
CONJUNCTIONS.

O, s'io avessi avuto pure un pensieruzzo di fare l'una di quelle cose, che odi dite, credete odi, che faccio m' avesse tanto sostenuta? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Non avéa pur natura ivi dipinto, — Ma di soavità di mil-le odori — Vi facea un incognito indistinto. (Dant. Pur. 7.)

Comech'è varie cose gli andasse per lo pensiero di fà-re, purè, vedendo il re, delibé- rò . . . . . (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

Éra Arriguccio, contutto-ché fosse mercantante, un fié-ro òmonò. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

A odi sta bène di costè fatte cose, non che gli amíci, ma gli straniéri di ripigliare. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Il vino non sólo confórta il naturál calóre, ma ancora chiarifíca il sanguè tóbido. (Cresc. 4; 48; 2.)

Spéro trovári piétà, non che ferdóno. (Petr. s. 1.)

Tante migiudia armáti, a pié e a caválllo, avrébbero, con altro cápo, potuto muóver la guér- ra, non che dipéndersi. (Dav. Stor.)

I frutti sono sanissimi tánto crüdi, quánto cotti. (Red. lett. 2.)

Dimbrano salubramente in quell' aria di colliña, tànto mas-chi, che fémmine. (Lib. Curr. Malatt.)

Le détte nasíoni ébbero dûre, ed òspre battáglie. (Gio. Vill. b. 6. c. 29.)

"Miserére di me," gridáa luí, — "Quá di che tu sti, od òmbra, od uómò cérto." (Dant Inf. 1.)

Oh! had I had even the slight-est thought of doing one of those things which you say, do you believe that God would have assisted me?

Nature not only had painted there, but of the sweetness of a thousand smells had made an unknown, undistinguishable fragrance.

Although it passed through his mind to do various things, yet, seeing the king, he determined . . . . .

Arriguccio, although a merchant, was a proud man.

It is well for you to reprimand for such things, not only your friends, but even strangers.

Wine not only assists the natural heat, but it clears also the turbid blood.

I hope to find not only pardon, but pity.

So many thousand armed men, on foot and on horseback, would have, under another captain, not only defended themselves, but waged war.

Fruits are very wholesome, both raw and cooked.

In that mountain air both men and women live in very good health.

Said nations had hard and severe battles.

"Take pity upon me," cried I to him, "whatever thou be, whether a spirit or a living man."
ANALOGY.

Thou wishest that I should recall the desperate grief, which to think of oppress my heart, before I tell it.

Per mirar la sembianza di Co-lui, — Ch' ancór lassù nel ciel vedére spéra. (Petr. s. 14.)

In order to see the image of Him whom he hopes to see also there in heaven.

LA COSA ANDÒ PUR COSÌ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

The thing happened just so.

O'ra fóssero èssi pur gia dispósti a venire. (Bocc. Int.)

Now would that were disposed to come.

ÓRA LE PARÔLE FÚRONO AS-sái, ed il rammarichio della dön- na gràndè. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Now the words were many, and the sorrow of the lady great.

EXERCISE XXV.

The waters, and the air, and the branches, and áqua, áura, rámo,

the little birds, and the fishes, and the flowers, and uccello, péscè, fiorè,

the grass speak of love. erba parlàre amòre. | I do not go away nonò miò allontâno,

neither from (the) Mount Parnassus, nor from the Mônè Parnàssò, Músò.

Muses. And it appears to me to see with-her la-

dies and damsels, and they are savins and bee-ch-trees.

na donzèlla, — essere abète, fàggio.

Neither by message, nor by letter did she dare to ambasciàta, lettere — ardùre, di |

let him know it. Nimrod was the first king, or farglielo sapérè. Nembròtìt essere, |

ruler, or collector (of assemblage) of people.* I will rettòre, ragunatóre congregaziónè gente. di-

* People, in the plural — peoples.
tell perhaps a thing not credible, but true. He was not only killed, but devoured even to the bones. He lost every hope, not only of ever having her again, but even of seeing her. "And for what reason?" said Ferondo: "Because thou wast jealous." Alexander although he had great fear, yet he remained quiet. Surely, although thou affirmest it, I do not believe, that thou believest it. "Go then," said the lady, "and call him." Since you promise me to pardon me, I will tell it to you. Therefore I arrest (myself); but why goest thou? Although we are in the month of July — be of July, I thought this morning I should freeze — to freeze. I wish, that she should send me a small lock of the beard of Nicostratus. Now it happened, that the king of France ... He was guarding the passes with more than three thousand horsemen, between German and Lombards. Provided you have the mind to keep secret what — that which I
ANALOGY.

will say to you. The cranes have only one
rágiondâ per non hâanno
leg and one foot. I see, that he wishes, that I
gâmba piè. vedere, volere;
should do what that which, I never not ever,
faccia, ,
wished to do, that is, that I should relate (the)
volerà fare, ,
his wickedness.
cattività.

CHAPTER XVI.

INTERJECTIONS.

INTERJECTIONS IN COMMON USE.

Ah! 
ah! ha! alas! ah! ha! aime! ahimè! aime!
alas (me)!

eh! e!
eh!
ehimè! cime!
alas (thee)!

ih!
ih!
oh! o! oh! ho! o!

uh!
uh!

ahi!
ahi! ala!
here! ho hey! o! Dio!
alas (him or her)!

éhi!
ho there! aiuto!
woe!

éhi! ói!
ahi! oh!

úhi!

ah! alas! pray! lasso!

ah! alas! pray! lasso me!

ah! alas! pray! lasso me!

prithhée!
doh!

o! pshaw! povero me!
wretched that I am!

ah, ah! ah, ah!
miserò me!
unfortunate that I am!

eh, eh!
eh, eh!

oh, oh!

oho!

poh!

puh! pu!

hallo!

èia!

holla! ho there!

olà!

beato me!
happy that I am!

beato me!
happy me!

félice me!
happy me!
INTERJECTIONS.

The interjections lapso, póvero, miserò, meschíno, beató (me!), are mere adjectives, and when used by a female, take the feminine termination: — lássa, póvere, misera (me!), &c.; and in the plural make, lássi, póveri (nói!), &c., for the masculine; and lásse, póvere (nói!), &c. for the feminine; as,

LÁSSA ME! in che mal' bra alas! in what evil hour was I born;
MISERI NÓI! che síam, se Id- miserable that we are! what
dio ci lásçia? becomes of us, if God forsakes us?

* It is important to observe, that, as some of these interjections are used to express different, and even contrary, emotions or affections of the mind, their exact signification can only be determined by the sense of the words which accompany them, or give rise to the exclamation.
Brávo! zitto! chéto! are also adjectives, and, when used in speaking to a female, or to more than one male or female, follow the same rule; as,

\[ \text{brávo! cóme quândo?} \quad \text{bravo! as when?} \]
\[ \text{zütti, un p6'}! \quad \text{hush, a little!} \]

Brávo! is also used in its superlative, and makes bravissimo! bravissima! bravissimi! bravissime, 'bravissimo!'

**EXAMPLES.**

Oimè! lássa me! dolénte me! Alas! unfortunate that I am!
in che mal' óra nácqui. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.) in what evil hour was I born.

Miserí nói! che siâm, se idió ci láscia? (Alf. Saul. 1. 1.) Miserable that we are! what becomes of us, if God forsakes us.

Bráva! cóme quândo? (Manz. Prom. Spos. c. 1.) Bravo! as when?

Zütti, un p6'! ch' elle dörmo-no. (Buon. Fier.) Hush a little! for they are sleeping.

Many of the foregoing interjections are elliptical expressions of, and equivalent to, perfect sentences; as, olà, for instance, which stands for O [tu, che séi] lâ, 'O thou, who art there'; orsù, for óra [lévati or levátiv] su, 'now rise up'; via, for [vâ' or andâte]'via; chéto, for [sta or stâte] che'to, 'be still'; corâggio, for [abbii or abbiâte] corâ'ggio, 'have courage.'; viva, for viva [égli or èlla lungamente], 'may he or she live long'; bêne, for [sta or vâ] be'ne, 'it is well'; brávo, brâva, for [séi or siête] bra'vo, bra'va; oh bêlla, for oh [quéstâ è] be'la-la, 'oh this is fine'; &c.; to which may be added máńco mâle, or méño mâle, 'less evil,' 'not so bad,' 'better so'; which is often used as an interjection, and is equivalent to the phrase [il] mâ'le [è] mâńco, or me'ño, [che non
Ah! how many steps thou losest through the for-
Pássio — perdere[2]| sél-
est! "Ah!" [said he, "valiant men, ah! com-
va[3]!

Panions, ah! brothers, keep (the) your place." Alas!
Pígno, fratello, tenere luogo."

Mercy; for heaven's sake! Alas! blind ungrateful world!
O! happy souls! Wretched that I am! I have
Felice[4] anima[1]!

Loved thee more than (the) my own life. Fie! go
Amare[3] — víta. andare

On. Is it possible, that thou art alive? Marry!
Óltre.

I recant (myself.) How many tears, alas! have I
Ridere[5] | lágrima, avéré —

Already shed! Woe to you, perverse souls! Never
Spargere[6] | prava[5] anima[1]! non is-

Ho! to see the heaven again. Hush! hush! other-
Perâte mái | vedere — cielo — — — — —

Wise we begin again. Holla! where art thou? Come!

Let us see. Up, up! citizens, let every-one arm himself
Vedere. Cittadino, — armare[3]

Speedily to the defence. Oh! thou art in great haste.
Velocé difesa. avéré — gran frètta

Alas! how miserable is (the) our fortune! "The cava-
Quanto misero[8] éssere[1] fortuna! cava-

Exercise XXVI.
lier said: "I wish to leave thee, and serve God."

The demon replied: "Pshaw! why wishest thou to leave me?" O poor me! (that) I shall never be good again for any thing. Pray! my friend, why wishest thou to give thyself this trouble? "Alas!" said the other, "what is that which thou sayest?" Come! I will wait for thee in the house. Away! do not have any fear, I will carry thee to the house safe and sound. Silence, son, do not make noise; let (the) thy father sleep. Oh! you make me laugh.

He cried out: "Oh, oh!" which cry the cranes began to fly. Oh, blind! oh, wretched! oh, foolish man! oh, how infirm thou art! Alas (him)! wretched (him)! that the hog had been stolen from him — to him. Heyday! how well in tune she is! Courage, young men, let us assault manly, and with cheerful front, these drowsy people. Away, stay there with the other dogs.
PART III.

ITALIAN SYNTAX.

CHAPTER I.

ORDER AND POSITION OF WORDS.

Words may be arranged in Italian either in the natural order of the ideas which they are used to convey; as, io son ricco, e spendo il mio in metter tavola, 'I am rich, and spend my money in keeping a good table'; or in a somewhat different order, in which euphony or emphasis is consulted; as, in quella dimorando, poco o niènte potrebbe del suo valor dimostrare [for potrebbe dimostrare poco o niènte del suo valor, dimorando in quella], 'He could show little or nothing of his valor, remaining there.' Hence there are two different constructions, the one called simple or direct, the other inverse or indirect.

SIMPLE CONSTRUCTION.

In the simple construction, the subjective is always put before the verb. It is generally a pronoun, a noun, an adjective or a verb used as a noun, or a phrase; as,

Io amo,  
Pietro fugge,  
Il bello picce,  

I love;  
Peter flies;  
the beautiful pleases;
IL SÙO PARLÁRE mi piácque
si,
CHE TU CON NÔI TI RIMÂNGA, n' è cáró,
[her speaking] her conversation pleased me so;
we should be very glad, if thou
wouldst remain with us.

The objective is put after the verb. It is generally
a pronoun, a noun, an adjective, a verb, or a phrase; as,
guardâte me,
âmô Guiscârdô,
pêrdonô il bêllo,
look at me;
I love Guiscard;
they lose [the beautiful] the
beauty;
avingo compiûtô il sùo can-
târë,
having finished her singing;
significô il fàtto cóme stâ-
va,
declared the fact as it was.

If the subjective or objective have an article, this
article is put before them; as,
gli uômini sônô cápo dèlle
fëmmine,
[the] men are the head of wo-
men;
IL capitâno cådde, e sconciòs-
sì il piède,
the captain fell, and sprained
[the foot] his foot.

The adjectives belonging to the subjective and objec-
tives are put immediately after them; as,
gli scolâri mûrigërâtì e di-
ligëntì stëdiâno,
the well-behaved and diligent
scholars study;
il mâestro prëmia gli scolâri
ATTÉNTI E STUDIÔSI,
the master rewards the atten-
tive and studious scholars.

Any other word which is dependent on the subjective
or objective is also put immediately after them; as,
la virtù di Pålô fu ricon-
noscîuta,
the virtue of Paul was ac-
knowledged;
riconnoscêva néi discendênti
it acknowledged in the de-
scendants the virtue [of the
la virtù del padrê,
father] of their father.

The relative pronoun is put after its antecedent; as,
ORDER OF WORDS.

Lo scoláre, il quále nascóso étara, the scholar, who had concealed himself.

The adverb is put immediately after the verb, which it modifies; as,

ámá ARDENTEMENTE la glória, he loves glory ardently.

The preposition is put before the word, which it governs; as,

DI sélva IN sélva DAL crudél s' invóla, she flies from wood to wood to avoid the pursuit of the ferocious animal.

The conjunction is put between those parts of a sentence, which it connects; as,

gli augéllétti, é i pésci, é i fóbri, é l'érbá, the little birds, and the fishes, and the flowers, and the grass.

The interjection has no fixed place, it having no intrinsic relation to the other words; it is, however, generally put at the beginning of the phrase; as,

OIMÉ! che è quello, che tu di? alas! what is that you say?

EXAMPLES.

Io síóno RÍCCO, é SPÉNDO IL MÍGO IN MÉTTER TÁVOLA, ed ONÓRO I MIÉI CONCITADÍNI. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

I am rich, and spend my money in keeping a good table to entertain my fellow-citizens.

In quélÉA DIMORÁNDÓ, POÇO O NIÉNTE POTRÉBBE DEL SÚO VALÓR DIMOSTRÁRÉ. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 1.)

He could show little or nothing of his valor, remaining there.

Io ho aMÁTO, é AMó GUISCÁRDO. (Bocc. g. n. 1.)

I have loved, and love Guiscard.

PíÉTRO BocCAMÁZZA FÚGGE con l' ÁgnólÉLLA, e TRUÓVA tadrónI. (Bocc. 5. n. 3.)

Peter Boccamázza flies away with Agnolella, and meets with thieves.
IL BELLO PIACE AGLI BECHI, E SI AMMIRA. (Vas.)

E' L' SUO PARLARE, E' L' BIEL VISO,
E LE CHIOME MI FACCER SI, CHE
TO L' HO DINDANSI AGLI BECHI. (Petr.
c. 7.)

CHE TU CON NOI TI RIMAN- GA PER QUESTA SERA, N' E' C'ARO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

GUARDATE ME, CHE SON DI VISTA PRIVA. (Pign. Fav.)

Le donne, quand'o arrivano a
guarda anni, p'erono il bel-
lo della gioventù, e acqui-
stono il bello matronale. (Lib.
Adorn. Donn.)

AVENDO GIÀ COMPIUTO LA BELLA
NYMPHA IL SUO CANTARE. (Bocc.
Am.)

A LUI SI RACCOMANDA, E SIGNI-
FICÒ IL FATTO COME STAVA. (Ser. Giov. Fior. Pecor.)

GLI UOMINI SONO DELLE FEM-
MINE CAPO, E SENZA L' ORDINE L'ORO
RÁDE VÔLTE RÍBESCE ALCUNA NOSTRA
ÓPERA A LAUDÉVOL FINE. (Bocc.
Intr.)

IL CAPITÀNO CÁDDE, E SCON-
CIÓSSI IL PIEDE IN FÔRMA, CHE
NON POTÉ STÀRE IN PIÉDI. (Matt.
Vill. 9. 11.)

GLI SCOLÁRI MORIGERÁTì E
DILIGÉNTI STUDIANO. (Cort. Os-
serv.)

IL MAESTRO PÉRMIÀ GLI SCOLÁ-
RI ATTÉNTI E STUDIÓSI. (Buom.
Ling. Tosc.)

LA VIRTÀ DI PÁOLO FU DEBITA-
MENTE RICONOSCIUTÀ. (Cavalc.)

Ma la ricordévol patria RICO-
NOSCÉVA NE' DISCÉNDENTI LA
VIRTÀ DEL PÁDRE. (Bott. Stor.
Am. 1. 9.)

The beautiful pleases the eyes,
and is admired.

And her conversation, and her
beautiful face, and her hair pleas-
ed me so, that I have her before
my eyes.

We should be very glad, if thou
wouldst remain to-night with us.

Look at me, that am deprived
of sight.

Women, when they arrive—to
the age of forty, lose the beauty
of youth, and acquire that of ma-
trons.

The beautiful nymph having
finished her singing.

He recommended himself to
him, and declared the fact as it
was.

Men are the head of women,
and without their management it
seldom happens that any under-
taking of ours succeeds well.

The captain fell, and sprained
his foot in such a manner, that he
could stand no more.

The well-behaved and diligent
scholars study.

The master rewards the atten-
tive and studious scholars.

The virtue of Paul was duly ac-
knowledged.

But the grateful country ac-
knowledged in the descendants the
virtues of their father.
ORDER OF WORDS. 393

Lo scolare, il quale, in sul färe della notte, col suo fante, presso della torretta, nascosò era. (Bocc. g. S. n. 7.)

Pietro ama ardentemente la gloria. (Cort. Osserv.)

Di selvà in selvà dal crudél s' invólica. (Adost. Fur. I. 34.)

L' acqua parlan d' amore, e l' aura, e i rami, — E gli augelletti, e i pesci, e i fiori, e l' erba; — Tutti insieme pregando ch' è sempre amà. (Petr. s. 239.)

Oimè! che è quello che tu dì? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

The scholar, who, when it grew night, had concealed himself, with his servant, near the small tower.

Peter loves glory ardently.

She flies from wood to wood to avoid the pursuit of the ferocious animal.

The waters speak of love, and the air, and the boughs, and the little birds, and the fishes, and the flowers, and the grass; entreating all together that I should always love.

Alas! what is it you say?

INVERSE CONSTRUCTION.

With regard to inverse construction no certain rules can be established, it varying according to the taste and ear of the speaker or writer. It can only be said, that in this construction the subjective may be put after the verb; as,

chieste l' Imperatore alla Ditta tremila cavalii, the Emperor asked of the Diet three thousand horses;

prèsemi all' ora la mia scorta per mano, then my guide took me by the hand.

The objective may be put before the verb; as,

s' ingegnano il loro tempo di consumare, they endeavour to pass away their time;

grandi bestie hanno nel loro boschi, they have large beasts in their woods.

The adjectives belonging to the subjective or the objective, may be put before them; as,
quantunque fosse tondo e grasso uomo,
although he was a foolish man.
The other words dependent on the subjective or objective, may also be put before them; as,
il [di] cui name era Ephigenia.
The adverb may be put before the verb, which it modifies; as,
pietosamente il chiamava, she did call him with a lamentable voice.
The preposition may be put after the word, which it governs; as,
to ti verrò appresso, I will come after thee.

EXAMPLES.

Chiése l' Imperatôre alla Dieta, per tale impreza, tremila cavalli, e sedicimila fanti. (Mach. lett.)

Présemi allóra la mia scorta per mano. (Dant. Inf. 18.)

S' ingegnano il loro tempo di consumare. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

Grandi bestie hanno né loro boschi. (Dav. Germ.)

Quantunque fosse tondo e grasso uomo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Il cui name era Ephigenia. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Assai vôle, la notte, pietosamente il chiamava. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

Or via! mettitì avanti, to ti verrò appresso. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

The Emperor asked of the Diet, for such an undertaking, three thousand horses, and sixteen thousand foot-soldiers.
Then my guide took me by the hand.
They endeavour to pass away their time.
They have large beasts in their woods.
Although he was a foolish man.
Whose name was Ephigenia.
A great many times, during the night, did she call him with a lamentable voice.
Come! walk before, I will come after thee.
ORDER OF WORDS.

These inversions are very common in Italian, and add great expression and beauty to the phrase; but in using them we must always consult euphony. A learner ought never to avail himself of such liberties, until, by a competent knowledge of the language, and a long perusal of the classics, he be able to appreciate their value and to make use of them with propriety.

EXERCISE XXVII.

Rome was full of funerals, the capitol of victima.  
Róma piéno mortório, campidóglio vittima.

I routed three legions, and three lieutenants. This house is built on a high situation; it has gardens, it has groves, it has plains and hills. The conversation of Montanus pleased so much the senate, that Elvidius Priscus hoped to conquer even Marcellus. Many wives have spoiled (the) their husbands. He made him dress nobly.

Fulvius, who had been consul, and had already triumphed over the Gauls, the most illustrious of thy followers, was killed by the Patricians in a bath together with a son of his as beautiful as innocent.

---

1. infatáre
2. dé
3. eminénte
4. sito
5. avère
6. piacére
7. móbile
8. guastáre
9. speráre
10. potére
11. séns
12. spóler
13. bástere
14. Mártilo
15. vestire
16. spóler
17. míngü
18. domínio
19. prócer
20. dei
21. leggiadro
22. innocénte
There came a merchant | of Cyprus, | much beloved
by him. Thou seest, that it is useless to pray
and to weep — (the praying and the weeping.)
Nothing else has been left to me of the inherit-
ance of (the) my ancestors, except (the) my honor;
and that I intend | to guard, and | to | preserve
as long as I live — (the life will last to me).
To be contented — (the being contented) with | (the)
his own condition, to moderate. (the) excessive desires,
not to allow himself neither to be transported | by |
excessive joy in (the) prosperities, nor to be overcome
by | (the) misfortunes, form the character of a wise
man. He could not appease the angry mother with
any act of generosity. Plato asserts, that in
literary disputes —— (in (the) disputes of (the) letters)
it is more useful to be conquered — (the being
conquered) than to conquer.

vincere  vincere.
CHAPTER II.

CONCORDANCE OR AGREEMENT OF WORDS.

CONCORDANCE OF ARTICLES.

Articles agree with nouns, in gender and number; as,

IL fratello, la sorella,
li padri, le madri,
la donna, il marito,
i figliuoli,

the brother, the sister;
the fathers, the mothers;
the wife, the husband;
the children.

EXAMPLES.

L' un fratello l' altro abbandonava, e la sorella il fratello, e spesso volte la donna il suo marito. (Bocc. Intr.)

E che maggior cosa è, li padri e le madri, i figliuoli di visidàre e di servire schivávono. (Bocc. Intr.)

One brother abandoned the other, and the sister the brother, and oftentimes the wife her husband.

And what is more, the fathers and the mothers shunned to visit and serve their children.

CONCORDANCE OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives, as we have already observed at p. 63, are to agree with their substantives, in gender and number; as,

úmo dótto, buona gente, a learned man, good people;
bélle dónne, leggiadri fanciulli, fair women, pretty youths.
Adjectives are also to agree with personal, conjunctive, and relative pronouns, in gender and number; as,

io (fem.) son víva, I am alive;
voi (masc.) siēte lontāni, you are far;
vi (fem.) lascio libera di Nicoluccio,
per renderci (masc.) fōrti ed invincibili,
quándo la videro sóla,
l'i quàli éranو mállo lūnghi,

When two or more substantives singular of the same gender come together, the adjectives belonging to them are put in the plural, agreeing with a noun of the same gender understood; as,

Lícia e Callīmaco [questi dūe individui] sōno ricchī,
María e Lucía [queste dūe fanciūlle] sōno fōvere,

If the substantives are of different genders or different numbers, the adjectives are put in the plural, agreeing with a masculine noun understood; as,

Il fādre e la mádre dēl la Lisa, contēnti, fēcerō grandissima fēsta,
la córte tūtta, i sovrānī sōno sommamēnte contēn-tī,

Lycias and Callimachus [these two individuals] are rich;
Mary and Lucy [these two girls] are poor.

the father and the mother of Lisa, both glad, expressed very great joy;
the whole court, the sove-

sreigns are well satisfied.

EXCEPTION.

If, however, one of the substantives is preceded by the preposition con, 'with,' 'in company with'; then the adjective or participle used as an adjective, may agree either with the other substantive, or with a noun in the plural understood; as,

esséndosi Dionēo con gli altri giovani mēssē a giuclāre,
esténdosi la dōnna col giō-
yane postī a tāvula,

Dioneo and the other youths having set themselves to play;
the lady and the young man having sat down to table.
When there are in a phrase several substantives of different gender and different number, separated from their adjective by a verb either expressed or understood; the adjective is put in the plural, agreeing with a masculine noun understood; as,

*Le mie case ed i luoghi pubblici di Roma, son pieni d'antiche immagini,* my houses and the public places of Rome are filled with ancient images;

*[essendo] la madre dolorosa di quest'accidente, l'atavano,* both her father and her mother, [being] grieved at this accident, relieved her.

If several names of inanimate beings occur in the same phrase, and they are not separated from their adjective by a verb; this adjective agrees with the nearest noun;* as,

*onori e gloria nuova,* new honors and glory;
*con barba e crini bagnati,* with a dripping beard and hair;
*l'una e l'altra mano mozza,* both hands cut off.

The adjective agrees also with the nearest noun, when there are in the same phrase several substantives, and the quality expressed by that adjective is affirmed or denied to belong, successively or alternatively, to either of them; as,

*Pietro o Maria è morta,* either Peter or Mary is dead;
*nè Francesca, nè Giovanni non è partito,* neither Frances nor John has gone;
*un tizzo, un carbone, una favilla è atta ad appic-car fuoco,* a brand, a coal, a spark might set fire.

---

*Contrary to this rule is the following example in Boccaccio:

Se costi gridato aveste, ella avrebbe costi l'altra coscia, e l'altro pié fuori mandata. (G. 6. n. 4.)

If you had cried out so, it (the crane) would have likewise put out the other leg and the other foot.
SYNTAX.

EXCEPTIONS.

An adjective accompanied with a substantive feminine applicable to a man, is put in the masculine gender; as,

LA PERSONA quàndo è TRIBOLÀ-
TO,
QUÉLLA BÉSTIA [di Tófano] éra that stupid ass [Tofano] was dis-
pur DISPÓSTO,
posed.

The adjective mézzo, 'half,' when it precedes a substantive, agrees with it in gender; but when it follows, it remains invariable; as,

in súllá MÉZZA NÔTTE, about midnight;
una FINDRA e MÉZZO di castróne, one pound and a half of mutton;
ventitrè e MÉZZO carátì, twenty-three carats and a half.

The adjective sálvo, signifying 'except'; remains invariable; as,

sÁLVO la MÁRCA Trivigiana, except the Trevisan March;
sálvo quéli delle càise eccettu-
éate per Ghibellíni, except those of the families ex-
cluded as Ghibellines.

EXAMPLES.

UÓMO dótto délle Scrittúre. A man learned in Holy Writ.
(Cavalc. Att. Apost. 113.)

Núta di BUÓNA e virtuósa gênte. Born of good and virtuous peo-
(Ariost. Fur. 18. 82.)

Quánti BÉLLE DÓNNE, quànti How many fair women, how
leggiàdri Fanciúlli, la sérá many pretty youths, the coming
vegnénte, nell' áltero mondo eve-
ning, the other
naronon con lóro passáti! (Bocc. world with their departed friends!
Intr.)

Ío són víva, la Dio mercè. I am alive, thank God.
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

Considerándo, che vói siête Considering, that you are far
dälle vóstre' dónne lontáni. from your wives.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Madónna, omió da ogni proméssa fúttami io vi assóbro, e li-
Bera vi lásicio di Nicolúccio. Madam, I free you from all your
promises to me, and I leave you at
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.)

the disposal of Nicoluccio.
Égli viene ad unire la sua pos-
sanza allà nostra debolezza per
renderci forti ed invincibili.
(Gang.)

Li quâli, quando la videro sóla, dissero. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

Alessandro, levatosi prestà-
mente, con tutto che i pànni del
mortal avessè indossò, li quâli
èrano molto lunghi, purè andò
via altresì. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Messer Lícia e Callímaco
son ricchi. (Mach. Com.)

Ma María e Lucía sono pò-
vere. (Mach. Com.)

Perdicòne, e l'am dàbre e la
màdre dèlla Lísa, ed èlla al-
tresì conténti, grandissima
fèsta fécerò. (Bocc. g. 10.
n. 7.)

Dovevâte dírmì, che la córte
tutta, che i sovràni sono som-
mamente conténti. (Metast. lett.)

Esséndosi Diónleo con gli ál-
tri giovani nèssò a giucáre.
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Esséndosi la dònya col gió-
vane poísti a távolà per cendàre.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Le mie case ed i luòghi púb-
lici di Róma son piéni d' an-
tiche immágini dé miéi mag-
glòri. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Il padre di Léi è la màdre,
dolorósii di questo accidenté,
in ciò che si polèva, l' atávano.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 7.)

È cosa manifestissima, che og-
gi non viéne in consúlta se ha
a rifáltare l' occasione d' acqui-
sistere onóri e glòria nuòva.
(Guicc.)

He comes to unite his strength
with our weakness, to make us
strong and invincible.

Who, when they saw her alone,
said.

Alexander, getting up quickly,
although he was dressed in the
clothes of the deceased, which
were very long, went away like-
wise.

Messer Lycias and Messer Cal-
limachus are rich.

But Mary and Lucy are poor.

Perdicone, and the father and
the mother of Lisa, and herself, all
glad, expressed great joy.

You ought to have told me, that
the whole court, and the sove-
reigns are well satisfied.

Dioneo and the other youths
having set themselves to play.

The lady and the young man
having sat down to supper.

My houses and the public places
of Rome are filled with ancient im-
ages of my ancestors.

Both her father and her mother,
grieved at that accident, did all in
their power to relieve her.

It is a manifest thing, that none
comes now to a consultation
whether he is to refuse the oppor-
tunity of gaining new honors and
glory.
L' Océano si farà dalla destra, un omaccione con barba e crini bagnati. (Ann. Car. lett.)

Ed un, che avea l' ùna e l' altra man mozza, — Disse. (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Piétro o María è morta. (Mach. Com.)

Nè Francesca nè Giovanni non è partito. (Buon. Tanc.)

Un tizzo, un carbóne, ùna pavilla è atta ad appiccar fuoco. (Cavalc.)

La persona quando è tribolato si dice e pensa, che Idàio l' abbia in odio. (Fra. Giord. Pred.)

Li prieghi non giovavano alcuna cosa, perchè quella bestia era pur disposto a volere . . . . . (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

Viétene in súlla mezza notte. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Togli ùna libbra e mezzo di castréne. (Burch. p. 2. s. 1.)

La moneta di ventitrè e mezzo carati. (Giov. Vill. l. 8. c. 58.)

Rendegli la Signoria di Lombardia, salvo la Marca Trivigliana. (Giov. Vill. l. 3. c. 5.)

Fecero ordine e decreto, che ciascuno potesse uscire dal bando, salvo quelli delle case eccettuate per Ghibellíni. (Giov. Vill. l. 6.)

As for the Ocean, it is to be represented on the right, as a large man with a dripping beard and hair.

And one, who had both hands cut off, said.

Either Peter or Mary is dead.

Neither Frances nor John has gone.

A brand, a coal, a spark might set fire.

When a person is afflicted, people say and believe God hates him.

Entreaties were of no use, because that stupid ass [Tofano] was disposed to wish . . . .

Come about midnight.

Take a pound and a half of mutton.

The coins of twenty-three carats and a half.

He restored to him the Signory of Lombardy, except the Trevisan March.

They ordained and decreed, that every one could return from banishment, except those of the families excluded as Ghibellines.
CONCORDANCE OF NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

Numeral adjectives agree with their substantives, in gender and number; as,

Platōne vivētte OTTANTŪNO ĀNNO,
pare descéndere áltre NOVANTŪNA RUÓTA,
it térezgo giórno dall' apparizione dei sopradetti ségni,
in quēi prīmi giórni, vi volò sōpra la tésta un' áquila,

Plato lived eighty-one years;
he seems to descend ninety-one more circles;
the third day after the appearance of the abovementioned symptoms;
in those first days, an eagle flew over your head.

EXAMPLES:

Abbiamo di Platōne, che ès-so vivētte OTTANTŪNO ĀNNO. (Dant. Conv.)

Pēi per la medēsima via pāre descéndere áltre NOVANTŪNA RUÓTA. (Dant. Conv.)

A'nci quāsi túttī, infra il térezgo giórno dall' apparizione dei sopradetti ségni, morivano. (Bocc. Intr.)

E che in quēi prīmi giórni, di sul mónte dél' Trinità, vi volò sōpra la tésta un' áquila. (Bemb.)

They say that Plato lived eighty-one years.
Then he seems to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.
Nay almost all died the third day after the appearance of the abovementioned symptoms.
And that in those first days, an eagle flew over your head.

CONCORDANCE OF PRONOUNS.

Adjective pronouns agree with their substantives, in gender and number; as,

tenēte quéstō denēro,

take this money;
non rimarrébbe a sostenér nessúna péná, there would not remain any punishment to suffer.

EXCEPTION.

The pronoun tutto, preceded by the preposition per, `through'; remains invariable; as,

per tutto Róma,
per tutto la cása,

[through all or] all over Rome;
all over the house.

Possessive pronouns agree with the thing possessed, and not with the possessor; as,

Mórra Giovánna sen' andáva con questo sò fi-
gliuólo,
Frescò avéva úna sòa nepó-
te,

Monna Giovanna used to go with this son of hers;
Frescò had a niece.

The relative pronoun quale, `which'; agrees with its antecedent, in gender and number; as,

quel cuóre, il quale la li-
ta fortúna non avéa potúto aprire,

that heart, which propitious fortune had not been able to move.

If the antecedent consists of two or more nouns of different gender or number, the relative quale agrees with the nearest noun; as,

la virtú e l' onóre del quá-
le è dolútá,
I quálí témpj e cappélle ri-
empíè di paraménti,

the virtue and honor with which she is endowed;
which temples and chapels he filled with ornaments.

EXAMPLES.

Signóra, tenétè quésto de-
irá. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)

Madam, take this money.

Che non rimarrébbe a sos-
ténér péná nessúna nel purga-
tórjio per gli peccáti. (Pass.)

That there would not remain in purgatory any punishment to suffer for sins.
Sono stato per tutto Roma.
— L’ho cercato per tutto la casa. (Salv. Avvert. vol. 1. l. 3.)

Monna Giovanna con questo suo figliuolo sen’andava in contado. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Uno, che si chiamò Frescò, aveva una sua nipote. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 8.)

Quel cuore, il quale la lieta fortuna, di Girólamo non aveva potuto aprire, la miseria l’apriše. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.)

La virtù e l’onore del quale è dotata. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 6.)

Oltre di questo, fèce fare altari e cappelle splendidissime, i quali tempj e cappelle riempie di paramenti. (Mach. Sior. Fior. l. 7.)

I have been all over Rome.— I have looked for it all over the house.

Monna Giovanna used to go into the country with this son of hers.

A certain man, called Frescò, had a niece.

That heart, which the propitious fortune of Jerome had not been able to open, was opened by his misery.

The virtue and honor with which she is endowed.

Besides that, he caused very splendid altars and chapels to be built, which temples and chapels he filled with ornaments.

CONCORDANCE OF VERBS.

Verbs are to agree with their subjectives, either expressed or understood, in number and person; as,

io ti consolerò,
voi non udite,
[io] bramo la morte,

I will gratify thee;
you did not hear;
I desire death.

When the subjective consists of several nouns, which all concur simultaneously to perform the action of the verb, the verb agrees with a noun in the plural understood; as,

consiglio e ragione [queste due cose] conduscono la vittoria,
advice and reason [these two things] lead to victory;
SYNTAX.

Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffalmacco [these three persons] go in search of the heliotrope; neither his departure, nor his long absence, nor his lamentable death, has been able to take him out of my heart.

When there are in a phrase several subjectives, and these are of two or more different persons; as, io e tu, 'I and thou'; tu ed egli, 'thou and he'; &c., the verb agrees with a personal pronoun in the plural understood.

Thus, if one of the subjectives is io, 'I'; the pronoun understood with which the verb will agree, is noi, 'we'; if one of the subjectives is tu, and io is not one of the others, the pronoun understood is voi, 'you'; and if the subjectives are all of the third person, the pronoun understood is egli, elleno, or essi, 'they'; as,

tu dall' un lado e Stecchi
do l' altro [voi] mi verràte sostenendo,
come sai tu, chi mio marito o
io [noi] ci siamo?
egli e ella [essi] cenarono
un poco di carne salata,
tu, egli, Siro, e io [noi] pi-
glierramo uno per . . .
vorrei che voi o egliino mi di-
cèste,

thou on one side and Stecchi on the other [you] will support me;
how dost thou know who my husband and I [we] are?
he and she [they] supped on a little salt beef;
thou, he, Cyrus, and I [we] will take a man for . . . .
I wish that either you or they would tell me.

If the subjective consists of several nouns, and the action of the verb can be performed, either successively or

* A kind of precious stone, which was believed to possess the virtue of rendering invisible the persons who carried it about them. — See Dant. Inf. 24; Bocc. g. 8. n. 3; Franc. Sacch. Op. Div. 93.
† There are two examples in Dante in which this rule appears to have been disregarded for the sake of rhyme:
Tosto che il du'ca ed io nel légno fui. (Dant. Inf 8.)
Dé' quai né' o, né il du'ca mi'o
s'acco'ra. (Dant. Inf.)
As soon as my leader and I entered in the boat;
Of whom neither I nor my leader was aware:
but such licenses are not to be followed.
alternatively, by *either of them*, the *verb agrees* with the *nearest noun*; as,

*muòvæsi la Caprâia e la Gorgona,*

*quál fortúna o destíno quag-giutìt mëna?*

*non Cinna, non Silla si-gno-reggìo lungamente,*

may Capraia and Gorgona rise from their foundations;

what fortune or destiny brings thee here below?

neither Cinna nor Sylla ruled long.

Sometimes one of the nouns, which form the subjective of the *verb*, is a *word* which in itself *includes* the *signification* of all the others, and then the *verb agrees* directly with *this word*; as,

*nè vii, nè altÌ mi potrà più dire ch'io non l'abbia vedùta,*

*nè pìoggia cadùta, nè acqua giùtåta, nè altÌ umidìre gli spegnèva,*

neither you nor any other one will be able to tell me any longer that I have not seen it;

neither the rain which had fallen, nor the water which they threw on it, nor any other wet thing extinguished them.

If the subjective consists of two nouns, the one of which is, as it were, a *part* of the other which expresses the *whole*, the *verb agrees* with the *whole*, and not with the part; as,

*la maggìôr parte de'suòi só-no mórti,*

*a infinità di stroménti fûrono preparàti,*

the greater part of his friends are dead;

a great number of instruments were prepared.

Sometimes the noun expressing the *whole* is *under-stood*; as,

*la maggìôr partìta [di indi-vidüï] fûrono mórti,*

the greater part [of the indi-viduals] were killed.
SYNTAX.

When the subjective is a collective noun, the verb is put in the singular; * as,

perché quel popolo è si empio?

why is that people so fell?

m' appari una gente d' altre

a troop of spirits appeared to me;

venge maggiór frotta di

there came a greater crowd of Romans.

Romani,

If the subjective is a verb used as a noun, or a phrase, the verb is put in the singular; as,

Il voler sottomettere le mie forze a grossissimi

the wish to oppose my strength to very heavy burdens is the occasion of this weakness.

pensi, m' è ragione di questa infermità,

Sometimes the subjective of the verb is represented by the relative pronoun che, 'who,' 'which'; and then the verb agrees with the noun or pronoun, represented by che; either expressed or understood;† as,

1' son Beatrice che ti faccio andare,

I am Beatrice, who bids thee to go;

* Instances may be quoted from the classics, however, in which the verb is put in the plural; as,

L' inno che quell' arte gentil cantavano. (Dant. Purg. 32.)

The hymn, which those people then sung.

Potevano dire come il comune popolo ignaro del vero ideale. (Gov. Vill. l. i. c. 26.)

You may see how ignorant of the true God the common people were.

La sua famiglia avevano di preso un penitentia per mallevoria. (Nov. Ant. 83.)

One day his family took a potter for bail:

but this usage is carefully avoided by modern writers.

† Examples may be found, nevertheless, in which the verb agrees directly with the relative pronoun che, without any reference to the noun or pronoun, which it represents; as,

Io son colei, che ti diri tanta guerra,

I am she, who caused thee so much trouble, and who closed her day before its evening.

— E conoscerà la giustizia inanzi sera. (Petr. s. 361.)

Now art thou that Coricca, who has betrayed me in so many different ways?

Or ed tu quella Coricca, che tradito

— I am indeed that Coricca, who was once so dear in your eyes.

m' ha in tanti modi? — Coricca son ben ko, — ch' agli occhi tuoi — Un tempo

su si cara. (Guar. Past. Fid. 2. 6.)
Io son colui, che tenni ambo le chiavi, poeta, [tu] che mi guidi, O fràti, [vôi] che siete guénti all' occidente, uno de' sette regi, che ass issiero Tebe, uno di quelli, che il pôsero in croce, I am he, who held both the keys; poet! [thou] who art my guide; O brothers! [you] who have now reached the west; one of the seven kings, who besieged Thebes; one of those, who put him on the cross.

EXAMPLES.

Io ti consolerò di costi lüngo desio. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)
I will gratify thee in so long a desire.

Grazìose dònnne, vôi non udìste fôrse mai dire. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 10.) Charming ladies, perhaps you never heard say.

Che per minór martir la mórte brâmo. (Bocc. g. 4. Canz.) I desire death to lessen my sufferings.

Consiglio e ragione conducono la vittoria. (Dav. St.) Advice and reason lead to victory.

Calandrino, Brùno, e Buffalmácco vannon cercândo di trovâr l' elìthropia, e Calandrino se la crède aver trovâta. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.) Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffal-macco go in search of the hetio-trope, and Calandrino believes he has found it.

Nè la sua partîta, nè la sua lünga dimôra, nè la sventuràta sua mòrte, me l' hàno potuto trárre dal cuôre. (Bocc.) Neither his departure, nor his long absence, nor his lamentable death, have been able to take him out of my heart.

Tu dall' ün látò, e Stècchi dall' altro, mi verrète sos-ténendo. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.) Thou on one side, and Steecchi on the other, will support me.

"Come," disse la dònnna, "sai tu chi mîo marîto o io ci siâmo?"
"How dost thou know," said the lady, "who my husband and I are?"

Égli e élla cenarono un pôco di càrne salàta. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.) He and she supped on a little salt beef.
Tu, egli, Siro, e io piglieremo uno per...... (Mach. Mandrag.)

Vorréi che voi o égline mi diceste. (Ben. Varch.)

Muóvasi la Capráia e la Gorgona,—E fassian siépe ad Arno in su la foce. (Dant. Inf. c. 33.)

Quál fortúna o destíno,— Anzi l' último di, quaggiù ti mena? (Dant. Inf. 15.)

Non Cinna, non Sílla, si gnoreggió lungamente. (Dav. Stor.)

"Fóteci dipingere la Cortesía."— "Io cèla farò dipingere di maniera, che mai nè voi, nè altri, con ragione, mi potrà più dire, ch'io non l'abbia vedúta, nè conosciuta." (Bocc. g. 1. v. 8.)

Nè pioggia caduta, nè acqua gittata, nè altro umidore gli spegnéva. (Dav. Ann.)

Ciascuna di noi sa che dé suoi sono la maggiór parte morti. (Bocc. Intr.)

Una infinità di siroménti da dar martirio furono preparati. (Fir. As. 71.)

La maggiór partita furono morti e tagliati, e parté presi. (Giov. Vill. I. 7. c. 19.)

Dimmi, perché quel pòpolo è si empio—Incóntr d' 행복 in ciascuna sua legge? (Dant. Inf. 10.)

Da man sinistra m' apparí una gente—Di animé, che movéno i piè ver noi. (Dant. Furg. 3.)

Thou, he, Syrus, and I, will take a man for......

I wish that either you or they would tell me.

May Capraia and Gorgona rise from their foundations, and dam up the mouth of Arno.

What fortune or destiny brings thee here below, before thy last day?

Neither Cinna, nor Sylla ruled long.

"Cause Liberality to be painted there."—"I will cause it to be painted there in such a manner, that neither you nor any other one, will be able to tell me any longer, that I have never seen it, or known it."

Neither the rain which had fallen, nor the water which they threw on it, nor any other wet thing extinguished them.

Every one of us knows, that neither the rain which had fallen, nor the water which they threw on it, nor any other wet thing extinguished them.

A great number of instruments of torture were prepared.

The greater part were killed and cut to pieces, and some taken.

Tell me, why is that people so fell against my kin in all their laws?

On the left hand appeared to me a troop of spirits, that moved their steps towards us.
Then, there came a greater crowd of Romans.

My lord, the wish to oppose my strength to very heavy burdens is the occasion of this weakness.

I am Beatrice, who bids thee to go.

I am he, who held both the keys of the heart of Frederick.

I began: "Poet! thou who art my guide, consider well if there is sufficient virtue in me."

"O brothers!" said I, "who through perils without number have now reached the west."

Saying: "That was one of the seven kings, who besieged Thebes."

If thou had been one of those, who put him on the cross.

Participles, as it has been already mentioned p. 345, when used as adjectives, agree with substantives in gender and number, and follow in this respect the rules already given with regard to the concordance of that part of speech; as,

Léi, in vano mercè addo-mandânte, uccise, he killed her, while begging in vain for mercy;

dalle donne aspettânti si rivólsse, he addressed himself to the ladies [who were] waiting;
Il cavaliere, udita la domanda e la proferta, propose,
poiché in giardino, e la casa di Messer Neri ebbe veduta,
ge le donne e i cavaliieri nel palagio radunati,
l'anella e la corona avute dal nuovo sposo,
il re co' suoi compagni rimontati a cavallo,

the gentleman, having heard the request and the proposal, resolved;
after having viewed the garden and the house of Messer Neri;
the ladies and gentlemen [that had] collected in the palace;
the rings and the garland, [which she had] received from her new husband;
the king with his attendants having mounted their horses.

[For rules how to determine when participles are used as adjectives and when not, see Chapter on Participles.]

Examples.

Folco, da dolce vinto, tirata fuori una spada, le, in vano mercè addomandante, uccise. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)

Alle donne aspettanti si rivolse, e disse. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 10.)

Il cavaliere, udita la domanda e la proferta della donna, seco propose. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.)

Il quale, poiché il giardín tutto, e la casa di Messer Neri ebbe veduta. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

E sentendo le donne e' cavaliieri nel palagio del comte radunati. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

La donna e l'anella e la corona avute dal nuovo sposo quivi lasciò. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Il re co' suoi compagni, rimontati a cavallo, al reale ostére se ne tornarono. Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

Folco, overcome by grief, having drawn a sword, killed her while begging in vain for mercy.

He addressed himself to the ladies who were waiting, and said.

The gentleman, having heard the request and the proposal of the lady, resolved.

Who, after having viewed the garden and the house of Messer Neri.

And hearing that the ladies and gentlemen had collected in the palace of the count.

...The lady left there the rings and the garland which she had received from her new husband.

The king with his attendants, having mounted their horses, returned to the royal palace.
EXERCISE XXVIII.

Then that magnanimous Pompey, who boasted continually, that where he struck the earth with his foot the entire legions would come out from it, fled not only from Rome, but from Italy also. He is of a marvellous agreeableness and vivacity.

And the preparation, and the joy, and the other things were described to him beyond the truth.

And the my guide and I descended the mountain.

The greatest part of men are ambitious. He commanded that all his family should appear before him. Know, that I am Bertrand de Born, he who gave King John the mischievous counsels. The filial respect and filial love.

Great, small, rich, and poor, no one can escape (himself to the) death. Many were accused this year.

* Great, small, rich, poor, are here used in the plural number.
And she embracing (the) her infant. I have looked

abbracciaré figliuólo. cercaré

told me, that the doctor and the ladies are coming
dóre dóna venire
to (the) church. Neither thou nor I am rich. I
ricco.

am the ghost of Capocchio, who falsified (the) metals
ombra falsare metallo

| by the power-of alchemy. He | fell in love |
| con alchimia. — | s' innamoré |

| with | a noble-lady, held in (the) his time* for |
| — | gentildonna tenere tempo |

one of the most beautiful, and of the most amiable
bella, leggiadra

that were in Florence. Pride, envy, and avarice
Firénze. Supérbia, invidia, avarizia

are the three sparks, which have inflamed all
favilla, accendere

(i) hearts. I saw a man, who had both (the)
cuore. Vedere uomo, ambo

his hands cut-off, and another who had (the) his
mano muzzo,

throat pierced. For (the) which reasons, (the) our
góla forato.

supper having been disturbed, I not only have not
céna sturbare.

eat it, but not even (have) tasted it. Nor
trangugiáre, assaggiáre.¹

the excessive maternal pity and joy permitted it.
soprabbondante materna pietà allegrézza permettere.

* Time, in the plural.
CHAPTER III.

REGIMEN OR GOVERNMENT OF WORDS.

REGIMEN OF SUBSTANTIVES.

A substantive may be dependent on, or in relation with, another substantive; and this dependence or relation, which may be expressed in different manners, forms what is called the regimen or the complement of the signification of substantives.

When of two substantive nouns the second, which is dependent on the first, conveys an idea of possession, extraction, or qualification, (as when it expresses property; paternity, or filiation; the material, the place, or the quantity of a thing; a family name; or similar circumstances;) it requires to be preceded by the preposition di; as,

*I' occhio del cuore,*

gli anni della Incarnazione del Figliuolo di Dio,

vergogna è madre di onesta,

una fontana di marmo bianchissimo,

Certaldo è un castello di Valdèlsa,

torchiètti di libbra, e torchiètti di mezza-libbra,

fu salvato da certi di casa de’ Bardi,

the eye of the heart;

the years of the Incarnation of the Son of God;

shame is the mother of modesty;

a fountain of very white marble;

Certaldo is a castle of Valdèlsa;

wax-tapers of a pound, and wax-tapers of half a pound each;

he was saved by some people belonging to the house of the Bardi.
There are some adjective pronouns, which when used substantively follow the same rule; as,

facēva un fōco di bāncō, he kept a little bank;
splalenđando tānto di gōla, opening his throat [mouth] wide.

The preposition di is often elegantly suppressed after the word cāsa followed by a family name; as,
in cāsa [di] Messer Guasparrino,
in cāsa [dé] gli Albizzi,
in the house of Messer Guasparrino;
in the house of the Albizzi.

When the second substantive expresses the form or similitude of the first, it requires to be preceded by the preposition a; as,

dēnti a Bīscheri, teeth like pegs;
berettāccia a Grondā, a cap like the eaves of a house;
bārdā a Lūcignōli, a beard like two wicks of a candle.

When the second substantive expresses suitableness, convenience, or derivation as to one's country,* it requires to be preceded by the preposition da; as,
edā da mārito, an age suitable for marriage;
tēmpo da confūrto, time of consolation;
Guidōtto da Cremenā, Guidotto of Cremona;
Giacomīn da Pāvīa, James of Pavia.

* This is limited, however, to the case when the substantive is a proper name of a city, town, village, or castle; for, when the substantive is a proper name of a kingdom, province, or island, it is always preceded by the preposition di; as,

Dissē il mōnaco: "Io sōno anchē mōrto, e fūi di Sardinīa." (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.) The monk replied: "I am dead also, and I was of Sardinia."

Instances are also met with amongst the classics, in which the preposition di is used even in the case when, according to the rule, da ought to be used; as,

Lo prime Podeste fās Messer Pazzīno de' Pāzzi di Firenze. (Stor. Past. 50.) The first Podesta was Messer Pazzino de' Pazzi of Florence.
Cōlla fōrza dē dēti Orsīni di Rōma. (Gio. Vill. I. 9. c. 39.) With the assistance of the said Orsini of Rome.
Il Signōr Gismondō Malatēsta di Rīmini. (Car. lett. 3.) Gismondo Malatesta of Rimini.
EXAMPLES.

L' ambre privato chüde l' óc-
chio del cuôre. (Amm. Ant. d.
5. r. 3.)

Già erano gli anni della
fruttiferà incarnazione del fig-
gluolo di Dio al numero per-
venuti di 1348. (Bocc. Intr.)

Vergognà è madre di onestà,
and maestra d' innocenza.
(Amm. Ant. d. 5. r. 7.)

Nel mezzo del qual prato èra
una fontana di marmo bian-
chissimo. (Bocc. g. 3. Intr.)

Certaldo è un castello di
Valdèlsa, il quale quantunque
picio, sia, già di molti uòmini ed
agìati fu abiúto. (Bocc. g. 7.
n. 10.)

Una grand' arca tutta fornita
di torchiétti di libbra, e la
chiésa e le cappelle d' intorno
pién di torchiétti di mezza
libbra, e spesso di qué di lìb-
bra. (Borgh. Arm. Fam. 23.)

Fu scampato e salvàto da
certi di casa dei Bardi. (Gio.
Vill. l. 12. c. 17.)

Vi era un certo Ludovico, il
quale avea di moléi danéri, e
facéva un fóco di bánco.
(Firenz. As. d' Or.)

È spalancándo poi tânito di
góla. (Líp. Malm. 7. 85.)

Stítero più anni i due giovani
in casa Messér Guaspráino.
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Con grande paura e pericolo
si fuggí in casa gli Albizzi.
(Gio. Vill. l. 12. c. 17.)

Selfishness shuts the eye of the
heart.

The years of the fruitful Incarna-
tion of the Son of God had
reached the number of 1348.

Shame is the mother of modesty,
and the mistresse of innocence.

In the middle of which field
there was a fountain of very white
marble.

Certaldo is a castle of Valdelsa,
which, although small, was for-
merly inhabited by many and
wealthy people.

A great coffin surrounded with
wax tapers of a pound, and the
church and the chapels full of
wax-tapers of half a pound, and
often of some of a pound each.

He was rescued and saved by
certain people belonging to the
house of the Bardi.

There was a certain Ludovico,
who had a great deal of money,
and kept a little bank.

And opening his mouth wide.

The two youths remained for
several years in the house of Mes-
ser Guasparrino.

In great fear and danger he took
refuge in the house of the Albizzi.
Con quale dispièdere a Bischio. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

Con quella beatificazione a Gronda, e con quella barba a Lucignoli. (Buon. Fier. 2. 3.)

Essendo ella già di età da marito. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

La donna a cui più tempo da conforto, che da riprensione parea. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Guidotto da Cremona lascia a Giacomino di Pavia una sua facciulla. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

**Regimen of Adjectives.**

The *regimen* or *complement* of adjectives is generally a substantive, a pronoun, a verb, or a phrase preceded by a preposition.

Adjectives signifying knowledge or ignorance, praise or blame, possession or privation, abundance or scarcity, require that their *complement* be preceded by the preposition *di*; as,

*Dolto della Scrittura,*

*Ignorantissimi della medicina,*

*Giovine di età,* *bellissima di forma,* *chiara di sangu* and *di costumi,*

*Prode delle armi,* *ma de' costumi vizioso,*

*Abbondante di grano,* *di orzo,* *di bestiame,* and *di pesce.*

Adjectives signifying similitude, inclination, suitableness, advantage, tendency, or the contrary, require their *complement* to be preceded by the preposition *a*; as,
la bárba á' suoi capégli
simigliante,
cóse più átte á' bevitori,
che álle sobrié dónne,
province dedite álle ármi,
niuna cosa è così contrária
ál dicitore,
grave ágli uomini di perversi
costumi,

the beard like his locks;
things more becoming to
drunkards, than to, sober ladi-
dies;
provinces addicted to arms;
nothing is so unfavorable to a
speaker;
odious to men of wicked habits.

Adjectives signifying departure, distance, separation,
require that their complement should be preceded by the
preposition da; as,

téuli d'álle loro pátria,
se' disgiunto d'all' ánimo il
passibile intellétto,
una navicella di pescatori
separátá d'all' áltre ná-
vi,
exiles from their countries;
made the soul disjoined from
his passive intellect;
a small fishing boat distant
from the other vessels.

Some adjectives, as conténto, 'contented,' 'satisfied';
présto, 'prompt,' 'ready'; accóncio, 'disposed,' 'in-
clined'; may have a complement preceded by either the
preposition di or a; as,

conténto di quello, che
gli era dátó,
státe conténti álla volon-
tá di Dio,
présita di fáre fésta ál
suo cittadino,
préstia a mórderé ogni
laudévol cosa,
sônó accóncia d' impegnár
quésté róbé,
più accóncia a crédere ál
mále,
content with what was given
to him;
be satisfied with the will of
God;
prompt to greet his fellow-
citizen;
ready to slander every praise-
worthy thing;
I am disposed to pawn these
garments;
more inclined to believe the
evil.
Essendo molto dotto delle scritture, ed ammaestrato della fede di Cristo. (Cav. At. ap. 113.)

Molti vi sono della medicina ignorantiissimi. (Lib. Cur. mal.)

Una di loro è età giovine, di forma bellissima, chiara di sangue e di costumi. (Bocc. Fiam. l. 1.)


Il paese è grandissimo, e molto abbondante di grano, di orzo, di bestiame, e di pesci. (Giang. l. 5.)

Lunga la barba, e di pel bianco mista,—Portava, à suoi capelli similiante. (Dant. Pur. 1.)

Cose più atte à bevitóri che ålle sôbrie ed onéstè dône. (Bocc. Intr.)

Province naturalmente dèdite ålle armi. (Giang. l. 3.)

Nûna cosa è così contraria al dicitoré, come il manifesto aconciamento. (Amm. Ant. d. 11. r. 3.)

La vita dè buoni è sempre grave agli uomini di perversi costumi. (Amm. Ant. d. 14. r. 1.)

Colóro, che sono esuli dalle loro patrie, desiderano di tornarvi. (Fra Giord. Pred.)

Sicché, per sua dottrina, fe' disgiunto — Dall'animo il passibile intelletto. (Dant. Pur. 28.)

Being very learned in the Scriptures, and well instructed in the Christian faith.

There are many very ignorant of medicine.

One of them of youthful age, of most beautiful form, and of distinguished birth and manners.

A cavalier brave in arms, but of vicious habits.

The country is very vast, and very abundant in grain, barley, cattle, and fish.

His beard, mixed with hoary white, like his locks, descended low down.

Things more becoming to drunkards, than to sober and modest ladies.

Provinces naturally addicted to arms.

Nothing is so unfavorable to a speaker as the evident dressing up of language.

The life of the good is always odious to men of wicked habits.

Those, who are exiles from their countries, are desirous to return there.

So that, by his wisdom, he made the soul disjoined from his passive intellect.
Trovò per avventura, alquanto separata dalle altre navi, una navicella di pescatori.
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

Contenido di quello, che dà to gli era, più non chiedea.
(Vit. S. Ant.)

E perd, padre e madre mia, state contenti alla volontà di Dio.
(Vit. S. Gio. Batt.)

Quell' anima gentil fu così prêsta — Di fâre al cittadîn suo quivi fêsta.
(Dant. Pur. 6.)

Dar materia âgl' invidiosi, prêsti a mòdere ogni lau-devol cosa.
(Bocc. Intr.)

Per me sono accôncia d' im pegnâr per te quête robe.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

La gente è più accôncia a crêderle il mâle, che il benè.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

He found by chance, a small fishing boat somewhat distant from the other vessels.

Content with what was given to him, he asked no more.

Therefore, my parents, be satisfied with the will of God.

That gentle spirit was so prompt to greet there his fellow-citizen.

To give occasion to envious persons, ready to slander every praiseworthy thing.

As for me, I am disposed to pawn for thee these garments.

People are more inclined to believe the evil, than the good.

REGIMEN OF VERBS.

Verbs may govern, or have for a complement, a noun, a pronoun, another verb, or a phrase.

The nouns and pronouns governed by the verb may be in the subjective, in the objective, or in any other relation preceded by a preposition.

The verbs governed by another verb may be in the indicative, in the conjunctive, or in the infinitive mood, either in the objective, or in any other relation, except the subjective, preceded by a preposition.

The verb essere governs a noun in the subjective, and is consequently construed with two subjectives, called, the
one, the subjective before, and, the other, the subjective after, the verb; as,

i vero amici sono una cosa true friends are one thing insieme,

---

Active verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the objective; as,

I have loved and love Guiscard;
many know many things, and do not know themselves.

Many active verbs, besides having a noun or a pronoun in the objective, or, what is the same, a direct regimen, may govern a noun or a pronoun in any other relation, except the subjective, preceded by a preposition, and thus have also an indirect regimen; as,

I did not sell it to them, but they must have stolen it from me;
in order to reward the gentleman for the honor received;
he offered himself to serve her in every thing;
he endeavoured to dissuade her from so cruel a proposal.

---

Passive verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the relation of derivation preceded by the preposition da; as,

he was equally loved by me;
Iphigenia was received by many noble ladies of Rhodes.
Sometimes instead of da we find the preposition per used by good writers; as,

la più bella cosa, che giannádi
PER ALCUNO veduta fosse,
PER FALSA LODE di stóùtto essere
ingannato,

the handsomest object that was
ever seen by anybody;

to be deceived by the false praise
of fools.

Neuter verbs, strictly speaking, have no regimen; but as some of them are often used, in Italian, actively, they follow, when so used, the same rules as active verbs; as,

cenárono UN PÓCO DI CÁRNE
SALÁTA,
quandunque Amóre i LIÉTI
PALÁGI, piú volentieri che
LE PÓVERE CAPÁNNE, ãbìti,

they supped on a little salt
meat;

although Love dwells more
willingly in gay palaces,
than in poor cottages.

Pronominal verbs govern the pronouns mi, ti, ci, vi, si, with which they are varied, in the objective; as,

to mi levái diritta,
lo scoláre s’ esercitáva,

I stood up;
the scholar took exercise.

Many pronominal verbs, besides the above, which is their direct regimen, may have an indirect regimen, or, what is the same, may also govern a noun in any other relation, but the subjective, preceded by a preposition; as,

l’ attristi DÉLLA MÍA DIMÓ-
RA,
la città s’ arrendéo A CÉ-
SARE,

thou grievest for my stay;
the city surrendered to Cesar.

Unipersonal verbs, generally, have no regimen; there are instances, however, in which some of them govern
a word in the relation of attribution, preceded by the preposition a; as,

come accade a' buoni, così accade a' cattivi,
questa novella, la quale a me tocca di dover dire,
as it befalls good people, so it befalls bad people;
this novel, which I am to relate.

EXAMPLES.

Signor mio, io sono la misera sventurata Ginévrà. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

I veri amici sono una cosa insieme. (Am. Ant. d. 18. r. 1.)

Io ho amato ed amo Guiscardo, e quanto vivero io l' amore. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Molti molte cose sanno, se medesimi non sanno. (Am. Ant. d. 5. r. 3.)

Io non la vendei lóro, ma essi questa nótte me l' avránno imbólata. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

Per premiáre il cavaliere dell'onore ricevuto da lui. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

Soddisfèce alla sua domanda, e sè ad ogni suo servigio offérece. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Con parôle assai s' ingegnò di rivólerla da propinimen
to a si fiéro. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Così gli da me era equa
temente amáto, com' égli me amáva. (Bocc. Fiam. 1. 6.)

Efignéia da molte nóbili donne di Ródì fu rícevúta. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Costei ésser la più bélla cosa, che giámmai per alcúno vedúta fosse. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Sir, I am the unfortunate, wretched Gineva.

True friends are one thing together.

I have loved and love Guiscard, and I shall love him as long as I live.

Many know many things, and do not know themselves.

I did not sell it to them, but they must have stolen it from me last night.

In order to reward the gentleman for the honor he had received of him.

He complied with her request, and offered himself to serve her in every thing.

With a great many words he endeavoured to dissuade her from so cruel a proposal.

So he was equally loved by me, as he loved me.

Iphigenia was received by many noble ladies of Rhodes.

She was the handsomest object that was ever seen by anybody.
Méglio è esser corretto dal véio, che per falsa lode di stol- to esser ingannato. (Amm. Ant. d. 3. n. 6.)

Cenarono un po' cò e carne salata. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

Quantunque amòre i lièti palagi e le morbide câmer, più volentieri che le povere ca- fàne, abiti. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 10.)

Io mi levai diritta. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 6.)

Lo scolare s' esercitava per riscalddarsi. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Della mia lunga dimora t'attristi. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

S' arrendèo la città a César. (Gio. Vill.)

Come accade a' buoni, così, fratello, mi parè che accaggia a' cattivi. (Fra. Gult. lett.)

Questa novella, la quale a me tocca di dover dire, voglio ve ne renda ammaestrata. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 10.)

It is better to be corrected by the wise, than to be deceived by the false praise of fools.

They supped on a little salt meat.

Although Love dwells in gay palaces and sumptuous apartments, more willingly than in poor cottages.

I stood up.

The scholar took exercise to get warm.

Thou grievest for my long stay.

The city surrendered to Cæsar.

Brother, I think that as it befalls good people, so it befalls bad people.

I wish, that the novel, which I am to relate, may make you wise.

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS — Continued.

A verb governs another verb that depends upon it, in the infinitive mood, whenever the subject of the principal (governing) verb is the same with that of the dependent (governed) verb; as in the following example of Boccaccio, Proem.:

assai manifestamente posso comprendere, quello esser vero, che sogliono i savi dire, che solo la miséria è senza invidia,

where posso and sogliono govern comprendere and dire
in the infinitive; because, in the first instance, io, which is understood, is the subject of posso and at the same time of comprendere, that depends upon it; and in the last, sauv is the subject of sogliono as well as of dire, that depends upon it.

The infinitives, depending on another verb which governs them, may be either in the objective, as in the foregoing example; or in any other relation, except the subjective, preceded by a preposition; as,

nega di aver ricevuto il he denies to have received the benefit;

obbiamo imparare a tacere. we must learn how to keep silent.

If the subjects of the two verbs be different, then the principal verb governs the dependent verb in a tense of the indicative or conjunctive mood, preceded by the conjunction che; as,

so io bene, che egli ne I know well, that he carried fortò (ind.) l'anima mia, away my soul;

io credo, che le suore I think, that the nuns are sieno (conj.) a dormire, asleep.

By a peculiarity of language the conjunction che is sometimes suppressed; as,

credo, [che] egli se n' andò I believe that he went away.

(emendato [che] non gli avvenisse (conj.), fearing lest it should happen to him.

The dependent verb is put in the indicative, when the principal verb implies affirmation, knowledge, or certainty of action; as,

vi dico, ch' egli è morto, I tell you, that he is dead;

so ch' egli è cosi, I know that it is so;

egli sta bene, salvo che gli duole il capo, he is well, except that he has the headache.
The dependent verb is put in the conjunctive, when the principal verb implies will, desire, entreaty, command, hope, fear, pleasure, displeasure, permission, prohibition, negation, shame, blame, adulation, wonder, surprise, supposition, conjecture, judgment, belief, question, doubt, ignorance, uncertainty, or future action; as,

*tó vó* che *sáppi,*  
I wish that thou shouldst know;

*desidero che sia posto in*  
esecuzione,  
I desire that it should be put in execution;

*pregáva che ne venisse,*  
she begged him to come;

*comandò ad un di* *subì*  
samigliàri che nélla sua  
cása il menasse,*  
he ordered one of his domestics to bring him into his house;

*spéri tu che* *Nicóstrato an-*  
dasse la lealtà ritrován-*  
do?*  
dost thou hope [or believe] that Nicostratus would observe loyalty?

*temo [che] il sovérchio as-*  
fàmmo non distrúgga il*  
cor,*  
I fear that excessive grief will destroy the heart;

*dispiacque loro, che i Peru-*  
gini avéssero rélla la*  
léga,*  
it displeased them, that the Perugians should have broken the league;

*suppongasi che Júppiter sia*  
ánimo di questo mondo,*  
let us suppose that Jupiter be the soul of this world;

*quello che l’ ánimo giúdica*  
che sia ben fàtto,*  
that which the soul judges to be well done;

*crédo [che] mi portàsse*  
ambré,*  
I believe that he loved me;

*domandáva, che ció fóssese,*  
he asked, what that was;

*non so che méne pánsi, o che*  
mi dica,*  
I know not what to think, or what to say.

The verb is put in the conjunctive, when it is dependent upon a unipersonal verb, such as *sembráre,* 'to seem'; *parerè,* 'to appear'; *mostráre,* 'to show'; *bisognáre,* 'must' or 'to be obliged'; &c.; as,

*mi* *sempbráva,* *che avéssese*  
voglia di ridere,*  
it appeared to me as if he had a wish to laugh;
it seems as if thou wert dead;
it shows that Rome was under the government of kings;
it was necessary that he should set out the next morning.

The dependent verb is put in the conjunctive, when preceded by a comparative or a superlative; as,

costei fu dal padre tanto amata, quanto alcuna figliuola da padre fosse giammai,
tra il più saggio ed il più avveduto uomo, che al mondo fosse,

this young woman was as dear to her father, as any other child ever was to a parent;
he was the wisest and the most prudent man that there ever was in the world.

The dependent verb is likewise put in the conjunctive when it is preceded by the relative pronouns, chi, 'who'; and quale, 'which,' 'what'; as,

qui vi non era chi le smaritte forze rivocasse,
dicendoli quale volesse,

there was no one there who could restore to her her lost spirits;
asking him which he would prefer.

The verb is also put in the conjunctive after the conjunction se, 'if';* the adverb quando, used in the signification of 'if,' 'provided'; and the adverbs dove, dove, both in the signification of 'if,' 'when,' 'in case that,' and in their proper signification of 'where'; as,

se d'esser meritato laggiù di neri,

if thou dost not disdain to be mentioned there below;

---

* Instances are, nevertheless, to be found, in which the verb is put in the indicative after se; as,

Non so, se a voi quello se ne farà, che a me ne parer'debbe. (Bocc. Intr.) I do not know, whether it will seem to you, as it would seem to me.
GOVERNMENT OF WORDS. 429

to vóglio pórre fine álle the angosce quándo tu vógli,
óve cosí non fósse,
dóve tu non vógli cosí fare,
vómmene in gustà d' órbó, che non sa óve si Váda,
to non so dóve to mi fíggga,

I wish to put an end to thy suffering, if [or provided] thou wishest it;
if [or when] it will not prove so;
if [or when, or in case that] thou dost not wish to do so;
I move along like a blind man, who does not know whither he goes;
I know not whither I should fly.

[For a List of Verbs governing a noun or another verb, either in the objective, or in any other relation, preceded by a preposition, see Appendix E.]

EXAMPLES.

Ingráto è chi il benefício négà d' áver ricevúto. (Am. Ant., d. 17. r. 2.)

Dobbiámo parlándo impáráre á tacérere. (Am. Ant. d. 7. r. 3.)

So io bénè, che stánótte égli ne portò l' ánima múia. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Io mi crédo, che le suóre sién tutte á dormírè. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Io crédo, égli ér n' andò disperáto. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Teméndo, non gli ávvenísse quéllo, che gli ávvenne. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 6.)

Vi díco, ch' égli é mórtio. (Bocc.)

So ch' égli é cosí, ma non ne compréndo la ragióné. (Class.)

Égli sta bénè, sálvo che gli duóle il cápo. (Barb. Gr. Gr.)

He is ungrateful, who denies to have received a benefit.

We must, in speaking, learn how to keep silent.

I know well, that last night he carried away my soul.

I believe that the nuns are all gone to sleep.

I believe, he went away in despair.

Fearing, lest it should happen to him, what in fact happened to him.

I tell you, that he is dead.

I know it is so, but do not understand the reason.

He is well, except that he has the headache.
Sennuccio, I wish that thou shouldst know in what manner I am treated.

Therefore I desire that it should be put in execution.

She called him, and begged him to come.

He ordered one of his domestics to bring him into his house, and cause something to eat to be given to him, for God's sake.

Dost thou believe, that Nicostatius will observe the loyalty towards thee, that thou dost towards him?

So that I fear, alas! that excessive grief will destroy the heart.

It displeased them exceedingly, that the Perugians should have broken the league.

But let us suppose, that Jupiter, as they will have it, be the soul of this world.

That thou shouldst do, what thy soul judges to be well done.

I believe that he loved me, and that he was no less ardent in love than I.

He asked, what that was.

I do not know what to think, or what to say of it.

It appeared to me, as if he had a wish to laugh.

It seems as if thou wert dead, what ails thee?
And thus it shows, that Rome
was under the government of kings
one hundred and fifty-four years.

And that it was necessary that
he should set out the next day.

This young woman was as ten-
derly loved by her father, as any
other child ever was by a parent.

He was the wisest and most
prudent man that ever there was
in the world.

There was no one there who
could either with cold water or
by any other means, restore to her
her lost spirits.

Asking him which he would
prefer, either that he should return
him immediately his hog, or that
he should go to the rector.

I will return thanks to her for
thy favor, if thou dost not disdain
to be mentioned there below.

I wish to put an end to thy
troubles, if thou thyself wishest it.

If it will not prove so, I will
remain a Jew as I am.

And if thou dost not wish to
do so, recommend thy soul to
God.

I move along like a blind man,
deprived of light, who does not
know where he goes, and yet he
departs.

Here they are all out; I know
not whither I should fly, where I
should conceal myself.
The *regimen* or *complement of prepositions* is generally a *noun*, a *pronoun*, or a *verb*, either in the *objective*, or in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by another *preposition*; as,

\[\text{to non dáva lóco per lo mío córpo al trapassár de' rággi,}\]
\[\text{volgéansi circá nói le dòe ghirlánde,}\]
\[\text{un giorno, diétro mangiàre, laggìù venútone,}\]
\[\text{cominciò a piágnere sopra di léi,}\]
\[\text{assái prèssó a Salérno è una cósia,}\]
\[\text{lontáno da ógni úomo,}\]

*I gave no way for the rays to pass through my body;*
*the two garlands [of unfading roses] wreathed about us;*
*one day having come there below, after dinner;*
*he began to mourn over her;*
*very near Salerno there lies a coast;*
*far from every man.*

[For a List of Prepositions governing the objective or any other relation preceded by a preposition, see Appendix L.]

**Examples.**

When they perceived, that through my body I gave no way for the rays to pass.

Thus about us wreathed the two garlands of unfading roses.

One day having come there below, after dinner, he seated himself in a corner upon a cushion.

He began to mourn over her, not otherwise than if she had been dead.
GOVERNMENT OF WORDS.

Assai presso a Salerno è una costa il mare riguardante, la quale gli abitanti chiamano la costa di Malfi. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

Da una parte della sala, assi lontano da ogni uomo, colia donna si posò a sedere. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

Very near Salerno there lies a coast looking upon the sea, which the inhabitants call the coast of Amalfi.

In one corner of the hall, very far from every man, he sat down with the lady.

REGIMEN OF CONJUNCTIONS.

There are some conjunctions, in Italian, which have a verb for their regimen, which they require to be put either in the indicative, or the conjunctive mood.

The following are those, which require the verb to be put in the conjunctive mood:

- Acciocché, affinché, abbenché, ancorché, avegnaché, benché, comeché, contutloché, quantunque, sebbene, tuttoché, avanti che, anzi che, innanzi che, prima che, a meno che, a condizione che, con altro che, purché, comé se
- in order that; though, although;
- before, sooner than; except, unless;
- on condition, provided that; as if;
- comunque, conciociaché, caso che, in caso che, dátò che, supposted che, finché, intantoché, infino che, instino che, sinché,
- however; whereas, since;
- in case that; suppose, grant that;
- till, until;
- notwithstanding that;
- for fear that, lest;
- if, when, whenever;
- even when; if;
- without;
- only that.*

* The following instances are, nevertheless, met with in the classics, in which

37
SYNTAX.

To which may be added the conjunction perché, used in the signification of 'although,' and 'in order that': also the conjunctions che, 'that'; se, 'if'; quando, in the signification of 'if,' 'in case that,' 'provided'; and the adverbs òve, dòve, both in their own signification and that of the conjunctions 'if,' 'when,' 'provided'; as has been already mentioned at p. 428, in treating of the regimen of verbs.

Se requires the verb in the conjunctive, when it expresses something contingent or doubtful; but when it expresses a sure, natural, or expected circumstance, or when the action of the verb is entirely past, the verb is put in the indicative; as,

se tu ti cài ti non ti verrò dietro di galoppo,

dimmi se io posso adoperare alcuna cosa,

nói glielo farém fare, se tu vorrai,

s' io meritai di voi mènte ch'io viissi, non vi movéte,

se gli occhi suoi ti fur dolci nè càsi,

s' io dissi fúlso, e tu falsásti il cónto,

if thou do cast thee down, I cannot chase thee on foot;

tell me whether I can do any thing for thee;

we will make her do it, if thou wishest it;

if, living, I merited aught of you, move ye not;

if her eyes were dear and sweet to thee;

if I spoke false, thou falsely stamp-edst the coin.

the conjunctions avvegnaché, benché, comeché, contuttocché, sebbéne, are used with a verb in the indicative mood:

Avvegnaché quel di ritro avrà andato a lavorare. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Benché a me non pareva mai che voi giudicaste. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 10.)

La quale il giovane foscamente amava, comeché ella non se ne accorse, per quello ch'io vegga. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Si ricominciò la guerra contro gli Arétini, contuttocché nel segreto rimassero gli Arétini in trattato di accordo col Florentini. (Gio. Vill. l. 11. c. 58.)

Perché sérben'è i giovani l' aume'ntano, d' non adanno di poi mantenéria. (Gell.)

Since, that day, no one had gone to work.

Although I never thought you were a judge.

Whom the young man ardently loves, although she does not perceive it, for what I see.

They renewed the war against the Arétines, although in secret the Arétines remained on terms of peace with the Florentines.

For, although young men enlarge them (the cities), they know not how to govern them afterwards.
EXAMPLES.

Acciocch' è più avanti non potesse il principe venire. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Perocchè Amor l' avèa già ferita, — Abbenché le parea esse ser tradita. (Bocc. Ninf. Fies.)

Alessandro, anch'è gran paura avesse, stette pur cheto. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Niuno altro, per quantunque avesse agito l' avvedimento, potrebbe che io mi fossi conosciere. (Bocc. Fiam.)

Tuttech' questa gente maladetta in vera perfezione giama mai non vadà. (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Io non ti concederò quello che seguista, perché, datochè noi ci diamo, non perciò vestiamo debitori. (Varch. Sen. ben. 5. 9.)

Dico, che comunque si sia, egli ha tante ore la notte quanto il di. (Ser. Bruin. Tes. 2. 44.)

La medicina da guarirlo so io troppo bene fare, perché a voi dia il cuore di segretò tenere ciò che io vi ragionerò. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

Nonostante che fosse pregato da tutti i cittadini, che gli dovesse perdonare. (Zibald. Andr. 3. 3.)

Or ved che sappi, innanzi che più andi, — Ch' èi non peccaro. (Dant. Inf. 4.)

Seguirò l'ombra di quel dolce lauro, — Finché l'ultimo di ch'è una quest'occhi. (Petr. c. 7.)

Ch' io spero — Farmi immortale, perch'è la carne muòia. (Petr. c. 18.)

In order that the prince should not approach any further.

Because Love had already wounded her, although she thought she was betrayed.

Alexander, although he had great fear, remained quiet.

No one else, however acute perception he may have, could know who I am.

Though this accursed race never can reach true perfection.

I will not grant thee what follows, because, supposing we should give them to them, we shall remain no less debtors.

I say, that however it may be, there are as many hours in the day as in the night.

The medicine to cure him, I know well how to apply, provided you have a mind to keep secret what I shall tell you.

Notwithstanding he was begged by all the citizens to pardon him.

Now I wish thou mayst know, before thou passest any farther, that these did not sin.

I will follow the shade of that sweet laurel, until death close these eyes.

So that I hope to make myself immortal, though the body die.
La 'ncominciò a battere per chè 'l passasse. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

Se tu ti cali, io non ti ver- mò dietro di galoppo. (Dant. Inf. 22.)

Caccia via la païra, e dimmi se io posso adoperare alcòna cosa. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Nói glièlo farèm farè, o voglia ella o no, se tu vorrài. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

O vii che siete dite dentro ad un fuoco,— S' io meritàt di voi mentre ch' io vissi,— S' io meritàt di voi assai o poco,— Quándo nel mondo gli altri versi scrissi,— Non vi movète. (Dant. Inf. 26.)

'Anzi la voce al suo nòme rischiàri,— Se gli occhi suoi ti fur dolci nè càrf. (Petr. s. 40.)

S' io dissi falso, e tu fal- sàsti il cónio,— Disse Sinòne. (Dant. Inf. 30.)

He began to beat her in order to cure her.

If thou do cast thee down (into the pitch) I cannot chase thee on foot.

Drive away fear, and tell me whether I can do any thing for thee.

We will make her do it, whether she is willing or not, if thou wishest it.

O ye, who dwell two spirits within one fire, if living I merited aught of you, whatever may have been the measure of that desert, when in the world I wrote my lofty verses, move ye not.

Nay let thy voice celebrate her name, if her eyes were ever dear and sweet to thee.

If I spoke false, thou falsely stampedst the coin, said Sinon.

EXERCISE XXIX.

A good man, destitute of money, and of poor mind.

Deprived of every virtue, and full of every pride.

Of ancient blood, and (of) noble manners. The

Marquis of Monferrato was a man of great valor.

With some good wine, and some preserves she re-

buòn uòmo, pòvero monéta, strètto' ánimo.

Vòto valór, piénò orgóglio.

Antico sangue, nòbile costúme.

Marchèse uòmo alto valór.

alquánto buòn vino, alquánto confètto — vicom-
GOVERNMENT OF WORDS.

criuted him. (The) pride is hated by — (is odious
fortâre
superbia — — odio

to) God and by — (to) (the) men. They foment that
Dio — uomo. — Fomentâre

| bad disposition | of theirs, inclined to (the) evil. |
| geniâccio — — inclinâre mâle. |

Ready to do virtuously to | others that, which she
volère11 — essere12 operâre14 | in8 | 10. 
cambio

for that, which I received. She left at liberty

every-one until (to) the hour of (the) supper. This

young-woman is neither from Cremona, nor from Pavia,
giovâne — non1

, nay she is from Faenza — (a Faentine). He wished,

 — — — — Faentino. — Volère,

that I should see all the holy relics. Show me
vedere — santo reliquia. Mostrâre_

the way, that goes to Rome. I myself know not,
cammino, andâre Rôma. 'medésimo sapère1',

what — (that which) I wish (for myself). I know

volère — " sapère

not, who thou mayst be, nor by what means thou hast

, modo — essere

come here-below. — Being much pleased | with the
venire5 — Piacêndogli molto |

manners of the boy, he asked who he was.
modo fanciûlo, — domandâre

He began pleasantly to speak, and to ask who
— Comînciâre piacêvole ragionâre, — domandâre

he was, whence he came, and where he was-going.

, — venire, — andâre.

He was disposed to go wherever it was (to) her

disposto andâre —

37°
pleasure | to go: As I arrived | on the other side, |
a grado² | — —. giungere | di là, |
there was one who seemed to know — (that he parere — — —
knew) all (the) my sins by heart. Do thou sapere¹ ² ³ peccato⁴ a mente. — ³
stay (thysel) whom by the fashion of thy garb Sostare¹ ² ³ a ménte | a robe
we deem to be — (seemest to-us to be) some native sembrare¹ ² ³
— — — (some one) of our evil land. If I had this pra⁴ tera².

money, I would lend it to thee immediately. Who dendro, prestare² ³ ¹ incontanente.
would fare better than I, if that money were mine?
stare dendro ?
Whenever you wish, I will take you a great part — volere, portare² ³ ¹ gránde parte
of the way on horse-back. He might govern such via a cavallo. — reggere⁴ quid² a part (of it) as he should wish. He asked of the parte³ ⁶ — volere. — Domandare —
host where he could sleep. (The) virtue will not éste ésser potere dormire. virtù
be conquered by (the) misery. Many novels essere vincere miseria. novella

| come into my mind | to be | related by me. |
| mi si parar a avanti³ | per dovere ésser¹ raccontare² ³ ².

God feeds the angels and (the) his servants with |
Iddio pascere angelo ² servo¹ di |
love and (with) eternal joy. Let there be this amore di sempiterno¹ gáudio. ³ ³ ³ ³ ³ ³ ³ ³
law in (the) friendship, that of (the) friends we legge³ ³ ³ ³ ³ amicizia⁴ da⁵ ⁷ da⁵ ⁹ amico¹⁰ —
should ask but an honest thing. Deliberate all (the) thy
	
domandare\textsuperscript{13} \quad \textit{onesto}\textsuperscript{11} cosa\textsuperscript{12}. Deliberare\textsuperscript{7} \\
\quad \textit{amico}\textsuperscript{6};

A friend who is a time-server — (according to
\begin{align*}
\textit{amico} & \quad \textit{di} \\
\textit{stare} & \quad \textit{fermo} \\
\textit{tribolazione}. & \quad \textit{trarre}\textsuperscript{3}
\end{align*}
the time) will not be constant in the day of (the)
tempo stére fermo di

| (even) | like that voice, which replies | from | the
| áncio | voce, rispondere | dópo | the
mountains and the walls to him-who cries-out. In
mőnte muro gridáre.

order that the world should know her and love her.
mundo conóscere\textsuperscript{2} amáre

Although positively it displeases her. And what dif-
strétto dispiacere\textsuperscript{2}.

dference there is between these and the other visions,
ferença avére visión, since the learned men speak of it, I will not write
dottore parlare\textsuperscript{2} 1, 2 scrive
it here. In order to prevent, I say, in case that
salvare, dire,

we | otherwise, that this should be the
— | facénd\textsuperscript{3} altramente\textsuperscript{1}, fora\textsuperscript{6}
cause of blame and ignominy to us. Whereupon he
— biásimo\textsuperscript{3} ignominia\textsuperscript{11}
said to me: “Although thou rendest away all my
— dischioni\textsuperscript{3} mi

hair, I will neither tell (thee), nor show (it to)
— dire\textsuperscript{5} 4, mostrare\textsuperscript{10}
thee, who I am.”
CHAPTER IV.

USE OF ARTICLES.

*Articles* are used, in Italian, before all common nouns employed in a *determinate* sense.

*Nouns* may be employed in a determinate sense in *three different ways*:

First, when, in naming an object, we intend to designate the *whole species or kind*, to which that object belongs; as, *gli uomini, ' [the] men' ;* the noun *uomini* being taken in the *whole extent* of its signification, the article *gli* shows that all the individuals composing the human kind are here spoken of.

Secondly, when we intend to designate a *class of objects* of any kind; as, *gli uomini virtuosi, ' [the] virtuous men' ;* here the noun *uomini*, expresses only a certain number of men, its *signification* being *restricted* by the adjective *virtuosi*.

Thirdly, when we intend to designate *one particular object* of a kind or of a class; as, *l' uomo di cui vi parlo, ' the man of whom I speak to you' ;* the noun *uomo* being taken, in this case, individually, and the article used to express the man spoken of:

*Gli uomini sono delle femmine capo,*

*men are the head of women;*  

*Gli uomini di questa terra si leveranno a romore,*

*the people of this land will rise in an uproar;*  

*se l' uomo [con cui tu parlì] ti faccia liberamente ciò, che 'l tuo dir prega, ancor ti piaccia di dirne,*  

*if the man [with whom thou speakest] will do for thee freely, what thou entreatest, do thou further be pleased to declare to us.*
When the noun is sufficiently *determined* by the nature of the thing, or by the circumstances of the case, the *article* is generally *suppressed*; as,

*costi cavalîli, vómini fu* vittime,  
*quivi sospirô, piãnti, ed álti guáii risonâván,*  
*sôni, cânti, vestîr, giub-chi, vivãnde, quânto puó cuór pensâr, puó chiêder bócca,*  

thus horses and men were victims;  
there sighs, lamentations, and loud moans resounded;  
music, singing, dresses, games, viands, all that the heart can think of, and all that the palace can desire.

The article is also suppressed when the noun is used as a *mere sign of qualification* of the objects expressed. This is generally the case,

First, when the noun is *preceded* by the verb *essere,* 'to be'; as,

*Erâno vómini e fêmmine di grôssô ingégno,*  
*tu, che sê vómo, dovresti sapere delle cose del mondo,*  

they were men and women of dull understanding;  
thou, who art a man, ought to be acquainted with the affairs of the world.

Secondly, when the noun is *preceded* by one of the prepositions, *a, di, da, con, in, per, sêenza*; as,

*uacironoubiçi di sottêrria,*  
*che sì aprêsero a câmpi,*  
*si nutrisce di pâne e d' ácqua,*  
*môrsì da púlci, da mósche,*  
*con bë' mótti, e con ri-spôste prônte,*  
*vênne crescêndo in ânni, in persôna,*  
*per pàràra d' altruí, e per servâre la mia fâma,*  

there issued flames from under the earth, which set fields, villas, and hamlets on fire;  
he feeds on bread and water;  
bitten by fleas, by flies, or gadflies;  
with witty sayings, and prompt replies;  
grew up in years, in stature, and in beauty;  
for fear of other people, and also to preserve my fame;
sòsi penserò di être, sénza I shall do so, without fail.
fálto,

Thirdly, in comparisons of equality, when the noun is preceded by the adverb cóme, 'as, 'like'; as,

non cóme uómini, ma quàsi cóme béstie morivano,
paréva che ruggisse cóme leóne, e belàsse cóme fé-
cora, e rugghiàsse cóme ásino,

they died not like men, but almost like beasts;
he appeared to roar like a lion, to bleat like a sheep, and to bray like an ass.

When a noun is employed in an indeterminate sense the article is never used; as,

quál che tu siti, od ómbra od uómo cérto,
non uóm, uóm già sì,
parmi vedere dónnne e don-
zelle, e sóno abéti e fággi,

whatever thou art, whether a shadow or a living man;
now I am not a man, man I was formerly;
I seem to see ladies and damsels, and they are firs and beeches.

The article is also never used when a noun is preceded by a demonstrative or indefinite pronoun; as,

quésto garzoncello s'in-
cominciò a dèmeicáre,
cóme dile wói còste pá-
ròle?
paréva quélla cotále inter-
mitù trasportáre,
con ogni sollecitudine,
con ogni ingégeno, e con
gõni árte si procédecciano
di riduscere a nulìa la Cri-
striána religione,

this little bōy began to be familiar;
how do you say those words?
it appeared to communicate that same sickness;
they strive with all their zeal, and their power, and their skill, to overthrow the Christian religion.
USE OF ARTICLES.

EXCEPTION.

When a noun is preceded by the indefinite pronoun tutto, the article is used after the pronoun; as,

*TUTTI I PENSIÉRI, TUTTO LO STUDIO, E TUTTE LE OPÈRE,* all the thoughts, all the attentions, and all the actions.

The article, however, is omitted when tutto is used as a mere sign of qualification; as,

*nói siam tutte fémmine,* we are all women;
*ténne il pònte contra tutto Toscánà,* kept possession of the bridge against all Tuscany.

When several nouns come together before or after the verb, and the article is used or omitted before the first of them, this article is to be repeated or omitted before every other noun in the sentence; *as,

*Lucio Silla vinse la virtù, Lucius Sylla surpassed Caius e i trióni, e i sétte Marius in courage and in the consolati di Cáiò Mário, number of his triumphs and consuls;

*nè vecchiézza, nè infermità, nè paúra di morle, nè age, nor sickness, nor dália sua malvagità l'hán- the fear of death, could deter no potuto rimuovere,* him from his wicked course.

* Examples are found in the classics, nevertheless, in which this rule is not rigorously observed; as,

*Amare, e l'irà del re.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 6.)

*Crepita per lo lu'ngó e per trave'm- so.* (Dant. Pur. 9.)

*Feg fólti bòsci, e le rígide A'lpi, In the thick woods, and among the e disér'te splen'ché.* (Bocc. g. 3. rugged Alps, and in lonely caves. n. 10.)

*In the following examples:

*Sopraavéngere i confórnti ed offe're- te dél Venetianë.* (Guiccc. Stor. Ital.)

*Se, col nóme su' o rìpustazionë del padre, ritoramòtelligence migli statti suöi di Fer- ràgia petòva.* (Mach. Stor. Flor.)

*the omission of le before offërte, and of de or collla before riputazionë, are manifest errors of grammatical concordance.

*The love and anger of the king.

*Broken lengthwise and breadthwise.

*There arrived the encouragements and the offers of the Venetians.

*Whether, with his name and the reputation of his father, he could not return to his own estates at Perugia;*
SYNTAX.

EXAMPLES.

GLI ÙOMINI SÔNO DÉLLE FÉMMINE CÂPO, e sênza l’ órdine loro râde vólté riesce alcuna nostra òpéra a laudévol fine. (Bocc. Intr.)

GLI ÙOMINI DI QUÉSTA TÉRRA, vedéndo ciò, si leveráno a ru-móre. (Bocc.)

SE l’ ÙÔM TI FÁCCIA — LIBE- raménte ciò, che ’l túdo dir prega,— Spirito uncercerato, an-córti piáccia — Di pírne cóme l’ ánima si léga — In quéstí nóc-chí. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

COSÌ caválli, ÙÔMNI FUR vìttîme. (Dav. Ann.)

QUÍVI sospíri, piánti, ed ál- ti guá — Rísonávan per l’ òere sênza stélle. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Sóni, cânti, vestíri, giúóchì, vivândé, — Quánto puó cuór pensárá, puó chiéder bócca. (Ariost. Fur. 4. 32.)

ÉRANO ÙÔMINI Ù FÉMMINE DI grósso inégno. (Bocc. Intr.)

TU, che sé’ ÙÔMÔ, dovrésti sapèrè DÉLLE COSE DEL MONDÔ. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)

Uscíron fuóchì dì sottérrà, che si apprésero a câmpi, vil-le, casálì. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

SI nutríscè DI PÂNÈ E D’ Æ- qua. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Non altriménti fan di státe i câni — Or co’ céffò or co’ piè, quàndo son mási — O da pülicì, o da mósche, o da tafáni. (Dant. Inf. 17.)

Con bê’ mótti, e con rísóste frônte. (Bocc. g. 5. fin.)

Men are the head of women, and without their management it seldom happens that any undertaking of ours succeeds well.

The people of this land, seeing this, will rise in an uproar.

If he [this man] will do for thee freely, what thou entreatest, O imprisoned spirit! do thou further be pleased to declare to us, how in these gnarled joints the soul is tied.

Thus horses and men were victims.

There sighs, lamentations, and loud moans resounded through the starless air.

Music, singing, dresses, games, viands, all that the heart can think of, and all that the palate can desire.

They were men and women of dull understanding.

Thou, who art a man, ought to be acquainted with the things of the world.

There issued flames from under the earth, which set fields, villas, and hamlets on fire.

He feeds on bread and water.

Thus use the dogs in summer to ply now with their jaws and now with their feet, when bitten by fleas, or flies, or gadflies.

With witty sayings, and prompt replies.
USE OF ARTICLES. 445

La Violante vénne crescén-
do ed in anni, ed in persóna,
ed in bellezza. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Violante grew up in years, in
s stature, and in beauty.

Così m'è convenuto fàre, e
per passa d'altro, e per
servére la fáma della mia
onestà. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I have been obliged to do so,
for fear of other people, and also to
preserve my character.

Sol tanto vi dirò, che comé im-
pósto m'ave te, così penserò di
fàre senza fallo. (Bocc. g. 3.
n. 5.)

I only tell you that I shall,
without fail, do what you have
ordered.

Non comé uòmini, ma quási
comé bestie morívano. (Bocc.
Intr.)

They died not like men, but
almost like beasts.

Paréva che ruggísse comé
léone, e belásse comé pécora,
e ragghiaísse comé ásino. (Dial.
S. Greg. m.)

He appeared to roar like a lion,
and to bleat like a sheep, and to
bray like an ass.

"Miseréré di me," gridà i lúi,
—"Quál che tu sis, od ómbra
od uòmo cérto." — Rísposem:
"Non uòmo, uòmo gial fúl." (Dant.
Inf. 1.)

"Have mercy on me," cried
I to him, "whatever thou art,
whether a shadow, or a living
man." He answered me: "Now
I am not a man, man I was for-
merly."

Ch’io l’ho négl’occhi, e vedér
seco pármi — Dónne e donzél-
le, e sóno abéti e fágoi. (Petr.
s. 143.)

Whom I have before my eyes,
and I seem to see ladies and dam-
sels with her, and they are firs and
beeches.

Quésto garzoncello s’in-
cominciò a dimesticare con
quésto Federico. (Bocc. g. 5.
n. 9.)

This little boy began to be fa-
miliar with this Federic.

V’òi mi paréte uòmo di Dio,
comé dite v’òi còstèse parôle? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

You appear to me to be a man
of God, how do you say those
words?

Ma ancora il toccáre i pànni
gli infirmi adoperáti paréva
seco quell’cótale infermitá
nel toccátor trasportáre. (Bocc.
Intr.)

But even to touch the clothes
used by the sick appeared to com-
municate with it the same sickness
to the one who had touched them.
E per quello che io estimi, con ogni sollecitudine, con ogni ingegno, e con ogni arte, mi pare che si procacciano di ridurre a nulla, e di cacciare del mondo la cristiana religione. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

Tutti i pensieri delle femmine, tutto lo studio, tutte le opere, a mia una altra cosa tirano, se non a signoreggiare gli uomini. (Bocc. Lab.)

Ricordavi che noi siam tutte femmine. (Bocc. Intr.)

E quel, che, solo.—Contrà tutta Toscana tene in potere. (Petr. Trionf. Fam. c. 1.)

Onde Lucio Silla, che vinse la virtù, e i triumfi e i sette consolati di Cajo Mario, si fe' chiamare il Felice. (Davan.)

Che uomo è costui, il quale nè vecchiezza, nè infermità, nè paura di morte dalla sua malvagità l'hanno potuto rimuovere?

And by what I can judge, it seems that they strive with all their zeal, and their power, and their skill to overthrow the Christian religion, and to drive it from the face of the earth.

All the thoughts, all the attention, and all the actions of women tend to nothing but to rule over men.

Remember that we are all women.

And he, who alone kept possession of the bridge against all Tuscany.

Therefore Lucius Sylla, who surpassed Calius Marius in courage, and in the number of his triumphs and consulships, made himself to be called the Happy.

What a man is this, whom neither age, sickness, nor the fear of death, could deter from his wicked course.

It has been said, that articles are used before nouns employed in a determined sense; adjectives, verbs, adverbs, and prepositions, therefore, when used as nouns, in that sense, require the article before them; as,

sol d'una chiara fonte mubb-ve il dolce e l'amaro, from the same clear fountain springs the bitter and the sweet;

il nascere grande è caso e non virtù, to be born in high life is a chance and not merit;

sarî contênto di sapere il quando, I should be happy to know [the] when;

il dove io ho già pensato, I have already thought [of the] where;

il come ho io ben veduto, I have already seen [the] how;
USE OF ARTICLES.

I will tell you [the] why;
there is something to say for
and against;
I am certain of the affirmative;
every one answered in the negative.

EXAMPLES.

Così sol d’una chiara fonte viva — Muóve il dolce e l’amáro. (Petr. s. 131.)

I am certain of the affirmative;
Thus, from the same clear, living
springs the bitter and the sweet.

Il nascere grande è caso
e non virtù. (Metast. Artas. 1. 1.)

To be born in high life is a
chance and not merit.

Saréi contento di sapere il
quando. (Petr. s. 306.)

I should be happy to know [the] when.

Il dove fo ho già pensato.
(Bocc. g. 2.)

I have already thought [of the]
where.

Il come ho fo ben veduto.
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

I have already seen [the] how.

Del come non ti caglia, il
perchè ti dirò. (Bocc. Filoc. 6.)

Do not trouble thyself about
[the] how, I will tell you [the]
why.

Sìchè ci è il pro e ’l conto.
(Gio. Vill.)

So that there is something to
say for and against.

Son certa del sì. (Bocc.
g. 7. n. 7.)

I am certain of the affirmative.

Ciascuno rispose del no,
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Every one answered in the negative.

The names of abstract substances, and those of gems, metals, liquids, and provisions, require the article before them, when used in a generic sense; as,

Laudévol cosa è né principi
la prudènza,
prudence is praiseworthy in

L’ oro, e le pérle, e i fior
vermigli e biánchi,
the gold, and the pearls, and
the red and white flowers;
water and bread are sweeter than gems and gold.

**Examples.**

Laudévol cosa, e necessaria molto è nel Principi la pru-
denza. (Bocc. Filoc.)

Prudence is praiseworthy; and very necessary to rulers.

L'óro, e le pérle, e i fior
vergigli e bianchi,—Son per
me acerbi e velenosi stécci.
(Petr. s. 28.)

The gold, and the pearls, and
the red and white flowers, are to
me sharp and poisonous thorns.

Vieppiù dolce si trova l'ác-
qua e l'óne;—Che le gém-
me e l'óro. (Petr. Trionf. c. 6.)

Water and bread are sweeter
than gems and gold.

The names of heaven, the earth, and the sea;
of the cardinal points; of the four quarters of the
world; also of kingdoms, provinces, mountains, and
rivers, when, in speaking of them, we consider their
whole extent, take the article;—but when we speak of
any indeterminate part of them, they refusa it; as,

era stato tanto tempo senza
vedere il cielo,
la terra è fredda e secca,
andavi su per lo märe,
era già l'oriente tutto
bianco,
non solamente il levante,
ma quasi tutto il ponente,
il conosceva,
tutta l'Europa è reputata
stretto confine,
l'Italia è stata più volte
soggiogata da' bárbari,
sálvo la Márca Trivigiá-
na,
inghiottita da una eruzione
del Vesúvio,

he had been so long without
seeing the heavens [the sky];
the earth is cold and dry;
 thou didst walk on the sea;
the east was already bright;

not only the east, but also the
greatest part of the west,
knew him;
all Europe is considered to be
a narrow limit;
Italy has been several times
subdued by barbarians;
except the March of Trevigi;
overwhelmed by an eruption
of Mount Vesuvius;
USE OF ARTICLES.

it is intersected by the Adige:

He lived a saint on earth and now is in heaven;

the Christian camp passed to the east;

the glories of Italy;

like flakes of snow on the summit of the Alps, when the wind is hushed;

I quenched my thirst with the water of the Seine.

EXCEPT

Il Lácio, ' [the] Latium', which always takes the article; and I'da, 'Ida'; O'ssa, 'Ossa'; which always refuse it.

Names of seas take the article; as,

IL MEDITERRÂNEO, L' ADRIATICO, the Mediterranean, the Adriatic;

L' EGÉO, the Egean;

L' ATLÂNTICO, IL PACÍFICO, the Atlantic, the Pacific.

Names of cities, islands, and lakes take no article; as,

FÍRENZE, RÔMA, MARSI GLIA, Florence, Rome, Marseilles;

CÍPRO, SCÍO, CRÉTA, Cyprus, Scio, Crete;

lÁGO MAGGIORÉ, DI LUGÁNO, lake Maggiore, of Lugano, of Como.

EXCEPTIONS.

The following names of cities and islands, however, take the article; viz. IL CÍA, 'Cairo'; LA MÍRÂNDOLA, 'Mirandola'; LA ROCÉLLA, 'Rochelles'; L' AÍA, 'Aix'; — IL GIGLIO, 'Giglio'; LA CAPRAIA, 'Capraia'; LA GORGÔNA, 'Gorgona'; and perhaps a few more: also the names of those islands which are spoken of in the plural; as, LE BALEÀRI, 'the Balearic islands'; LE FILIPPINE, 'the Philippine islands'; LE MÔLUÇCHE, 'the Molucca islands'; &c.

The names of the following islands, may or may not take the article; viz. ÉLBA or L' ÉLBA, 'Elba'; SARDÈGNA or LA SARDÈGNA,
SYNTAX.

'Sardinia'; Corse or la Corseca, 'Corsica'; Sicilia or la Sicilia,
'Sicily'; Inghilterra or l' Inghilterra, 'England'; Irlanda or l' Irlanda, 'Ireland.'

Names of cities, &c., always take the article when preceded by an
adjective; as, la bella Firenze, 'the beautiful Florence'; &c.

EXAMPLES.

TANTO TEMPO ÉRA STÁTO SÉNZA VEDÈRE IL CIÉLO. (Bocc.
g. 3. n. 8.)

LA TÉRRA É FREDDA E SECÇA,—L' ÀRE É CÁLDO E ÓMIDO. (Brun. Tes. 1.)

Per la quál tu su per lo màre ANDÁYI. (Dant. Par. 24.)

ÉRA GIÀ L' ORIÉNTE TÚTTO BIANÇO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

NON SOLAMENTE IL LEVÁNTE, MA GIÀ QUÁSI TÚTTO IL PONÉNTE
PER FÁMÀ IL CONÓSÈVA. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

TÚTTO L' EUROPA É RIPUTÁTA STRÉTTO CONFÍNE. (Buon.)

Voi sapète che l' ITÁLIA É STÁTA PIÚ VÓLTE SOGGIOGÁTA
DA MÓLTI BÁRBARI. (Buon.)

Rendégli la Signorìa di Lombardìa, salvo la Marca Trívigiána. (Gio. Vill. 1 3. c. 5.)

O've restò un témpo INGHIOITÌTA la città d' Ercoláno da ùna
ERUZIONE DEL VESÚVIO. (Gang. lett.)

ÉLLA É TAGLIÁTA DÀLL' ÁDIGE, fiume, côme sài, amenissimo.
(Algar. lett.)

VISSE SÁNTO IN TÉRRA, ED ÓRA É IN CIÉLO. (Tass. Ger.)

GIÀ 'L SÉSTO ÁNNO VOLGÉA CHE 'N ORIÉNTE — PASÒ IL CAMPO
CRISTIÁNO all' díta imprésà. (Tass. Ger.)

He had been so long without seeing the sky.

The earth is cold and dry, and the air warm and damp.

By which thou didst walk on the sea.

The east was already bright.

Not only the east, but also the greatest part of the west, knew him by reputation.

All Europe is considered to be a narrow limit.

You know that Italy has been several times subdued by many barbarians.

He restored to him the signory of Lombardy, except the March of Trevigi.

Where the city of Herculaneum was overwhelmed by an eruption of Mount Vesuvius.

It is intersected by the Adige, a very pleasant river, as thou knowest.

He lived a saint on earth, and now is in heaven.

It was already six years since the Christian camp passed to the East on their great undertaking.
USE OF ARTICLES.

The very great glories of Italy.

There fell down dilated flakes of fire, as flakes of snow on the summit of the Alps, when the wind is hushed.

I quenched my thirst with the water of the Seine.

But he does not try to comprehend the Egean sea, and the Atlantic ocean, and he knows he cannot.

Because Florence is a powerful city, and the rival of Rome.

Marseilles is, as you know, an ancient and very noble city.

Guiscard, king of Cyprus.

That every island of Greece should reap corn, and stony Scio and Crete should make wine for him alone.

A journey to the three lakes: Maggiore, of Lugano, and of Como.

Count Guido of Mirandola, pleased with the munificence of Lorenzo, fixed his residence in Florence.

May Capraia and Gorgona rise from their foundations.

Dio or Iddio, ‘God’; and names of persons, when used in their full meaning, never take the article; but, when we limit their signification to designate a particular object, they always take the article; as,

Dio ci mandi bene,

God help us;
SYNTAX.

IDDIO dispése alttraminte,  God ordained otherwise;
Apollo fu veduto saettare il Apollo was seen shooting the
Pitóne, serpent Python;
ovo Ércule segnò li subi where Hercules fixed his boun-
riguárdi, daries;
Oméro, Virgilio, e Dánté, Homer, Virgil, and Dante:

Il Dío della guerra, The God of war;
L’ Apóllo del Belvedere, the Apollo of Belvedere;
L’ Ércule Farnése, the Farnese Hercules;
L’ Oméro Ferrarése, the Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto].

Agreeably to this principle the nouns Dío, Íddío, in the plural, when speaking of the deities of the heathens, take the article; as,
se fosse piaciuto agli Dèi, if it had pleased the Gods;
ge’ Íddí, li quelli governano the Gods, who govern our affairs.
le nostre cose.

They take also the article, when they are preceded by an adjective; as,
L’ omnipotente Dío, the almighty God;
Il grande Achille, the great Achilles;
L’ infelice Priamo, the unhappy Priamus.

They take the article when they are used to designate persons familiarly or publicly known; as,
chiamato il Gerbino, having called Gerbino;
avéva amato la Ninetta, he had loved Ninetta;
la Maddalena, la Mari-
Anna, Magdalen, Marianna.

But when names of persons are preceded by one of the nouns Sérè, ‘Sir’; Messèré, ‘Master’; maéstro, ‘master’; Don, ‘Don’; Dónna, ‘Donna’; Fráte, ‘Friar or Brother’; Sánto or Sánta, ‘Saint’; they re-
fuse the article; as,
Ser Brunetto, Sir Brunetto;
USE OF ARTICLES.

MESSER Guglielmo,                       Mr. William;
MAESTRO Adamo,                          master Adamo;
DON Pietro,                              Don Pedro;
FRATE Albério,                           Friar Albert;
SAN Maurizio,                           Saint Maurice;
SANTA Veridiana,                        Saint Veridiana.

Names of persons, preceded by the nouns Pápa, 'Pope'; Re, 'King,' are better used without the article; as,
Pápa Giovanni, Re Carlo,             Pope John, King Charles.

Surnames or family names take no article, when preceded by names of persons; but when they are used to specify a person of such a family, also when we speak of celebrated men, and when they are preceded by a title, the article is used; as,

Guglielmo Rossiglione, Guglielmo Guardastágo,  William Rossiglione, William Guardastagno;
IL Guardastágo, IL Rossiglione,             Guardastagno, Rossiglione;
IL Petrárca, IL Boccaccio,                Petrarch, Boccaccio;
IL cardíáln Mazzaríni,                    cardinal Mazzarini.

Names of the months take no article; as,
IL sésto di Gennaio fu l'ásce,           the sixth of January was for the axe;
IL primo e l' secondo di Agosto furon le martélla, the first and second of August were for the hammers.

Names of the days may be used with or without the article; as,
Merceledi, dopo dineré,                   Wednesday, after dinner;
IL Sábado mattina si partì di Firenze,  on Saturday morning he left Florence.
SYNTAX.

EXAMPLES.

Entrándo dentro disse: “Dio ci mandi bene; chi è qua?” (Bocc. g. 8 n. 2.)

Iddio, giusto riguardatore degli altri meriti, altramente disposte. (Bocc. g. 2 n. 8.)

Che vu veramente veduto Apollo maettare il velenoso Pitone. (Davan.)

Fo e i compagni eravam vecchi e tardi,— Quando venimmo a quella foca stretta,— Ov' Ercole segnò li suoi riguardi. (Dant. Inf. 26.)

Omero, Virgilio, e Dante han lasciato nelle pitture libro molto di che fare all' immaginativa del legglitore. (Fosc.)

Il Dio della guerra. (Ces.)

L' Apollo del Belvedere. (Miliz. Art. Dis.)

L' Oméron Ferrarese. (Metast. lett.)

Se agli Dei fosse piaciuto. (Bocc. Filoc.)

Gl' iddi, li quali dispóngono e governan noi, e le nostre cose. (Bocc. g. 10 n. 8.)

L' onnipotente Dio, e misericordioso giudice, nasconde dal suo giudizio i nostri falli. (Pass. Ver. Pen.)

E vidi 'l grande Achille,— Che con amore al fine combattéo. (Dant. Inf. 5.)

Il quale molto amata aveva la Ninetta. (Bocc. g. 4 n. 3.)

On entering said: “God help us; who is here?”

God, the just rewarder of people's merit, ordained otherwise.

For Apollo was really seen shooting the venomous serpent Python.

I and my companions were tardy with age, when we came to the strait pass where Hercules fixed his boundaries.

Homer, Virgil, and Dante have left in their pictures much to do for the imagination of the reader.

The God of War.

The Apollo of Belvedere.

The Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto].

If it had pleased the Gods.

The Gods, who dispose of, and govern, us and our affairs.

The almighty God, and merciful judge, conceals our sins from his judgment.

And I saw the great Achilles who fought with love to the end.

Who had ardently loved Ninetta.
USE OF ARTICLES.

E chinando la mano alla sua faccia—Risposi: "Siete voi qui, Ser Brunetto?" (Dant. Inf. 15.)

Messer Guglielmo Rossiglione dà a mangiare alla moglie sua il cuore di Messer Guglielmo Guardastagno. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 9.)

Disse egli a noi: "Guardate, ed attendete—Alla miseria del Maestro Adamo." (Dant. Inf. 80.)

Torto farò alla infinita virtù dell' eccellentissimo Don Pietro de Toledo. (Berr. Tass. lett.)

Fratre Alberto dà a vedere ad una donna, che l' ágnolo Gabrielle . . . . (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Con una bolla istituì l' ordine di San Maurizio. (Den. Riv. Ital.)

Parèva pur Santa Veridiana, che dà a becchare alle serpi. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Morto Papa Giovanni, e non avendo potuto Re Carlo ottenere che si fosse ritirato un Papa Francese. (Gian. Stor. Giv. Nap. l. 20. c. 5.)

Il Guardastagno rispose, che senza fallo il di seguiute andrebbe a cénar con lui. Il Rossiglione, udendo questo, pensò il tempo esser venuto di poterlo ucidere. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5)

L' esquisitezza del Petrarcha, altro nome della nostra volgare poesia. (Buom.)

II Decameròn del Boccaccio è di gran lunga il miglior libro, che abbiamo in fatto d' eloquenza Italiana. (Den. Sag. Letter.)

And inclining my hand towards his face, I answered: "Sir Brunetto, are you here?"

Mr. William Rossiglione gives to his wife the heart of Mr. William Guardastagno to eat.

And he said to us: "Regard attentively the woe of master Adamo."

I should do wrong to the immense merit of the most excellent Don Pedro de Toledo.

Friar Albert gives a woman to understand, that the angel Gabriel ....

With a bull he instituted the order of Saint Maurice.

She seemed Saint Veridiana, feeding the serpents.

Pope John having died, and King Charles having not been able to obtain that a French Pope should be re-elected.

Guardastagno answered, that he would without fail sup with him the following night. Rossiglione, hearing this, thought the time of murdering him was come.

The exquisite elegance of Petrarch, another god of our Italian poetry.

The Decameron of Boccaccio is by far the best book which we have in point of Italian eloquence.
A noun preceded by an adjective takes the article before this adjective; as,

* This rule with regard to _possessive pronouns_ has not been strictly followed by the early writers, as may be seen by the following examples:

_Quod_ est_ veder_ quid voléas opérte, _Quod_ uel_ quid_ av_ scrivon_ tuitu aux_ dispen!_ rai. (Dant. Par. 19.)

_Póssum vos_ trivi émper. (Petr. Trionf. Temp.)

_Quid_ ést_ ad_ Dio a vos_ trivi _cor_ émi_ nér_ mandati òmpra ò_ mortali. (Bocc. Intr.)

_Besides there are in Italian several modes of expression, such as a_ mia_ pósse, _at_ my pleasure_; in_ suo_ nome, _in his name_;_ contra_ sua_ véglia, _against his will_; _et_., _in which, by a peculiarity of language, the article is_ elegantly _expressed_; as,_

_Fo non_ pósse_ far_ cálio_ e_ freddo a mia_ résta. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

_Quést_ agrido, _in suo_ nome, _il_ tróppo_ ardere. (Tass. Ger. 3. 53.)

_Ed_ io, _contra_ sua_ véglia, alicróna_ il_ méno. (Petr. s. 39.)

If the sixth of January was for the axe, and the first and second of August were for the hammers.

Wednesday, after dinner, they assailed from different quarters those who sided with the Adimari.

The news having reached Florence on Friday evening, Messer Giambertaldo left Florence on Saturday morning.

Cardinal Mazzarini, an Italian also.
refuse it when they are preceded by a demonstrative, interrogative, or indefinite pronoun; as,

IL VENTÉSIMO Cánto, the twentieth Canto;
LA PRIMA canzón, the first song;
LA MIA pátria, my country;
IL VÓSTRO amico, your friend:

QUÉSTI sospíri, these sighs;
QUAL paúra? what fear;
QUALÚNQUE álTRA sjánté, any other woman;
ÚNA COTÁL mezzanità, such a middling course.

EXCEPTIONS.

When the nouns are preceded by the indefinite pronouns, únó, 'one'; álтро, 'other'; stésso or medésimo, 'same'; they are used with the article; as,

L' ÚNA e L' ÁLTRA máño, the one and the other hand;
NÉLLA MEDÉSIMA cíttà, NEL ME-
 Meditation giorno, in the same city, in the same day.

Sometimes the noun, which is preceded by an ordinal number or a possessive pronoun, is understood; as,

non stringéndosí néllle vi-
vándose quànto i PRIMI, nè
nel bére quànto i SECONDI,
sóma d' áltri ómeri che dá: a burden for stronger shoul-
tuí,
ders than thine.

When the noun, which is preceded by a possessive pronoun, is one of those which express kindred or relation, quality or rank, and this noun is in the singular number, the article is suppressed;* but, if the noun is in the plural, the article is always used; as,

* Notwithstanding this, instances are often found in excellent writers, in which
SYNTAX.

MIO FIGLIO ot' è?
suo PÀDRE ei fèce molli dàn-
ni,
MIA MÀDRE, un fratèllo mi-
nòre, et io,
ména téco TÀA MÒGLIÉ,
il nòbile altò di Filippo, usatò
da salute àl suò MÀRITO,
il dirò a mio FRATÈLLO,
VÓSTRA SÒRÀLÀ, VÓSTRA
ZÌÀ,
Suà Eccellènza le bacìò la
mànò,
stàmo assai bène con Suà
Altèzza,
S'ìnteresi di Suà MAESTÀ,
where is my son?
his father did us many injuries;
my mother, a younger brother,
and I;
take thy wife with thee;
the noble action which Philip
had done for the safety of
her husband;
I will tell it to my brother;
your sister, your aunt;
His Excellency kissed her
hand;
we stand very well with His
Highness;
His Majesty's interests:

Guardìi nel viso ài mièi
FIGLIUÒLÌ,
rìngrazio LE LÒRO SIGNORÌE,
I looked upon the countenance
of my sons;
I thank your Lordships.

EXCEPT

When the noun is separated from the pronoun by an adjective

the article is used before nouns of kindred and quality in the singular, preceded by possessive pronouns; as,

Ecco il tu'o FIGLIO. (Guar. Prat. Fid. 1.)

Arette Cirenaica, che dopo la morte del
su'o PÀDRE, rìesse la scuòla. (Firen. lett.)

Fedér puòì con quanto affètto, — La
vìs e' s' avvicìchìia ál su'o MÀRITO. (Tass. Amint. 1. 1.)

Adèndìo rigùardo àlla VÓSTRA ECCEL-
ÌÈNZA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Arìdirò di pòrgere i prièghi mièi àlla
VÓSTRA ALTÈZZÀ. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

La Suà MAESTÀ. (Dav.)

Behold thy son.

Arette of Cyrene, who, after her fa-
ther's death, directed the school.

Thou mightest see with what affection
the vine entwines itself round her hus-
band [the oak].

Paying regard to your Excellency.

I will take the liberty of advancing
my prayers to your Highness.

His Majesty.
USE OF ARTICLES.

placed between them; and when it is *preceded* by the pronoun *loro*, 'their'; in which cases the *article* is *used* even in the singular; as,

AL *miò* DISPIETATO PÒDRE,
LA LÒRO FIGLIA, LA LÒRO SO-
RÈLLA,

to my cruel father;
their daughter, their sister.

The *article* is also *suppressed*, when the noun, preceded by a possessive pronoun, is also *preceded* by a *numeral adjective*, or a *demonstrative* or *indefinite pronoun*; as,

CON QUÆSTO SUO FIGLIUOLO,
QUÁLCHE SUO AMICO,
ÒGNI MIO UFFICIO,
NIÛN VÔSTRO SÀTTO,
CÈRTI SUÒI AMICI,

with this son of hers;
some of his friends;
all my obligations;
none of your business;
certain friends of his.

The *relative* pronoun *quàle*, 'which,' when *preceded* by its *antecedent*, *requires* the *article*;* but it refuses* the article when it is used in the signification of *chi*, 'he who'; when it expresses *doubt*, or when it expresses *similitude*; as,

SETTE GIÒVANI DÔNNE, I NÔ-
MI DELLE QUÀLI RACCON-
TERÈI,
QUÀL PIÙ GÈNTE POSSÈDE,
QUÀL GUERRIÈRO CRISTIÀNO,
QUÀL PIÙ VI PIÀCE DÈLLE DÈUE,

seven young women, whose
names I would relate;
he who has most people [soldiers];
like a Christian warrior;
which of the two you like best.

The words *signòre* or *signòra*, when used *substan-
tively* in the signification of the *master* or *mistress* of a

* In poetry, however, the *article* is often *suppressed*; as,

O DÌVA LUCE, QUÀLE, IN TRE PERSÔNE — Ed una essenza, il CÌEL governì e lÌ MONDO. (Bocc. Amet. 98.)

E quèi: "Di rÌÓDÌ — IncòNTRÀ," mi risòse, "che di mÌÌ — FACCÌA 'L CAMÌÌ-
NO acbà, per qua'le in vÌDÒ!'” (Dant.
Inf. 9.)

O divine light, who, one substance in
three persons, governest Heaven and the
world.

And he replied to me: "It seldom
happens, that any one of us makes the
journey which I am going."
thing, take the article; but when used adjectively as titles or epithets, they take the article, when we speak of, and they refuse it, when we speak to, a person; as,

**IL SIGNORÉ** [di quéstá cása] è uscito,

**LA SIGNORA è occupáta,**

**vói quí siéte IL SIGNORÉ,**

**IL SIGNOR CARLO DÉI ed IL SIGNOR ANDREA CAVALCANTI,**

**IL SIGNOR CARDINÁLE SPINOLA,**

**IL SIGNOR MARCHÉSE e LA SIGNORA contéssa,**

the master [of this house] is gone out;

the mistress is engaged;

you are the master here;

Mr. Charles Dati and Mr. Andrew Cavalcanti;

Cardinal Spinola;

the marquis and the countess:

---

*O SIGNOR ACHILLE!*

vedéte, **SIGNORI,** com' égli *m' avea lasciato,*

**SIGNORI e dónne, vói dovête sapérre,**

see, sirs, how he had left me;

gentlemen and ladies, you must know.

Agreeably to this rule, the words **SIGNORÉ** and **SIGNORA,** take the article, when used to express 'our Lord' [God], and 'our Lady' [the Virgin];* and refuse it, when used with the adverbs si, 'yes'; and no or non, 'no'; in affirmative and negative phrases; as,

**IL SIGNORÉ, JESÚ,**

**LA SIGNORA délle Grázie,**

**SIGNOR SI,**

**NON SIGNORÁ,**

our Lord, Jesus;

our Lady of the Graces;

yes, Sir;

no, Madam.

---

* In the following instances the article is suppressed before the word **SIGNORÉ,** preceded by the possessive pronoun nostro;

A **CUI NÓSTRO SIGNORÉ lasciò le chiávi.**

(Dant. Par. 94.)

Quanto tesoro vóll — **NÓSTRO SIGNORÉ** in prima da San Pietro — Che pondersse le chiávi in sua balca? (Dant. Inf. 19.)

Si dèc essere lo cavalière astinente, e dirigiumare il Venardì, in rimembránza di **NÓSTRO SIGNORÉ.** (Nov. Ant. 51.)

To whom our Lord [Christ] left the keys.

What treasures did our Lord demand of St. Peter, before he put the keys into his charge?

A knight ought to be abstinent, and ought to fast on Friday, in commemoration of [the death of] our Lord.
Finally, there are several expressions in Italian, in which the article is always suppressed; as,

*andare a casa, a palazzo or a corte, a nozze, a festa, a chiesa,*

*stare or essere in casa, in bottega, in piazza, in città, in campagna or contado,*

*uscire di casa, di città, di contado,*

*avere fame, séte, caldo, freddo,*

*avere in mano, mettre in bocca,*

*menare a spasso, tener tavaola,*

*correr rischio, render conto,*

*dare ordine, prestare fede,*

...to go home, to court, to a wedding, to a feast, to church;

to live or to be at home, in the shop, in the square, in the city, in the country;

to go out of the house, of the city, of the country;

to be hungry, thirsty, warm, cold;

to have in hand, to put into one’s mouth;

to take one to walk, to give a dinner;

to run a risk, to give account;

to give orders, to give credit.

**Examples.**

*Questo è dunque il gran male, il gran peccato, il gran fatto adoperato da Gisippo?*  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

*Di nuova pena mi convien far versi,—E dar materia al ventesimo canto—Della prima canzone, ch’è d’esser sommersi.*  
(Dant. Inf. 20.)

*La mia patria mi ha nutrito saviammente.*  
(Am. Ant. d. 2. r. 6.)

*Io vi voglio dire ciocch’è il vostro amico mi fece stamane.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*Che fanno omai méco questi sospiri?*  
(Petr. c. 33.)

*Quáth lèggi, quáth minacce, quál paúra?*  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

*Is this, then, the great evil, the great sin, the great crime committed by Gisippus?*

*I must write verses respecting new torchets, to be the subject of the twentieth canto of the first song, which treats of those who are sunk in woe.*

*My country has brought me up wisely.*

*I wish to tell you what your friend did to me this morning.*

*What do these sighs do with me?*

*What laws, what threats, what fear?*
SYNTAX.

Sé' tu più che qualunque altre dolorosetta fante. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Per una cotal mezzanitâ, e per contentare il popolo, elessero due cavaliere Frati Gaudenzi. (Gio. Vill. l. 7. c. 13.)

Ed un, ch' avea l' una e l' altra man mozza. (Dant. Inf.)

E nella medesima città, nel mese medesimo di Aprile, nel medesimo giorno sei, nell' anno mille trecento quarantotto, da quanta luce quella luce fu tolta. (Petr. lett.)

Molti altri servavano una messana via, non stringendosi nella vivande quanto i primi, né nel bere quanto i secondi. (Bocc. Intr.)

Che fai le onore — è d' altri omeri sòma, che dá' tuoi. (Petr. a. 5.)

Mio figlio ov' è, e perché non è teco? (Dant. Inf. 10.)

Sóo pàdre ci fece molti dânni. (Dav. Stor. 4.)

Mía màdre, un fratello minore, ed io, siamo restati nell' estrema miseria. (Soav. Nov.)

Io vóglie che tu ti vada, e meni teco tua moglie. (Bocc.)

Inteso il nobile atto di Filippo, usato a salute di suo marito. (Giral. lett.)

Po il dîrò a mio fratello. (Bocc.)

Vòstra sorella mi mandò a casa Monna Lessandra, vòstra zìa. (Cecch. Dot. 2. 2.)

E sua eccellenza le baciò la mano. (Car. lett.)

Art thou more than any other weeping woman.

To observe such a middling course, and to satisfy the people, they elected two knights [of the order of] Joyous Friars.

And one, who had the one and the other hand cut off.

And in the same city, in the same month of April, on the same sixth day, in the year one thousand three hundred and forty-eight, that light (Laura) was taken from this light.

Many others chose a method between the two, not confining themselves in eating like the former, nor in drinking like the latter.

For to do her honor is a burden for stronger shoulders than thine.

Where is my son, and why is he not with thee?

His father did us many injuries.

My mother, a younger brother, and I, have remained in extreme misery.

I wish that thou shouldst go, and take thy wife with thee.

Having heard of the noble action, which Phillip had done for the safety of her husband.

I will tell it to my brother.

Your sister sent me to Monna Lessandra's, your aunt.

And His Excellency kissed her hand.
USE OF ARTICLES.

We two, as it seems to me, stand very well with His Highness.

His Majesty's interests.

Whence I looked upon the countenances of my sons without saying a word.

To which I reply, before thanking your Lordships.

God put into the mind of my cruel father.

The Amidei hearing, that Messer Buonelmonte had taken another wife, and wished no longer for their [daughter, sister] met together.

Monna Giovanna used to go into the country with this son of hers.

By the advice of some friend of his.

O beloved heart [object], all my obligations towards thee are satisfied.

They do not meddle with any of your business.

He received a message from certain very great friends of his.

Seven young women, whose names I would relate in due form.

He who has most people [soldiers], is surrounded by most enemies.

Thou livedst like a Christian and holy warrior.
Nella vostra elezione sta di tore quale più vi piace delle due, o, se volête, amendue. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)

IL SIGNORE è USCITO. (Gram. Gram.)

LA SIGNORA è OCCUPATA. (Vanz.)

Voi qui siête il signore. (Bocc.)

IL SIGNOR CARLO DÁTI, IL SIGNOR AGOSTINO NÉLLI, ED IL SIGNOR ANDRÉA CAVALCANTI vi salutano caramente. (Red. lett.)

IL SIGNOR CARDINALE SPINOLA, nostro legato. (Bent. lett. 1.)

IL SIGNOR maestro, il signor marchese, e la signora contessa. (Gram. Gram.)

O SIGNOR Achille! (Guid.)

E a' villani rivolto, disse: "VEDÈTE, signori, com' egli m' avea lasciato nell' albergo in armese." (Bocc. g. 9. n. 4.)

SIGNORI e DONNE, voi dovête sapere, che . . . . (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Andarono, e pensomì che trovarono il signore, Gesù. (Vit. S. G. Bat.)

E dal buon uomo furono alla signora delle Grazie raccomandate. (Vit. S. Cater.)

"SIGNOR sì, da cavaliere," gridò il conte. (Manz. Prom. Spos.)

NON SIGNORA; è in compagnia d'un forestiere. (Gold. Avvent.)

Giunti a casa del padre della fanciulla. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

It is at your option to take which of the two you like best, or, if you wish, both of them.

The master is gone out.

The mistress is engaged.

You are the master here.

Mr. Charles Dati, Mr. Augustine Nelli, and Mr. Andrew Cavalcanti salute you affectionately.

Cardinal Spinola, our legate.

The master, the marquis, and the countess.

O Mr. Achilles!

And turning to the rustics, he said: "See, sirs, in what condition he had left me at the inn."

Gentlemen and ladies, you must know, that . . . .

They went, and I imagine that they found our Lord, Jesus.

And by that good man they were recommended to our Lady of the Graces.

"Yes, sir, [it is the act] of a nobleman," cried out the count.

No, madam; she is accompanied by a stranger.

Having arrived at the house of the father of the girl.
USE OF ARTICLES.

Benchè i cittadini non abbiano a far cosa del mondo a palagio, pur talvolta vi vanno. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)

Né già arésti amico sì c'aro, per cui maligna domé tu andassì a corre. (Senec. Pist.)

Che a nòzze, o a fésta, o a chiesa andér potessè. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

Gli sbanditi uscirono quasi tutti di città, e di contádo. (Gio. Vill.)

The citizens sometimes go to court, though they have nothing in the world to do there.

You would not have so dear a friend, for whom you would go into court as bail.

That she might go to wedding, or to a feast, or to church.

Almost all the outlaws went out of the city, and out of the country.

When we wish to designate a portion or a number of the objects in a class, this may be done in four different ways:

First, by naming only the objects of the class; as, ho buón vino, or buóni vini, 'I have good wine,' or 'good wines.'

Secondly, by using the preposition di, 'of'; as, ho di buón vino, or di buóni vini, 'I have [of] good wine,' or ' [of] good wines.'

Thirdly, by using the same preposition and the article; as, ho del buón vino, or del buóni vini, 'I have [of the] good wine,' or ' [of the] good wines.'

Fourthly, by using the indefinite pronoun uno, una, 'a' or 'an,' in the singular; alcúni, alcúne, 'some,' in the plural; as, ho un buón vino, or alcúni buóni vini, 'I have a good wine, or 'some good wines.' Thus,

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE, great beasts;
VIE APMÉSSIME, very extensive walks;
DI bélli giotelli, [of] beautiful jewels;
DI buónirenéde, [of] good luncheons;
DÉLLE canzóni, e dë' sonélli, [of the] songs and [of the] sonnets;
SYNTAX.

DÉGLI AMICI, E DÉ' SERVIDORI, some [of the] friends, and some
ÚNA LOR SORÉLLA, [of the] servants;
ALCÚNI SUOI VICINI, a sister of theirs;
some of his neighbours.

EXAMPLES.

Grândi bestie hanno né loro bóschi. (Dav. Ann.) They have great beasts in their woods.

Éesso avea vié amplissime. (Bocc.) It had very extensive walks.

Io no di belli gioielli. (Bocc.) I have beautiful jewels.

Avévan da lui di buone merende. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) They had from him good luncheons.

Cominciò a fare délle canzoni, e dé' sonetti. (Bocc. He began to write songs and
g. 7. n. 3.) sonnets.

Fatti prestamente chiamare They had caused some friends and
dégli amici, e dé' servidori, some servants immediately to be
called.
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Avévan no Úna lor sorélla, They had a sister of theirs,
chiamáta Lisabetta. (Bocc. g. 9. called Elizabeth.
n. 5.)

Troválo con alcúni suoi vicini. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.) He found him with some of his
neighbours.

The English make use of the article before an ordinal number joined to a proper name; as, Leo the Tenth, &c.; before a noun in apposition, or immediately following another, of which it expresses a quality; as, Mr. Grant, the son of John, &c.; also in speaking of quotations, or of the division of a book; book the first, chapter the second, &c.: in Italian, however, the article is suppressed; as,

il cardinale Richelieu, primo minister di Luigi Decimo-
térzo, cardinal Richelieu, the prime
minister of Louis the Thir-
teenth;
USE OF ARTICLES.

giornata nona, novella ottava, the ninth day, novel the eighth.

In speaking of buying and selling any thing, the English article a or an, used with nouns of number, measure, or weight, is expressed in Italian by the articles il, lo, la; as,

il frumento si vendeva ad the wheat was sold at eighty
ottanta lire il moggio, livres a bushel.

The same article, a or an, in Italian is suppressed:

First, after the verbs to be, to become, with a noun expressing the country, profession, dignity, or any other quality of the subject of the verb; as,

Vittorio Siri, Italiano, Vittorio Siri, an Italian;
• fui poeta, I was a poet;
sarète capitano, you will be a captain;
dia verà cardinalë, he will become a cardinal.

Secondly, with a noun of the same kind after the verbs to make, to create, to appoint, to elect, to choose, to declare, to proclaim, whatever may be the subject of the verb; as,

feci maliscálo, he made him a marshal;
lo dichiarò matto, she declared him a madman.

Thirdly, before a noun in opposition, or qualifying another which precedes it; as,

il Tamigi, fiume d' Inghilterra, the Thames, a river in England.

Fourthly, before the title of a work; as,

discorso di Luigi Guicciardìni, a discourse of Luigi Guicciardìni.

EXAMPLES.

IL CARDINÁLE RICHELIEU, Cardinal Richelieu, the prime
PRIMO MINISTRO DI LUIGI DECI- minister of Louis the Thirteenth.
NOTÉRZO. (Den. Letter.)

Digitized by Google
GIORNATA NONA, NOVELLA OTTAVA. (Bocc.)

Fissò la metà del pâne al prezzo che il pâne avrebbe avuto, se il frumânto si fosse venduto a lire trentatre il moggio; e si vendeva fino ad ottanta.

(Vitt.)

Vittorio Siri, italiano, fu storiografo della corte di Francia. (Den. Letter.)

Fui, e contai di quel giusto — Figliuol d' Anchise, che venne da Tróia. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

In luogo di quello che morì era, il sostituì, e fece suo maliscâlco. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Sul Tâmig, fiône d' Inghilterra. (Bocc. Com. Dant.)

DISCORSO DI LUIGI GUICCIARDINI òI MAGISTRATI. (Mach.)

He substituted him for the one who had died, and made him his marshal.

On the Thames, a river in England.

A discourse of Luigi Guiccardini to the magistrates.

EXERCISE XXX.

The good, which man can derive from a thing, giovaménto, uómo potére cavar cosa, consists either in (the) its utility, or (in the) pleasure. consístere útile, piacére.

He advised the king to wish for peace, and not war. — Confortâre re volére — pácé, guerrá.

I know (of) many fine things, and (of) beautiful little-sapére molîto béllo cosa, béllo cam-songs, and I wish to tell thee one* of them.

* One, in the feminine gender.
The queen having turned (herself) to Filomena, or-regina — tornáre. im-dered her | to | continue. Now you say, that if, pôrre 1 | s | dire 1, of all things created for man, the faculty of — fra | tutto cosa crede | —, — speech — (speaking) is that which properly and par-parlare, proprely particulary belongs to — (is for) man, speaking | may bicordare | — — ubmo, parlare | si be said | with reason to be an excellent thing. pud dir | ragione — — bittimo 2 | cosa 2. And being asked by her (of the reason — (why), he — domandare | — — related to her word for word his whole dream. raccontare 2 | — ordinatamente 1 | sogno. I can not say how, nor if the effect is true; but so 3 | 1 dire, effetto vero; I believe it for certain. I hope, (that) you will crédere 2 | cérte. — Sperare, not permit, that I, for | the great | love I bear sofferire, | tanto e tale | ambre | — | —, réver 3 1, 3 esso 4 | domare 12, 6 6 7, you, should receive death | as | a reward. It appeared to him, that he gave away, now to one, tante 1, 2 10 castello 11, castélle, città, and then — (now) to another, castles, cities, and — and then — (now) to another, castles, cities, and 6 — 9 10 11, castello, città, baronies. We have arms, men, and | well-fortified | baronia, arme, ubmo, | ben muniti quarters, and provisions for a long war. Speak to alloggiaménto, vettauglia — | lungo guerra. Ricordëre— him of past and present things, and of new fears. — passato 2 3 presenté 1 cosa 1, — nubvo 3 pàtere 4. Weakness, fear, melancholy, and ignorance are the Dedolëzza, timbre, malinconia, ignoranze.
sources of superstition. The Romans were inured to hardship, fatigue, and a military life. Italy is situated between two seas. Cane della Scala was one of the greatest lords, that from the time of Frederick the Second has been known in Italy. The Tiber washes a great portion of the state of the Pope. King Charles of Burgundy died, when his son was still in the care of the Duke Philip. The Arno separates it, which, as you know, flows from east to west. Rinieri king of Cyprus. Three young men love three sisters, and elope (themselves) with them to Crete. I see Fracastoro, Beazzano, Trisone and Gabriel, and farther on I see Tasso.

The Greeks attributed them to their Gods, and to those who performed those great deeds, which are recorded of Hercules and Theseus, of Hector and

* R, in the femmiam gender.
USE OF ARTICLES. 471

Achilles. He has thy sister for his wife. Thou wilt remember (thyself) to tell to thy father, that thy children, and his and my nephews, are not descendants

| on their mother's side | of | a paltry-fellow. She made (to) her brother, and (to) her sisters, and (to)

| per² | madre⁴ | da — paltonière. —

| made (to) her brother, and (to) her sisters, and (to)

| Fáre | fratello, sorèlla,

every other person, believe, that by the power of de-

| mònio | essere accadére² |

demons this had appeared to them. Have you heard udire

| udire |

how your good brother-in-law treats your sister. This

| buono | cognito trattare — sorèlla¹ |

is my master. Without preserving faith to his friend

| signòre. |

and to his master. Gentlemen, it is well to taste

| signòre². Signòre, egli buono — — |

| — — (that we should taste) (some of) the wine of this |

| assaggiare vino |

able man. Shall I tell it to the master or to

| dire¹ |

the mistress? O, my Lord, when shall I ever

| signòra ? |

be . happy? A treatise on painting and on |

| lieto ? Trattato di pittura |

| di |

| sculpture | by. Leon-Battista Alberti. Guided by — |

| scultura | di |

| (with the guidance of) Ulamane, a Persian. Having |

| guida |

left Tauris, a royal city. In the times of the

| abbandonare Tauride, redde² città¹. |

| tempo |

| emperor Frederic the Second. Under the pontificate |

| imperatore Federigo pontificato |
CHAPTER V.

POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives in Italian, as we have already observed at pp. 390 and 393, may be placed either before or after the substantives, which they are to qualify; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{nuóva sposa,} & \quad \text{[new spouse] bride;} \\
\text{spósa nuóva,} & \\
\text{vini buóni,} & \quad \text{good wines;} \\
\text{buóni vivánde,} & \quad \text{good meats.}
\end{align*}
\]

The adjective is often separated from its substantive by another word; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{un monastéro di dónne assái famósso,} & \quad \text{a convent of nuns very much renowned;} \\
\text{due cósé moltó ái miéi costúmi contrária,} & \quad \text{two things very much contrary to my habits.}
\end{align*}
\]

There are, however, some adjectives which are to be placed after their substantives, and others which are to be placed before them; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{féra crudélé,} & \quad \text{cruel monster;} \\
\text{inclinazión bisbética,} & \quad \text{extravagant disposition;} \\
\text{bésli ócchi,} & \quad \text{beautiful eyes;} \\
\text{grán mâle,} & \quad \text{great evil.}
\end{align*}
\]
Adjectives of *nations*; adjectives expressing *taste, smell, or hearing*; denoting *shape or form*; expressing *colors,* the *state of the elements,* and *physical or mental qualities*; adjectives that may be *used as substantives*; that are *formed of participles*; that *govern,* or are *connected with,* any other part of *speech*; are to be *placed after the substantives*; *as,*

| ábíto Arabésco,     | Arabian dress;         |
| favela Latína,      | Latin tongue;          |
| vino dólce,         | sweet wine;            |
| érbe odorífera,     | sweet herbs;           |
| vóci solávi,        | sweet voices;          |
| tôri ritónde,        | round towers;          |
| rosái bíánchi,      | white rose-bushes;     |
| tempo tempestóso,   | stormy weather;        |
| vécchio infermíccio,| sickly old man;        |
| persone dótte,       | wise persons;          |
| [un góbbio], sárto góbbro, | [a hunchback], a hunchbacked tailor; |
| [accéso, da accéndere], lám-pada accésa, | [lighted, from to light], a lighted lamp; |
| tázze piéne di vino, | cups filled with wine; |

To which may be added the *following* adjectives, which, *generally,* are put *after the substantives*; *viz.*

| lungo,              | long;                   |
| córto,              | short;                  |
| pigro,              | lazy;                   |
| lento,              | slow;                   |
| neutro,             | neuter;                 |
| intiéro,            | entire;                 |
| lánguido,           | languid;                |
| importíuno,         | importunate;           |
| vizióso,            | vicious;                |
| virtuóso,           | virtuous;               |
| pauróso,            | fearful;                |
| coraggióso,         | courageous;             |

---

* Instances are found, notwithstanding, among the poets, in which adjectives of *colors* are put before the substantives; *as,*

Cold diritto sôpre il ve'bre' sma'ltò,—
Mi fur mostrati gli spiriti màgni. (Dant. Inf. 4.)

L' ásser contro póì di bíánchi piú' me. (Petr. c. 4.)

There on the green enamel [verdure] were soon shown me the great spirits.

To be then covered with white feathers.
And adjectives ending in *ele* and *ile*; as, 

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{crudèle,} & \quad \text{cruel;} & \text{civile,} & \quad \text{civil.}
\end{align*}
\]

**Numeral adjectives**, both *cardinal* and *ordinal*, and the *adjective pronouns* *quésto*, ‘this’; *quello*, ‘that’; *côste* or *codesto*, ‘that near you’; are to be *placed before* the substantives; as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{due anni,} & \quad \text{two years;} \\
\text{otto miglia,} & \quad \text{eight miles;} \\
\text{il terzo giorno,} & \quad \text{the third day;} \\
\text{la settima cosa,} & \quad \text{the seventh thing;} \\
\text{quéstó castélo,} & \quad \text{this castle;} \\
\text{quelle' anno,} & \quad \text{that year;} \\
\text{côste lágrime,} & \quad \text{those tears.}
\end{align*}
\]

**EXCEPT**

When the *ordinal* numeral adjectives are *joined to a proper name*, or are *used in speaking of the division of a work*; in which case they are put *after* the substantives; *as,*

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Urbano Ottávo, León Dél-} & \quad \text{Urban the Eighth; Leo the} \\
\text{cimo,} & \quad \text{Tenth;} \\
\text{parte prima, canzone quárta,} & \quad \text{part the first; song the fourth:}
\end{align*}
\]

And the *cardinal* numeral adjectives *ventúno*, ‘twenty-one’; *trentúno*, ‘thirty-one’; *quarantíno*, ‘forty-one’; &c.; which may be put either *before* or *after* the substantives.

**Numeral adjectives**, as we have already observed at p. 403, *agree with their substantives in gender and number*. Now, by a peculiarity of language, if the numeral adjectives *ventúno*, *trentúno*, &c., *precede the substantive*, this substantive is put in the *singular*; but if the

---

*But, when, in speaking of books, the article is used, we find them, in good writers, both before and after the substantives; as,*

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{nel ventesimo canto del Purgatoire, ei fu ricordato la genealogia dello Capela.} & \quad \text{(Fosc.)}
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Machiavelli, nel libro primo della Istoria Fiorentina.} & \quad \text{(Den.)}
\end{align*}
\]

In the twentieth canto of the Purgatorio, he [Dante] traces the genealogy of the Capets. Machiavel, in the first book of the History of Florence.
numeral adjectives follow the substantive, then the substantive is put in the plural; as,

novantíuna ruóta, ninety-one circles; 
anni ventíuno, twenty-one years.

If there is any other word connected with the substantive, and this word precedes the adjectives ventúno, &c., it is put in the plural, though the substantive following the adjectives be in the singular; but, if the word follows the adjectives, it is put in the plural if it comes after the substantive, and in the singular if it comes before; as,

áltre novantíuna ruóta, ninety-one circles more; 
anni trentíuno intéri, thirty-one whole years; 
ventúna piccola stella, vicinisime tra di loro, twenty-one small stars, very near to each other.

To which may be added the following adjectives, which, generally, are put before the substantives; viz.

buóno, good; | bello, handsome, 
cattivo, bad; | brutto, fine; 
grande, great; | ricco, ugly, bad; 
picciolo or small; | povero, rich; 
piccolo, poor.

There are some adjectives which may be placed either before or after the substantives, but whose posi-

* This usage may appear contrary to reason; but it is to be observed that these and similar expressions are elliptical and stand for,—áltre novanta ruóta, e uná ruóta, ‘ninety circles and one circle more’; venti piccole stelle, ad uná piccola stella, stulte vicinisime tra di loro, ‘twenty small stars, and one small star, all very near to each other’; &c., which sentences were first abbreviated into,—áltre novanta, e uná ruóta, ‘ninety and one circle more’; venti ad uná piccola stella, vicinisime, &c., ‘twenty and one small stars, very near, &c.’ and afterwards into,—áltre novantu’na ruóta; — ventu’na piccola stella, vicinisime, &c.

Notwithstanding this, there are instances of some writers using the substantive in the plural, even when preceded by the numeral adjectives ventúno, &c.; as,

Enéas, ed Ascánius, suo fígliuolo, e tutta sua gente dell’illa ventu’na naví, la díte reina accíssen con gránude onore. (Vill.)

Travestita l’Opera dell’ Alessándro nell’indio più córta di quello, che fábra è stáda, di 561 vo’nsi. (Metast. lett.)

Æneas, and Ascanius his son, and all the crews of the twenty-one ships, were received by the said queen with great honors.

You will find the Opera of Alexander in India 561 lines shorter, than it has been hitherto.
tion affects the signification; as, galánte, gentile, sòlo, cérto, dòppio, sémplice. Thus,

un galánt' uomo,  
a good, an honorable man;
un uómo galánte,  
a courteous, a galant man;

un gentil'uómo,  
a gentleman, a nobleman;
un uómo gentile,  
a civil, gentle, courteous, kind man;

un sòlo uómo,  
a single man [one only];
un uómo sòlo,  
a single man [not married, without family];

una cérta notizia,  
certain [not well ascertained] news;
una notizia cérta,  
certain [undoubted] news;

un dòppio amico,  
a double friend [two or equal to two friends];
un amico dòppio,  
a double [false] friend;

un sémplice contadino,  
a single [no more than one] countryman;
un contadino sémplice,  
a simple [inexperienced] countryman.

Two or more adjectives, qualifying the same substantive, may be placed before or after the substantive; as,

váríe e díverse novità,  
various and different new things;

con pànni lárghi e lùnghi,  
with garments full and long;
e vóci úmili e mansuète,  
and language humble and meek.

Sometimes they are separated by putting one of them before and the other or others after the substantives, which adds grace and elegance to the phrase; as,

nóbile giovane e bélla,  
a noble and beautiful young woman;
nóbili vestimentì e rícchi,  
rich and elegant clothes.
POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.

EXAMPLES.

**Di** da mia parte alla **nuova** sposa, che nelle mie contrade s'usa, quando alcun forestiere mangia al convito della sposa nuova... (Bocc. g. 19. n. 9.)

Ma l'ora del mangiare venuta, l'abate e tutti gli altri e di buone vivande e di vini buoni serviti furono. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

In queste nostre contrade fu, ed è ancora, un monastero di donne assai famoso di santità. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)

Mi converrà far duè cose molto al mei costumi contrarie. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Cerbero, fiere crudelle e diverse, — Con tre gòle caninamente lata — Sbora la gente, che qui vi è sommesa. (Dant. Inf. 6.)

**Gli** storpiati capricci della sua naturale inclinazione bisbética. (Alleg. 157.)

Ell' è dé suoi degli occhi vedér sòga. (Dant. Purg. 27.)

Questo è dunque il gran male, il gran peccato, il gran fatto adoperato da Gisippo? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

L'abate, con tutto che egli in abito Arabesco fosse, dopo quanto il raffigurò. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

La giovane udendo la favella Latina, dubitò, non forse altro vento l'avesse a Lìpari ritornata. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

L'ave troppo maturo fanno il vino più dolce, ma meno potente. (Gr. 4. 22.)

Tell the bride from me, that it is a custom in my country, when any foreigner goes to the banquet of the bride....

But when the hour of dinner was come, the abbot and all the others were helped to good meats and good wines.

In this neighbourhood of ours there was, and there is still, a convent of nuns very much renowned for sanctity.

I shall be obliged to do two things very much contrary to my habits.

Cerberus, cruel and strange monster, through his threefold throat barks as a dog over the multitude which is immersed there.

The lame caprices of his natural extravagant disposition.

She is charmed to behold [in the glass] her beautiful eyes.

Is this, then, the great evil, the great sin, the great crime committed by Gisippus?

Although he had on an Arabian dress, the abbot soon recognised him.

The young woman, hearing the Latin [Italian] tongue, feared, lest a contrary wind had brought her back to Lìpari.

Grapes, when too ripe, make more sweet wine, but less powerful.
Molti andavano attorno, portando nelle mani, chi fiori, chi erbe odoriferre, e chi diverse maniere di spezie. (Bocc. Intr.)

Parlavano rado con voci sollevatissime. (Dant. Inf. 4.)

Sopra le mura della città edificò torri ritorne molto spesse. (Gio. Vill. I. 1. c. 38.)

I lati delle quali vie, tutti di rose bianche e vermigli, e di gelsomini erano chiùsi. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Con essa siorse un tempo fierissimo e tempestoso. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Io non vorrei, che noi pigliassimo un granchio, e che o fosse qualche vecchio débole o infermician. (Mach. Mandr. 4. 9.)

Ma dopo sè fa le persone dotte. (Dant. Pur. 22.)

Costui fu uno dé più infami mostri di quella cortè, allievo di un sarto gobbo. (Dav. Ann. 15.)

Nelle mani le si ponga una lampada accesa. (Ann. Car. lett.)

Con alcune tazze in mano piene di vino. (Car. lett.)

La vèsta, chi vuol che sia lunga fino à piedi, chi corta fino alle ginocchia. (Car. lett.)

Del lungo odio civil ti pregan fine. (Pet. c. 41.)

Nei detto anno si cominciò, e fur dòte anni seguenti, grande danno di granè in Firenze. (Gio. Vill.)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

They spoke seldom, but their words were sweet.

Upon the walls of the city he built round towers very frequent.

The sides of which ways were all lined with white and red rosebushes, and jasmine.

With it [the night] arose stormy and very severe weather.

I should not wish, that we make a mistake, and that he is some feeble and sickly old man.

But make the persons, that follow them, wise.

This one was one of the most infamous monsters in that court, and a pupil of a hunchbacked tailor.

Let a lighted lamp be put into her hands.

Holding some cups filled with wine.

As for her dress, some will have it to reach to her feet, others to her knees.

They beg that you will put an end to the long civil hatred.

In the said year, began in Florence a great scarcity of corn, which lasted for the two following years.
This castle is situated eight miles from Florence.

Almost all died within the third day.

The seventh thing which induces us to do penance, is . . . .

The vines seemed as if they would produce an abundance of grapes that year.

To whom the lady said: "Tancred, save those tears against worse fortune than this."

The painters, the sculptors, and the architects of the times of Paul the Fifth and Urban the Eighth, were not inferior, perhaps, to those who lived under Leo the Tenth, and Paul the third, in any other respect than the merit of having opened and marked the way.

Petrarch, part the first, song the fourth.

Then he seemed to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.

Love kept me in a flame twenty-one years.

I consumed thirty-one years in the study of the Muses.

The nebula of Orion showed itself to him to be formed of twenty-one small stars, very near to each other.

Mr. John Corvino, asked to be made a Venetian nobleman.

There is a courteous lady in Heaven who mourns this hindrance.
Avendo seco Tanceredi várre e
diverse novità pensate. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 1.)

Il quale ampia materia mi
presta a dimostrare quanta e
quale sia la ipocrosia de' religiosi,
c' 'panni larghi e lunghi, e
c' 'voci artificialmente pálidi, e
c' 'cole voci umili e manuité
nei domandar l' altuí. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 2.)

Ormisda, stato in lungo trat-
ttato di dover torre per migli
una nobile giovane e bella, chiamada Cassándra. (Bocc.
g. 5. n. 1.)

Maestro Mazzéo, avendo presa
per migli una bella e gentil
giovane, di nobili vestimenti e
ricchi la teneva fornita. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 10.)

Tancred having revolved in his
mind various and different new
things.

Which [proverb] affords me am-
ple matter to show how great is
the hypocrisy of the religious,
who have garments full and long,
and faces made pale artificially,
and language humble and meek
for the purpose of getting men's
property from them.

Ornisda, who had been long
talked of as about to marry a
noble and beautiful young woman,
called Cassandra.

Master Mazzeo, having married
a beautiful and noble woman, kept
her well provided with rich and
elegant clothes.

---

EXERCISE XXXI.

There was once — (one time) a man of a ben-
— Essere — volta ubi mo be-
efficient heart. This courtier had the misfortune —
néfico² cubré¹. cortigiano¹ — — — — —
(bad fortune) of losing the favor — (falling in dis-
fortuna — — — cadère dis-
grace) of his master. The astrologer of the Caliph,
grazia signore. astrologo Califfo,

after various observations, said. I have been writing
vario osservazione, dire. — — — — —
so long — (it is so long that I write), that my
— — — — — tempo scrivere,
hand | ought to be | accustomed to it. The affairs
mano | dovrebbe essere | avvezza² — — — — —
ésse
of the Lombards being prosperous. No* sinful woman
was ever more deserving (of) the fire than I— (as
I should be). People really pious, are wise. Although
he had a very long beard — (the beard great).
Having, from a very rich and great merchant,
become a nobleman. He showed to him a noble-
man, called Philip Argenti, a man large and robust,
and very disdainful, irascible, and passionate. She
is to hold her hands up, and in (the) one
hand a white child asleep — (that sleeps), to |
represent sleep; in the other a black one† seemingly |
asleep — (that seems to be asleep), to represent |
death. Immediately he collected a large, fine, and |
powerful army. Some (of the) cherries are sweet, |
and some sour. I have many precious stones. |
The Pope had kept in the college of Pisa — (Pisan |
college), to learn Divine letters, Raphael of Riario, |
a nephew of Count Jerome. The first and most |

* No, for no one.  
† One, for another.
essential advantage, which ought to have been derived from the new studies, was the knowledge of the ancient Latin and Greek authors. The Academy of (the) Inscriptions and Belles Lettres is posterior to the Florentine Academy, and that of the Crusca. Lulli was the father and creator of the French music. Punctuation does a great good, and renders man humble, and charitable. He was tall, and of very pleasing and graceful deportment, and (a young man) of a middle age. (The) their conversation having been long, and the heat excessive. Giving her to eat some roots of herbs, and wild fruits, and dates.

*Conversation in the plural.*
CHAPTER VI.

USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN PRONOUNS.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Italian personal pronouns, as it has been already mentioned at pp. 105, 164, 165, when they form the subject of the verb may be either expressed or understood; as,

Io vidi un’ àrca non troppo grànde,

Marsiglia, comé vói sapéte, è antica e nobiiissima cíttà,

Ne a negáre, ne a pregáre [io] son dispostá,

Il che lietamente [vói] com-
    portereté,

When personal pronouns are expressed, they are generally put before the verb; but they may also be placed after it; as,

Égli avéa l’anéllo assai caro,

Né vóglio [io] qui tralasciá
    di dire una cosa,

Nor do I wish to omit saying one thing.

When, however, a command is given, or a question is asked, or when, in narrations, the sayings or doings of a person are mentioned, the pronouns are always put after the verb; as,

Mangi [égli] del suo, s’ égli ne ha,

Che vói [tu] facendo per questa contrada?

“Dimmi il perché, disse io,

Io non piangeva; piangevan élli,

Let him eat of his own property, if he has any.

What art thou doing in this street?

“Tell me the cause,” said I.
When personal pronouns are preceded by the adverbs cómo, siccóme, 'as'; quánto, 'so much', 'as'; they are put in the objective; and consequently io, 'I'; tu, 'thou'; égli, 'he'; élla, 'she'; églinó, élleno, 'they'; are changed into me, 'me'; te, 'thee'; lui, 'him'; léi, 'her'; lóro, 'them'; if the verb of which they are subjects is not expressed;—but they remain in the subjunctive, and are never changed, if the verb of which they are subjects is expressed; as,

cráno siccóme lóí maliziósi, they were as malicious as he;
quánto me, puóte esse al- any one may be as afflicted as
cún dolénte, I:

Se io fóssi nélla via cómo è If I were in the street as he is;
és égli, is;
se égli fósse in cása cómo if he were within the house as I am.
sonó io,

When two of these pronouns come, one before, and the other after, the verb essere, 'to be'; or crédere, 'to believe'; and these verbs imply an idea of transmutation from one to the other of the two pronouns; that which precedes the verb, is put in the subjective, and that which follows it, is put in the objective; as,

credéndo, ch'io fóssi te, believing me to be thee;
maraviglióssi, che [égli] wondered much that he should fósse credúto lui, be taken for him.

If the pronouns io, tu, égli, élla, églinó, élleno occur with an infinitive, and this infinitive follows the pronouns, the pronouns are put in the objective; but if the infinitive precedes the pronouns, the pronouns remain in the subjective; as,

udéndo lóí con gli áltri es- hearing that he and his compa-
sér mórtó, companions were dead;
conoscéndo léi non esse re knowing that she was not of a
di buón legnággio, good condition:
USE AND POSITION OF PRONOUNS.

Non bastândogli d' esser
egli divenuto ricchissimo,
dispone di andare ella me-
desima per esso,

He not being satisfied with
having become very rich;
she determined to go herself
after him.

EXAMPLES.

Madonna, io vidi questa sera
al tardi un' arca non troppo
grande. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

Marsiglia, come voi sapete,
e in Provénza sopra la marina
situata, antica e nobilissima
città. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)

Tancrèdi, nè a negare nè a
pregare son dispósta. (Bocc.
g. 4. n. 1.)

Il che, se sàx siête, lieta-
mènte conforterète. (Bocc.
g. 10. n. 8.)

Ègli avea l' anelio assai
caro per alcuna virtù, che stato
gli èra dato ad intendere, che
egli avea. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

Nè vóglio qui tralasciár di
dire una cosa, la quale mi par
molto véra. (Bott. Stor. Amer.
l. 6.)

Ot mängi del suo, s' égli ne
ha, che del nostro non mangerà
egli. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

O figliuola, che vai tu a
quest' ora, cost sola, faceindo per
questa contrada?

"Dimmi 'l perché," disse io;
"per tale convérgno,— Che se tu
a ragion di lui ti piangi,— Sappiendó
chi sàx siête, e la sua pècca,— Nei
mondo suso ancéor lo te
ne cângi." (Dант. Inf. 32.)

Io non piangèva, si dèntro
impietraí: — Piangèvan élli;
ed Anselmúccio mio — Disse:
"Tu guardi sì, padrè! che hái?" (Dант. Inf. 33.)

Madam, I saw late in the even-
ing a good-sized chest.

Marseilles, as you know, is an
ancient and famous city in Prov-
ence, situated on the sea coast.

Tancred, I am neither inclined
to deny nor to pray.

Which thing, if you be wise,
you will take in good part.

He held the ring very dear, on
account of some virtue, which
they had made him believe it pos-
sessed.

Nor do I wish to omit mention-
ing here one thing, which appears
to me to be very true.

Let him eat of his own prop-
erty, if he has any, for he will not
eat of ours.

Daughter, what art thou doing
in this street, alone, at this hour?

"Tell me the cause," said I,
"on such condition, that if right-
fully thou grieveš for him, know-
ing who you are, and his sins, I
may repay thee in the world
above."

I wept not; so petrified was I
within: they wept; and my little
Anselm cried: "Thou lookest so,
father! what ails thee?"
These, who, on the other side, were as malicious as he.

So that, anybody may be as affected as I.

What would you say if I were in the street as he is, or he within the house as I am?

Believing me to be thee, he has broken all my bones with a cudgel.

Tebaldo wondered much, that any one should be so much like himself, as to be taken for him.

The young woman, hearing, that he and his companions were dead, was very much grieved.

Knowing that she was of a condition that did not well comport with his nobility, he said with disdain.

But he and his friends not being satisfied with their having become very rich in a short time.

She determined not to send, but to go herself after him.

CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

We observed (p. 109), that conjunctive pronouns are used instead of personal pronouns, when these pronouns are in the objective or in the relation of attribution, and are closely connected with a verb, of which they are the direct or indirect regimen.
USE AND POSITION OF PRONOUNS.

This is always the case when there is but one personal pronoun in the phrase in the abovementioned relations, when the emphasis does not fall upon this pronoun, and when this pronoun is not in opposition with the subject of the verb; as,

mi potête tóre quánto téngo you can take away from me [for, A me potète tóre, all I have; &c.],
pietosamente IL chiamáva she called him with a piteous [for, chiamáva Lúi], voice;
ci facéste la béffa [for, A noi you should put a trick upon facéste, &c.], us;
lei vi donerò [for, A voi do- I will give them to you. nerò Lóro],

But, if there are more than one personal pronoun in the phrase, in the objective or in the relation of attribution; if the emphasis falls upon the pronouns; and if the pronouns are in opposition with the subject of the verb, or in opposition with each other; the conjunctive pronouns are not used and the personal pronouns retain their places; as,

me non accideráti tu, thou shalt not murder me;
usò dire, che E' sia un altro I am wont to say that he is me, another self;
potréste vói e me consoláre, you might console both your- self and me;
offési me per non offender I injured myself not to injure lui, him;
ze fu, ed A Léi ed A me, per it was, to both her and me, pénà dátó, A Léi di fug- given as a punishment, to gírmi davándi, ed A me di her to flee before me, and to seguitárla, me to pursue her.

Conjunctive pronouns are commonly put before the verb, but may also be placed after it. When before the verb, they are placed immediately after the personal pronouns; and when after, they are, as it has been
already stated at p. 110, always joined to the verb, so as to form a single word; as,

ègli vi ama,                     he loves you;
diede gli 'la sua benedizione,         he gave him his benediction;
correrànnoci alle case, e l'averé ci ruberanno,       they will run to our houses, and rob us of our property;
il mandarlo fuori di casa ne sarebbe gran disïsimo,  to send him out of our house would be in us a great fault;
ajutarono bene,                  they assisted me well;
etti uscito di mente?           has it escaped thy mind?
mostròcchi un'ombra,              he showed us a spirit.

We have already observed (pp. 338-340), that infinitives and some other forms of verbs, when joined to conjunctive pronouns, drop their last vowel; and that the consonant of conjunctive pronouns (gli only excepted) must be doubled when joined to those forms of verbs, which either consist of one syllable, or end with an accented vowel.

When the verb is in the infinitive, in the gerund, in the participle, or in the imperative mood,* the conjunctive pronouns are always to be put after the verb; as,

ricominciò a farlo i maggior piaceri,   she began to do him again the greatest kindnesses;
trovandosi egli una volta a Parigi,      he finding himself once in Paris;
son venuta a ristorarti de' danni avuti,   I am come to make thee some amends for the evils sustained;

* Notwithstanding this rule the following examples may be cited from the classics, in which the conjunctive pronoun is put before the imperative:

Fummi ritornare alla prigionia, e subito       Cause me to be carried back to my prison, and there cause me to be tormented as much as thou pleasest.
    quanto ti piaces mi fa affliggere. (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 6.)

Andate voi e Siro a trovar Callimaco,       Go you and Syrus to find Callimachus, and tell him that the affair went on well.
    e sì dite che la cosa è proceduta bene. (Mach. Comm.)

Ed in a t'ai: "Con pianger e con lutto,  And I said to him: "In mourning and
    Spirito maledetto, ti rimani." (Dant.  in woe, cursed spirit, do thou remain." 
    Inf. 8.)
USE AND POSITION OF PRONOUNS.

ricordandosi della tua pre-
terita vita, bringing to thy mind thy past
muovati questo solo mio atto, life;
slutatolo, il domandò se egli let this act of mine alone move
si sentisse niente, thee;
siatem buon amico, after he had saluted him, he
fattal prendere, asked him, whether any
thing ailed him;

be my good friend;
having caused her to be taken.

EXCEPTIONS.

When the adverb non, 'no,' or 'not'; precedes the verb in the in-
perative, the conjunctive pronouns must be put before the verb; as,
non si renda ridicola, do not make yourself ridiculous;
non le dite retta, do not mind her.

Conjunctive pronouns are sometimes put before, even when the
verb is in the infinitive and in the gerund, preceded by the adverb
non; as,
mi avea promesso di non s' al-
lontanare, she had promised me, that she
non mi vedendo giungere, would not depart;

not seeing me arrive.

The conjunctive pronoun loro, 'to them,' or 'them';
is always to be put after the verb; as,
veduti loro in si povera con-
dizione, having seen them in so mis-
mandò loro dicendo ......., sent to them, saying .......

When loro is in the objective, the pronouns gli or li, for the mascu-
line gender, and le for the feminine, sometimes take its place, but then
they follow the general rule; as,
facendogli [or, facendo loro causing them [her children] to
(i suoi figli)] da buoni maes-
stri insegnare, be instructed by good masters;

gli fece [or, fece loro] im-
pardare tutte le buone arti,
she made them learn all good

When more than one conjunctive pronoun occur with
the *same* verb, they *follow* the *same* rules, as when they occur with it *singly*; as,

*c'ò compagni subi séeli* he ate them with his companions;
*deliberarono di dárgliela* they determined to give her to him as his wife.

Conjunctive pronouns occurring in the *same sentence* with *two verbs*, one of which is in the *infinitive*, are generally put *before* the *other verb*; as,

*ti voglio dire,* I wish to tell thee;
*non glielo volerà dire,* she would not tell it to him.

**Exept**

When the *other verb* is in the *imperative*, for then they must be put *after it*; as,

*fatti sentire,* make thyself heard;
*lasciamiti vedere,* let me look at thee.

When conjunctive pronouns occur with the indefinite pronoun *si*, this is always put *after*, and sometimes *joined* to them; as,

*il bel che mi si mostra,* the good which shows itself to me;
*quante cose gli si promettono,* how many things they promise to him;
*attribuisceci a nostro fallo,* it is attributed to our fault.

Conjunctive pronouns occurring with the adverb *eccò*; and the pronoun *lo* occurring with the adverb *non*; are put *after* them; and, as it has been already stated at p. 116, form with them *one single word*; as,

*eccomi,* here I am;
*nol niégo,* I do not deny it.
USE AND POSITION OF PRONOUNS.

The particles ne, 'of him,' 'of her,' 'of it'; 'of them'; and ci, 'here, hither'; vi, 'there, thither'; follow the same rules as the conjunctive pronouns. They may be put either before or after the verb, except when the verb is in the infinitive, in the gerund, in the participle, and in the imperative; in which cases they are always put after it; as,

mi piace di parlarme,
mi uno veggendo,
trattane la sua bella robe,
gettonne i fondamenti il re Tarquinio,
son disposto ad andarvi,
il cuoco posollo tutta l'arte,
fa leci dipingere la Cortesia,
it pleases me to speak of it;
seeing no one of them;
having taken out her beautiful robe;
King Tarquin laid the foundations of it;
I am disposed to go there;
the cook having employed there [or in it] all his art;
cause Liberality to be painted there.

If the particles ci, vi, occur with one of the conjunctive pronouns mi, ti, ci, vi, usage strictly requires that the particles should be placed after the pronouns; but they are sometimes put before them, particularly if euphony demands it; as,

costoro mi ci fanno entrare, they make me enter there [or into it];
ti ti ci vedo sempre, I see you here always:

Vi ti porrò una tavoluccia, I shall place for thee there a small table;
di dà che vi ci abbia fatta venire per denari, I will say that he has caused you to come here for money.

When the particles ci, vi, occur with the pronouns, lo, la, li, gli, le, they are generally put before the pronouns, and, as has been mentioned at p. 160, form with them a single word; but they may be placed also after them, separately; as,

ingegnati di ritenere lo, contrive to keep him there;
ringraziando Idio che con-    thanking God that he had con-
dotto vel' avéva,      ducted him there:

Nèlla sua camera il mise, e    she put him in her room, and
dentro il vi serrò, there she locked him in.

EXAMPLES.

V'òi mi potète tórre quanto    You can take away from me
téngo, e donármi, siccome vóstro    all I have, and give me, like one
uómo, a chi vi piáce. (Bocc. g.    of your men, to whomsoever it
8. n. 9.)    pleases you.

Assì vóltè, la nütte, piéto sa-    A great many times, during the
mente il chiamàva. (Bocc. g.    night, did she call him with a
4. n. 5.)    piteous voice.

Ma guardáte che vói non ci    But beware putting a trick upon
pácheste la béffa. (Bocc. g.    us.
8. n. 1.)

S' élle vi piáccione, io le vi    If you like them, I will give
donérò. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)    them to you.

E udendo che égli avea morti    And hearing that he had mur-
due confessóri, disse fra sè me-    dered two confessors, he said to
désimo: "Me non ucciderai    himself: "Thou shalt not murder
tu." (Pass.)    me."

Tánto pòsso diporrre di lúi,    I can so much depend on him,
che io úso díre, che certo é'    that I am wont to say, that he
sia un álterò me. (Firenz.)    is certainly another self.

Ma, dòne vói voléste, per av-    But, if you wished, you might
ventúra, vói potrèste vói e me    perhaps console both yourself and
consoláre. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)    me.

Offéssi me per non offénder    I injured myself not to injure
lúi. (Petr.)    him.

Costi ne fu, ed à léi ed à    Thus it was, to both her and
mee, per pénà dáto, à léi di    me, given as a punishment, to her
fuggírmi davánti, ed à me,    to flee before me, and to me, who
che già cotánto l'amái, di se-    loved her so much, to pursue her.
guitárla. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)    I know that he loves you.

Io so che égli vi áma. (Bocc.    He gave him his benediction.
g. 3. n. 7.)    They will run to our houses, and

Diédegli la súa benedizi-    rob us of our property.
one. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)
USE AND POSITION OF PRONOUNS.

To send him out of our house, so sick as he is, would be in us a great fault.

They assisted me well.

Has it, since this morning, escaped thy mind?

He showed us a spirit by itself apart.

She began to do him again the greatest kindnesses.

He finding himself once in Paris.

I am come to make thee some amends for the evils thou hast sustained on my account.

Frederic, bringing to thy mind thy past life.

Let this act of mine alone move thee at least.

After he had saluted him, he asked him, whether any thing ailed him.

Be, then, always my good friend.

Having caused her immediately to be taken.

Do not make yourself ridiculous respecting the customs of the world!

Do not mind her, nor visit her any longer.

Not seeing me arrive in time, she went back, although she had promised me, that she would not depart before my arrival.
Having seen them reduced to so miserable a condition.

And sent to them, saying ....

Who [her children] astonished all those, who knew them; and their mother, causing them to be instructed by good masters, made them learn all good arts.

Having bought the capons, he ate them with his companions.

They determined to give her to him as his wife.

Listen to what I wish to tell thee.

The lady replied, that she would not tell it to him.

Speak loud, make thyself heard.

Let me look at thee at my pleasure.

The good, which shows itself about me.

How many things they promise to him all day.

It is attributed to our fault.

The scholar, coming to the door, said: 'Here I am, Madam.'

He was brave in arms, I do not deny it, no.

It please me to speak of it.

Seeing no one of them.
USE AND POSITION OF PRONOUNS.

 gebruik, selatamente la sua bella roba. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

 Gettòne i fondamenti il re Tarquinio. (Dsv. Stor. l. 3.)

 Po son del tutto disposto ad andarvi. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

 Il cuoco preso, e fòstovì tutta l'arte. . . . (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

 Fāteci dipingere la corte sia. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

 Costòro mi ci fanno entrare per ingannarmi. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

 Io ti ci vedo sempre. (Nov. Ant. 67.)

 Po vi ti porrò una tavoluccia. (Bocc. g. 8.)

 Po disirò che vi ci abbia fatta venire per denari. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

 Ingegnati di ritenércelo. (Bocc. n. 5.)

 Ringraziando Ddío che condotto vel' avéva. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

 Nella sua cámara il mise, e d'entro il vi serrò. (Bocc.)

 Having taken out secretly her beautiful robe.

 King Tarquin laid the foundations of it.

 I am entirely disposed to go there.

 The cook having taken it, and having employed in it all his art, . . .

 Cause Liberality to be painted there.

 They make me enter into it [the chest] in order to play some trick upon me.

 I see thee here always.

 I shall place for thee there a small table.

 I will say that he has caused you to come here for money.

 Contrive to keep him there.

 Thanking God that he had conducted him there.

 She put him in her room, and there she locked him in.

 POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

 Possessive pronouns may be placed either before or after the nouns expressing the things possessed; as,

 la mia persona, i miëi mali,
 le membra mìe, il sangue suo,
 gli occhi suoì, l'ordine loro,

 my person, my misfortunes;
 my limbs, my blood;
 her eyes, their management.
In addressing a person, however, and in exclamations, possessive pronouns are to be put after the nouns; as,

padre mio, figliuol mio! my father, my son!
Italia mia, Signor mio! my Italy, my Lord!

Possessive pronouns are always to be repeated before nouns of different gender and number; as,

la lor virtù, i lor costūmi, their virtue, their customs, and
le lor manièrè, their manners.

But if the nouns are of the same gender and number, they may be used only once, after the said nouns; as,

le siròcchie e le mògli lorò, their sisters and their wives.

We have already observed (p. 132), that possessive pronouns may be expressed in Italian, by the conjunctive pronouns of that person to which the possessor belongs. This is always the case when they are accompanied by a noun expressing the limbs of the body or denoting a part of one's dress; as,

se mi cacciàsser gli occhi if they should tear out my eyes;
non vi fiaccàte il collo [for, do not break your neck.
non fiaccàte il vòstro collo],

The English possessive pronouns his, her, their, when they refer to one's own limbs or parts of dress, are expressed in Italian by the conjunctive pronoun si; but when they refer to another person's limbs or parts of dress, they are expressed by the conjunctive pronouns gli, le, loro, according to the gender and number of the possessor; as,

si levò l' anéllo di díro [for, he took off the ring from his left (own) finger];
risolse di levârsi le scárpè [for, he resolved to take off his shoes];
Gli rûppè tòto il viso [for, he disfigured all his (another person's) face; il vòstro viso],
USE AND POSITION OF PRONOUNS.

stracciata la cuffia [for, having torn her another person's headdress.

stracciata la sua (or, la di lei) cuffia],

Often the personal pronouns accompanying a noun expressing the limbs of the body, or denoting the parts of one's dress, are entirely suppressed when they relate to the principal subject of the proposition; as,

corsi a cercarmi il lato collasso mano [for, collasso mia mano],

asciugandosi gli occhi col bel velo, [for, col suo bel velo],

I laid immediately my hand on my side;

drying her eyes with her beautiful veil.

ESEMPLE.

E siccome la mia persona cresceva, costi le mie bellezze, de' mioi male speciali cagione, multiplicavano. (Bocc. Flam.)

Non so no rimase acerbe ne mat- ture—Le membra mie di là, ma son qui méco—Col sangue suo, e con le sue giunture. (Dant. Purg. 26.)

Ed erano gli occhi suoi di quel colore che lo grifone. (Buti. com. Inf. 4.)

And as [my person or] I grew up, my beauty, the first cause of all my misfortunes, increased.

I have not left yonder my limbs, either crude or in mature age; but they bear me here, fed with blood and sinew-strung.

And his [Caesar's] eyes were as black as those of a raven.

Without their management it seldom happens that any undertaking of ours succeeds.

Gaddo si gittò disteso a piedi, —Dicendo: "Padre mio, che non m' aiuti?" (Dant. Inf. 38).

Gaddo stretched himself at my feet, saying: "My father, why dost thou not assist me?"

O figliuol mio! non ti dis- pideccia,—Se Brunetto Latini un poco teco — Ritorna indietro. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

—O my son! do not disdain that Brunetto Latini should turn back a little, and go with you.
ITALIA mia, benchè il parliar mia indarno — Alle piaghe mortali, — Che nel bel corpo tuo si spesse veggio. (Petr.)

O Signor mio! quando sarò to néto — A vedere la vendetta, che, nascósa, — Fa dolce l'ira tua nel tuo secreto? (Dant. Purg. 20.)

Riguarda tra tutti i tuoi nobili uomin, ed esamina la loro virtù, i loro costumi, e le loro maniere. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Appresso costoro, le siròches e le mogli loro vénnero. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

O se essi mi cacciassero gli occhi o mi trafissero i denti, o mozzassermi le mani, a che sarei to? (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Égli è gran peccato che voi non vi fiaccate il collo. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

E così si levò l'anello di dito, e diéllo al giudice. (Pecor.)

Guárda se altri lo scorge, ed asfíne si risolva di levarsi le scarpe. (Lod. Nov.)

E così dicendo con le pugna tutto il viso gli ruppe. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)

E stracciata la cuffia, diceva. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)

Di che a sentiva sì fato dolore, che, desto, cólla mano corsi subitamente a cercarmi il latto. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)

E faccia forza al Cielo, — Asciugandosi gli occhi col bel velo. (Petr. c. 11.)

My Italy, although words will have no power to heal the mortal wounds which I see, in so great a number, in your beautiful body.

O my Lord! when shall I rejoice to see the vengeance, which thy wrath, well pleased, broods in secret silence?

Look among all your noblemen, and examine their virtue, their customs, and their manners.

After these, came their sisters and their wives.

If they should tear out my eyes, or draw out my teeth, or lop off my hands, to what should I be reduced?

It is a great pity you do not break your neck.

And thus he took off the ring from his finger, and gave it to the judge.

He looked around lest he should be seen, and at last he resolved to take off his shoes.

And thus saying he disfigured all his face with blows.

And having torn her headdress, he said.

Which gave me such a pain, that, having awakened, I laid immediately my hand on my side.

. And should compel Heaven [to have pity upon me], drying her eyes with her beautiful veil.
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

The indefinite pronouns, stéssó, medésimo, 'same'; and sometimes tuttó, 'all', 'every'; are put either before or after the noun; as,

quel di stéssò; in quel medésimo abitó,
that same day; in that same dress;
tutte le notti; le quali cose
every night; all which things.
tutte,

Tuttó, followed by a numeral adjective, takes the particle e after it; as,
tutti e tredici, all three.

The indefinite pronouns verúno, nessúno or nissúno, neuno or niúno, nullo, 'no one,' 'nobody'; and nulla, niénte, 'nothing'; as we have already mentioned at p. 147, may have also the signification of 'any one,' 'anybody'; and 'some or any thing'; according to their respective position in the sentence.

They have the first signification,— (of 'no one,' 'nobody'; and 'nothing'), when they are placed before the verb, or when they are placed after a verb preceded by the adverb non; as,

per verúno modo potéva,
her she could do it in no manner;
non fa cálido verúno,
it is not at all warm;
nessúno si dolse di servitú,
no one complained of servitude;
non si pud saire nissúna cosa,
no-thing can be done:
neuno ebbe gli Déi si favori-voli,
no one had the Gods so favorable;
non ve n' è niúno si cattivo,
there is no one so bad:
nullo martirio sarebbe dolor compito,
no torment were a well-proportioned pain;
SYNTAX.

he wants nothing:
let him despair of nothing;
I will do nothing about it:
I say nothing about thy condition;
it would seem to him nothing.

But when they are placed after a verb not preceded by the adverb non, and when the phrase in which they occur implies a question, or expresses a doubt, the abovementioned pronouns have the last signification,—(of ‘any one,’ ‘anybody’; and ‘some or any thing’);* as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{senza fare a voi verùn prò,} & \quad \text{without doing any good to yourself;} \\
\text{se verùno vede la pëna mia,} & \quad \text{whether any one observes my sorrow;} \\
\text{quando s'} & \quad \text{when they encamp in any place;} \\
\text{accámpano in nessùno luogo,} & \quad \text{was there found any one who opposed public power?} \\
\text{trevòssi niùno che contradi-} & \quad \text{thou wilt ask her, whether she wants any thing;} \\
\text{asse alla podestà?} & \quad \\
\text{le dirà se vuol nessùla,} & \\
\end{align*}
\]

* There are instances, however, in good writers, which seem in contradiction with these rules; as may be seen by the following examples:

E quando nessùno n'era prëso, subbito era impiccato per la gola. (Stor. Pistol.)

Che non rimarrèbbë a sostenere pëna nessùna nei purgatorio per gli pecchëi. (Pass.)

And when any one was taken, he was directly hung by the neck.

That there would not remain in purgatory any punishment to suffer for sins.

There is no [or not any] reason why it should enter in such a determinate degree of velocity.

He will never do me an- [or, any] other [thing like this.]

As soon as she sees a youth somewhat handsome, she falls in love with his beauty:

In which the pronouns nessùno, nessùna, niùna are used instead of alcòno, alcòna, ‘any,’ ‘any person,’ ‘any thing’; and niùnte instead of un pòco, alquïntë, ‘a little,’ ‘somewhat.’
he asked him whether he felt anything.

**EXAMPLES.**

*Il domandò se si sentisse niente,*

We supposed, that she had been burnt that same day along with the house.

*Guardando tra molte, che quivi n'èranlo in quel medesimo abito.* (Bocc. Lab.)

Looking among so many woman, who were there, clad in that same dress.

*E 'l rossignuol — Tutte le notti si lamènta e piange.* (Petr.)

And the nightingale every night laments and weeps.

*Le quali cose tutte sono da esser diligentemente considerate.* (Cresc. 12. 2.)

All which things ought to be carefully considered.

*Fratelli miei, che andate voi cercando, a quest'ora, tutti e tre?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

Brothers, what are you looking for, all three, at such an hour?

*Quando venne il tempo, quella misera per verun modo potéva.* (Vit. SS. PP. 2. 21.)

When the time arrived, that unfortunate one could not do it in any manner.

*Anzi non fa egli caldo vento.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

Nay it is not at all warm.

*Nessun di servitù giammai si dolse, — Nè di morte, quant'io di libertà.* (Petr. Tr. Mort. 1.)

No one ever complained of servitude or death, as much as I do of liberty.

*Non si può cosa nissuna fare a lor modo.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Nothing can be done in their manner.

*Neuno ebbe mai gli Déi si favorévoli, che nel futuro gli potesse obligare.* (Bocc. Fiam. 5. 84.)

No one even had the Gods so favorable as to oblige them to favor him in future.

*Égli non ve n'è niuno si cattivo, che non vi parèsse ino imperatore.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

There is no one so bad, that you would not take him for an emperor.

*Nullo martirio, fuorché la tua rabbia, — Sarèbbe al tuo furor dolore compítio.* (Dant. Inf. 14.)

No torment, save thy rage, were to thy fury a well-proportioned pain.
Onde felice diceva esser colus, che non gli manca nulla. (Fr. Giord. 20.)

Chi in alcuna cosa pud sperare, di nulla si disperi. (Bocc. Flam. 5. 85.)

Altrimenti mai non ne farò nulla. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

Del tuo presente stato niénte dico. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

Se l' uomo magnumo desse ogni cosa per amore, non gli parrebbe aver dato niénte. (Cavalc. Specch. Cr.)

Fareste dannò a noi, senza fare a voi pro veruno. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

Altra guardo intorno, se veruno — Vedé la pena mia, che m' ha conquiso. (Rim. Ant. 96.)

Quando s' accámpano in nessuno luogo per cagione di guerra. (Buti. Purg. 7.)

Trovóssi in Milano nitùno, che contradiisses alla podestáde? (Nov. Ant. 21.)

Tu le dirai s' ella vuól nùlla. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Il domandò se egli si sentisse niénte. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Whence they call him happy who wants nothing.

Let him, who can hope in any thing, despair of nothing.

Otherwise I will never do any thing about it.

I say nothing about thy present condition.

If the magnumous man should give every thing for love, it would not seem to him that he had given any thing.

You would injure us without doing any good to yourself.

Then I look around me to see whether any one observes that sorrow, which has subdued me.

When they encamp in any place on account of war.

Was there found any one in Milan, who opposed the public power?

Thou wilt ask her whether she wants any thing.

He asked him whether he felt any thing.

---

EXERCISE XXXII.

They rob you. Have pity on the afflicted. Dost thou know the daughter of Cidippe? May you
rubare . compassione di afflitto. conosceri figliuola?
be pleased to bless (the) my soul. Let him call
Voleré benedire anima. Chiamare
the leaders to a council. What thou wishest that
duca — consiglio.
voleré
I should say. She said: "How can that be?"
dire.
Dire: "potere questo?"
He replied: "Thou wilt see it, if thou comest im-
vedere venire tó-
mediately." I am here with one, who, | having |
sto.
my name, wishes to be | myself | in every thing
nome, volere — | to | ogni cosa
he does, or rather, that I should be he. He
— — — — — — — saw himself | deprived | of the hope of having her
vedere privare speranza — —
for his wife — — ( | to have to have | her himself),
— — — — dovere avere egli,
if Ormissa did not marry her.
prendere.

The Turk then said: "If I were thou, I should
Turco dire: "
perhaps infringe the law; but as I am myself and
forse violare legge; perché io
not thou, I will never do it."
non mai fare.

I will tell thee the truth, companion, I like
volere dire vero, olio, — —
hér — (she pleases me) so much, that I could not — —
piacere
potere
tell it to thee. He sent her | word | that, with-
dire.
Mandare a dire,
out any more delay, she should do what — (that
indigenio, dovere fare —
which) he had told her. I order thee to go — —
avere dire. — — Comandare — —
SYNTAX.

(that thou go) immediately | after | thy father. You
promised me | to | make me speak with (the) your
wife. | Pray, | leave me in peace. Why dost thou
not reply, wicked man? Art thou become dumb
in hearing me? Having raised (herself | upon | her
feet), she said: "Brother, you are (the) welcome."
No, she would not believe it, and would turn me
out of her house. He begged him that he would
show him how they did. "Then," said he, "let
us do it." Say it frankly. (I), as for me, do
not remember (myself of) it. Having caused a purse
to be brought to her- (self), she put it (to him) | into |
his hand, and said: "Count if they are five-hun-
dred." He conquered Scotland, and was crowned
king of it. I did not discern there any thing.
There is Minos | who | grins horribly. I will
cause it to be painted there. Where art thou, good
woman? Here I am — (behold me), what dost
me
thou wish? We are — (behold us) ready to obey you.

My friend and not the friend of fortune. My amico — — fortuna.

father told (it to) me, that I should take care (my-guardare self) of ever setting foot in Messenia. O Samuel, giàmmadì pórrē piēde, once my true father, dost thou command it? Véro pādre, impōnere? Per

much as thou valuest my affection. In order quānto | thou | amō. | Per |

to die as your daughter, and not as your enemy. morē — figliā, — nemica.

He let fall his hook at his (own) feet. Weeping Lasciāre cascār uncīno — piēde. Piāngere

he threw himself on his (another person's) neck. — gittāre | a | — — collo.

The unfortunate ones wept, scratched their (own) faces,* meschina — piāngere, sgraffiare — viso,
tore their (own) hair.† In thinking of it I shud-strappāre — capēllo. pensāre — — raccader (myself all over) and my heart melts (itself). pricciāre tutto — cuore struggere

He remained there all the night with certain — Stāre — nōte cērto

snares of his to catch a bat. Nō person per-artifisio — | per pigliāre pēpisistrēllo. persona ae-

ceived (himself) of it. There is no one of them cōrgere

so young, who could not know well how women fanciulla, potēre conoscersē ben1 fémmine

* Faces to be put, in the Italian, in the singular.
† Hair, in the plural.
§ No, for no one.
|| No one, for not any one, in the feminine.
are. I have not slept any last night. Let no one move himself, or say a word, if he does not wish to die. There it seemed to me to see no sanctity, no devotion, no good work, or example of life. Has any one been here? If there is any one, who wishes to be at a supper, I will do it willingly. If Philip goes anywhere (in any place), follow him (approach thyself to him) in some manner. I have nothing to fear now.

Thou knowest nothing then.

CHAPTER VII.

VERBS.

POSITION OF VERBS.

Verbs are generally placed after their subjectives; but if a command is given, or a question is asked, or a wish or imprecation is expressed; the verb is to be put before the subjective; as,
VERBS. 507

SPÉNGASI néi vọstri pelți ogni scintilla di pesti-
siero sdégnò;
ACCÉNDASI in quelli ardénte fiãmma di sincéro
ambié, che vuoì dir quéstò?
VOLÉSSE Iddio che il gua-
tármì gli fôsse bastáto,
MALADÉTTA sia la crueldé-
tà di colui, che mi ti fa
vedere,

let every spark of venomous
disdain be extinguished in
your hearts;
let there [in your hearts] be
kindled a fervent flame of
sincere affection;
what can this mean?
would to Heaven that his gaz-
ing at me had satisfied him;
cursed be the cruelty of him,
who causes that I should
see thee.

The verb is likewise put before the subject in the
subjective, when it is neutral and is preceded by a sentence or part of it;
when it is preceded by a negative; and when an emphatical adjective introduces the sentence; as,

stándosi così, vénne allá vol-
tà sia un gámbéro,
nè me ne ha mài parlåtò
alcúno,
dólce è il benefício,

[the bird] being so, a crab
came up to him;
nor has any one ever spoken
to me of her;
to do good is pleasing.

Finally, the verb is put before the subjective, when in
narrations the sayings or doings of a person are re-
lated; when in exclamations it is accompanied by the
word cómo or quánto; and when one of the following
words ci, vi, qui, quà, ivi, quivi, dòve, quindi, quánto,
cosi,—begins a sentence or phrase; as,

dísse la dönà : ” Cómo
può essere questo?”
oh ! cómo spésso cásano i
vécchi in questo erróre!
se ce ne venísse alcúna,
qui sono giardíni,
chi è quello che non sàppia
quánto sia àgli infe-
róre?

the lady said: “How can that
be?”
oh! how often do old men fall
into this error!
if some one should come here;
here are gardens;
who does not know how in-
ferior he is?
Let every spark of venomous disdain be extinguished in your heart; let there be kindled a fervent flame of sincere affection.

What can this mean?

And would to Heaven, that his passing by, and gazing at me, had satisfied him.

Cursed be the cruelty of him, who causes that my eyes should see thee now.

And being [the bird] so melancholy, a crab came up to him.

Nor any one has ever spoken to me of her, without describing her to me as equal to my Constanza.

To do good is pleasing at all times.

The lady said: "How can that be?" — Mr. Lizio said: "Thou wilt see it thyself if thou comest immediately."

Oh! how often do old men fall into this error!

And if, for our misfortune, some one should come here.

Here are gardens, there pleasant places.

Because, who does not know how inferior he is in strength?
USE OF THE IMPERFECT AND FIRST AND SECOND-PERFECT.

The preterite of English verbs answers to the imperfect as well as to the first and second-perfect. In Italian these three tenses are rendered in three different forms; I loved, for instance, may be rendered by io amava, io amai, or io ho amato; but these forms are not indifferently used.

We make use of the first, the imperfect, when the action of which we speak was present in respect to another action past at the same time;—CANTA'VA quando voi veniste, 'I was singing when you came'; E' RANO a tavola quando noi entrammo, 'they were at table when we entered'; as,

mentre STAVAN CENA'NO, while they were at supper, her
venne il marito, husband came;
incontrò la Catella, che VEN-
VA,
he met Catella, who was com-
ing.

The imperfect is also used when we speak of an action become habitual, or continued, or repeated several times; as,

I had the care of their garden;

I used to go to the forest for wood;

I drew water, and did other services;

the ladies gave me so little, that with it I could scarcely pay for my shoes.

Finally, we use the imperfect in speaking of the age, name, actions, dispositions, and good or bad qualities of persons and things that exist no more; as,

he [Rinaldo] had scarcely fin-
ished his third lustrum;
SYNTAX.

la moglie, che Isabella avea
nome,
era di buona mente, e di felice ingegno dotato, e bellissimo favellatore,

Parèva Santa Veridiana,
che da becchere alle serpi,
era questo giardino vago molto,

his wife, who was called Isabella;

he [Joseph Warren] was of
good mind, endowed with a
happy genius, and a very
fine speaker;

she appeared Saint Veridiana
feeding the serpents;

this garden was very pleasant.

It may, perhaps, assist the learner in making a proper use of this
tense, to observe further, that whenever the preferite in English may
be turned into was or were and the present participle of the same
verb, or into used and the infinitive of the same verb; it is to be
rendered by the imperfect tense in Italian: thus, if, without altering
the meaning, I or we looked for, may be changed into I was or we
were looking for, or into I or we used to look for, it must be
rendered by lo cercava, or noi cercavamo.

The first-perfect is used to denote an action done in
a period of time completely past; as,

poichè a morte mi sentii ferito, after I found myself mortally

avvenne che il re di Francia morì, wounded;

Colombo partì per la scoperta del nuovo mondo
l'anno 1492,

to altri che questa notte passata
feci un sogno,

it happened that the king of
France died;

Columbus departed for the dis-
covery of the new world the
year 1492;

I also had a dream last night.

The second-perfect is used to express an action done
in a period of time not specified; or, if specified, not
completely past; as,

anzi tu ho sempre amato, e
avuto caro,

voi l' avete comprato,
ed io non l' ho venduto,

nay, I always loved thee, and
held thee dear;

you have obtained it by pur-
chase, without my selling it
to you;
m'ave te fatto parlare con una statua di marmo,
già sono otto anni, t'ho più che la mia vita amato,
molti utili scoperte sono fett nel presente secolo,
you have made me speak with a marble statue;
for these eight years have I loved thee more than my very life;
many useful discoveries have been made within the present century.
The phrase I saw him this morning, if used in the forenoon,
when the morning is not yet elapsed, is rendered by P'ho veduto
stamattina; but, if used in the afternoon, when the morning is
already elapsed, it must be rendered by lo vidi
stamattina.

E X A M P L E S .

Mentre stavan cenando, venne il marito. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Egli incontrò la Catella, che veniva. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Io lavorava un loro giardino bello e grande, e, oltre a questo,
andava alcuna volta al bosco per le legne, attigneva
acqua, e facèva coterì altri servigetti; ma le donne mi
davano sì poco, che io non ne potèva appena pagare i calzari. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Allor ne pur tre lustri avea forniti. (Tass. Ger. 1. 60.)

La moglie, che Isabella avea nome. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Era di buona mente, e di felice ingegno dotato, e nel
massimo favellatore. (Bott. Stor. Amer. l. 5.)

Una vecchia, che parveva Santa Veridiana, che dà beccare
alle serpi. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Era questo giardino vago molto. (Bemb.)

While they were at supper, her husband came.

He met Catella, who was coming.

I had the care of a large and beautiful garden of theirs, and besides
this I used sometimes to go to the forest for wood; I drew water,
and did other like services for them; but the ladies gave me so
little, that with it I could hardly pay for my shoes.

Then he [Rinaldo] had scarcely finished his third lustrum.

His wife, who was called Isabella.

He [Joseph Warren] was of good mind, endowed with a happy
genius, and a very fine speaker.

An old woman, who appeared Saint Veridiana feeding the serpents.

This garden was very pleasant.
Poiché 'a morte mi sentì perito. (Petr.)

Avvészhe che il re di Francia morì, ed in suo luogo fu coronato il figliuolo. (Bocc.)

Colombo partì per la scoperta del nuovo mondo l'anno 1492. (Vanz.)

Se io fossi voluto andare dietro a' sogni, io non ci sarei venuto, non tanto per lo tuo, quanto per éno, che io altresì questa notte passata ne féci. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)

Anzi t'ho sempre amato, e avuto caro innanzi ad ogni altro. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

Ed or volise Ideo che io fatto l'avessi, perciò che voi l'aveste comperato, ed io non l'hó venduto. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

"Che ti pàre? Hott' io bene la promessa servata?" — "Messér, no; voi m'aveste fatto parlare con una statua di marmo." (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

Io, misera me! Già sòno ottò anni, t'ho piú che la mia vita amato. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Molte utili scoperte sono fàtto nel presente secolo. (Vanz.)

After I found myself mortally wounded.

It happened that the king of France died, and his son was crowned in his stead.

Columbus departed for the discovery of the new world the year 1492.

If I had any faith in dreams, I should not have come here; and not so much for the sake of yours, as of one I also had last night.

Nay I always loved thee, and held thee dear beyond every other person.

And now would to Heaven that I had done so, because you have obtained it by purchase, without my selling it to you.

"What dost thou think of it? Have I not kept my promise?" — "No, sir; you have made me speak to a marble statue."

Alas! for these eight years have I loved thee more than my very life.

Many useful discoveries have been made within the present century.

Use of certain tenses of the indicative for some other tenses of the same mood; and of the infinitive for certain tenses of the indicative, and for the conjunctive and imperative moods.

The present of the indicative is sometimes used, in narrations, for the first-perfect; as,

esce [for, usci] veloce da he went quickly out of that tomb;
córre [for, córse] al palagio, he ran to his palace;  
non è [for, 'bra] più dubbia la via, the way was no longer doubtful; 
non è più oscura la notte, the night was no longer dark.

It is also used for the future; as,

domâne è [for, sara] l'último di, to-morrow will be the last day;
che farâi tu, se ella il dice [for, dirâ] di fratelli? what wilt thou do, if she will tell it to her brothers;
se io infragliòtto giorni non vi guarisco [for, guarirò], if I shall not cure you in eight days, have me burnt;
fâtemi brugiâre, if thou wilt cast thee down, I cannot chase thee on foot.

se tu ti cali [for, calerâi], galoppo,
The first-perfect may be used for the present; as,

or che avéstì [for, che hai], now what ails thee, that thou makest such a face;
che fâi cotid tòso, Anichino gave a deep sigh.
Anichino gìtò un gran sospiro. La donna disse: The woman said: “What ails thee, Anichino?”

“Che avéstì, Anichino?”

The first-perfect may be used, also, for the second-perfect; as,

ónde fosti tu [for, sei stato tu] stamâne? — Non so ove io mi fui [for, sono stato], where hast thou been this morning? — I know not where I have been;
scegliesti? [for, hai scelto?] hast thou chosen? — I have.

The second-pluperfect may be used for the first-perfect; as,

l're fu giunto [for, giunse] e disse: “Cavalière, a qual donna sei tu?” the king arrived and said: “Knight, what lady dost thou belong to?”

Alzâta la lanternâ, esser vedutâ [for, videro] il cattivitâ di Andreuccio, having raised the lantern, they saw that rogue Andreuccio.
The future is used for the present, in doubtful actions; as,

**parrà** [for, fôrse pâre] a perhaps it seems to you, that voi, che non vi voglia bene, she does not like you;

**genti si appressa:** Elvira people approach; perhaps it **èrâ** [for, fôrse è Elvira], is Elvira.

The future-anterior is used for the second-perfect, in doubtful cases; as,

**avrò detto** [for, fôrse ho detto], che ho da andare to go to Venice.

The infinitive may be used for the third person singular of the present and of the imperfect of the indicative, and their compounds, depending on another verb of the same mood; as,

condèso lúi essere [for, che egli è] un malevagio uomo, I know that he is a wicked man;

udendo il re il maliscâlo èser [for, che il maliscâlo èra] merto, the king hearing that his farrier was dead;

ti converrà andare nella mémbria, Iddio essere stato [for, che Iddio è stato] ti converrà även nella memoria, creator of the cielo, e della terra,

thou must keep in thy mind, that God has been the creator of heaven and earth;

s' accorse l' abáte aver mangiato [for, che l' abáte aveva mangiato] fâve sècche, he found out, that the abbot had eaten dry beans.

It may likewise be used for the third person singular of the present and of the imperfect of the conjunctive, and their compounds; as,

si crede essere [for, che egli sia] uno de' più ricchi prelati del mondo, he is thought to be one of the richest prelates in the world;

della, credendo lúi essere [for, che egli fosse] Gisippo, she, believing that he was Gisippus, answered yes;

risposè di sì,
VERBS.

I have already determined within myself what to do with Guiscard;
believing that he had returned from the wood.

Finally, the infinitive is used for the second person singular of the imperative mood, when preceded by the negative; as,

*ciò non temer,*
do not fear that;

*non mi toccare,*
do not touch me.

**Examples.**

Ésce veloce da quella tomba, corre al palazzo; non è più incerto il suo passo, non è più dubbia la via, non è più oscura la notte. (Alberg. Nov.)

Quello che mi dite di fare, si faccia tòsto, perché ch'è domane è l'ultimo di che io debbo essere aspettato. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Che farai tu, se ella il dice ai fratelli? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Se fo infra otto giorni non vi guarisco, fai temi bruciare. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

Se tu ti cali, io non ti verbo dietro di galoppo. (Dant. Inf. 22.)

Or che avesti, che fai cot'al viso. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Anichino saltò un grandissimo sospiro. La donna, guardando, disse: "Che avesti, Anichino? Duoliti cost, che io ti vinci." (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

He went quickly out of that tomb, ran to his palace; his steps were no longer uncertain, the way was no longer doubtful, the night was no longer dark.

What is to be done, let it be done immediately, for to-morrow will be the last day of my being expected.

What wilt thou do, if she tells it to her brothers?

If I shall not cure you in eight days, have me burnt.

If thou wilt cast thee down [into the pitch], I cannot chase thee on foot.

Now what ails thee, that thou makest such a face.

Anichino gave a very deep sigh. The lady, having looked at him, said: "What ails thee, Anichino? Art thou sorry, that I conquer thee?"

These and similar expressions ought to be regarded, however, as equivalent to the phrases (ti comanda, — ti esorta, — ti consiglia a) *ciò non temere, (a) non mi toccare, &c., (1) do (command, — exhort, — counsel thee) not (to) fear that, not (to) touch me; &c.; in which the words contained within parentheses are generally suppressed by ellipsis.
onde fosti tu stanarne? — Non so ove mi fui. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)


Fo andava per grand'e bisogno in servigio della mia donna, il re fu giunto, e disse: “Ca-
valiere, a qual donna sei tu?” (Nov. ant. 35.)

Alzata all'ultimo la lanterna, ebbi veduto il cattivissimo Andreauccio. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Eh via! caro amico, parla a voi, che non vi voglia bene. (Gold. Ver. Am.)

Gente si appressa: Elvira sarà. (Alf. Fil. 4. 1.)

Avrò detto, che ho da andare [a Venezia], per una lettera che tratta di mio zio. (Gold.)

Conosco lui essere un malvagio uomo. (Gr. Gr.)

Udendo il re d'Inghilterra il maliscalco essere morto. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Ti converserà sempre avere nella memoria, Idio essere stato creatore del cielo, e della terra. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.)

Egli s'accorse l'abate aver mangiato fave secche. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

Venne a corto l'abate di Cluny, il quale si crede essere uno dei più ricchi prefetti del mondo. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

Ella, credendo lui essere Gisippo, risposi di sì.

Where hast thou been this morning? — I know not where I have been.

Hast thou chosen? — I have. — Amon? — Death. — Thou shalt have it.

I was going on an important errand in the service of my lady, when the king arrived, and said: “Knight, what lady dost thou belong to?”

Having raised the lantern a little, they saw that rogue Andreauccio.

Come! dear friend, perhaps it seems to you, that she does not like you.

People approach: perhaps it is Elvira.

Perhaps I have said, that I am to go to Venice on account of a letter which concerns my uncle.

I know that he is a wicked man.

The king of England hearing that his farrier was dead.

Thou must keep always in thy mind that God has been the creator of heaven and earth.

He found out, that the abbot had eaten dry beans.

There came to court the abbot of Cluny, who is thought to be one of the richest prelates in the world.

She, believing that he was Gisippus, answered yes.
VERBS.

Di Guiscardo ho io già
meco preso partito che farne;
ma di te salvo Idiio, che io non
so che farmi. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Credendo lui esser tornato
dal bosco, avvisò di riprendere forte. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)

Cio non temer, che in crudeltà son pèri— I tuoi ministri a te. (Alf. Filip. 4. 2.)

Lasciami, non mi toccare. (Bocc.)

I have already determined within myself what to do with Guiscard; but God knows what to do with thee, for I do not.

Believing that he had returned from the wood, he thought of reprimanding him severely.

Do not fear that, for thy ministers are not inferior to thee in cruelty.

Let me alone, do not touch me.

OF THE TENSES OF THE DEPENDENT VERBS IN A COMPOUND SENTENCE.

When, in a compound sentence, the principal verb is in the present of the indicative, or in the future, the dependent verb must be put in the present of the conjunctive, if we mean to imply the present or future time; and in the imperfect of the conjunctive, if we mean to imply the past; as,

Io credo omai che monti e piagge sappian di che l'empire sia la mia vita,

I believe that, by this time, mountains and plains know what is the condition of my life;

Converrà che tu godesse di tal desto,

it is proper that this wish of thine should be gratified;

Credo mi portasse amore,

I believe that he loved me;

Giudicherà facilmente quanta to mi fossi rallegrato,

you will easily imagine how much I rejoiced at it.

When the principal verb is in the imperfect or the perfect of the indicative, or in the conditional, the dependent verb is generally put in the imperfect of the conjunctive; as,

Appena sapèva che far si he hardly knew what to do;

Dovèsse,
she asked what was the cause of their noise;
who would be happier than I, if that money were mine?

In suppositive or conditional phrases, the imperfect of the indicative in English,—had, was, or were, is rendered in Italian by the imperfect of the conjunctive; as,

se così non fosse, io non vi potrèi prestare un gràsso,

[if it was not so] were it not so, I could not lend you a farthing;

se non avèssi patrè di mio padre, io gli insegnèrei la risposta,

[if I had not the fear—if I was not afraid] were I not afraid of my father, I would teach him how to reply;

se avèssi questi denàri, tègli presterèi incontantemente,

if I had this money, I would lend it to thee immediately.

**EXAMPLES.**

*Si ch'io mi credo omài, che ménti, e piagn.,—E piagn., e sélve sàppian di che tèmpre—Sìa la mía vità.*  (Petr. s. 22.)

Di tal desìo convèrrà che tu gòda.*  (Deòl. Int. 6.)

*CREDO MI PORTÀSSE AMòRE, e che di me non fòsse méno ardènte.*  (Ariost.)

Giudicherà facilmente quanto io mi fosseri rallegràto.  (Bent. lett.)

Appèna sapèva che far si dovèsse.  (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Domandò la regina qual fosse la cagione del loro romore.  (Bocc. g. 6.)

Chi starèbbe mèglio di me, se quelli denàri fossero míi?  (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

So that I believe, that, by this time, mountains, and plains, and rivers, and woods know what is the condition of my life.

It is proper that this wish of thine should be granted.

I believe that he loved me, and that he was no less ardent in love than I.

You will easily imagine how much I rejoiced at it.

He hardly knew what to do.

The queen asked what was the cause of their noise.

Who would be more happier I, if that money were mine?
OF THE MANNER OF EXPRESSING THE ENGLISH PRESENT-PARTICIPLE IN ITALIAN.

The English present-participle may be expressed in Italian:

First, by the gerund of the corresponding verb; as,

veggendolo consumare come seeing him waste away like
la neve al sole,

dormendo gli parve di vedere la donna sua,

Secondly, by the conjunction che, or the adverb quando, and a tense of the indicative mood; as,

poi ch’èbe riposato il having rested my weary body;
corpo lasso,

quando èbe detto ciò, ri- having said this, he took up
prése il tèschio misero có’ once more that miserable
dentii,

skull with his teeth.

Thirdly, by a preposition and the verb in the infinitive; as,

consumò quella mattina in he spent that morning in look-
 cercârli,
ing after them;

crédo che le subre sien tutte he believe that the nuns are all
a sleeping or] asleep.
dormire,
When the English present-participle has before it a preposition, such as of, from, with, on, in, for, without, before, after, &c., it is always rendered in Italian by the corresponding verb in the infinitive with a preposition.

If the participle is preceded by the prepositions of, from, with, they are expressed in Italian by the preposition di, attended by the infinitive; as,

*babi il piacere di vedelo,* I had the pleasure of seeing him;
*ella mi' impedisce di farlo,* you prevent me from doing so;
*contento di averla trovata,* being content with having found her.

The preposition on, before the participle, may be expressed by the prepositions di, or in; as,

*i' vanta d' aver la loro conoscenza,* he values himself on being acquainted with them;
*nel partire gli sovranno di lei,* on his departure he recollected her.

The preposition in is rendered by a, or in; as,

*che a far ciò volesse aitarlo,* that he would assist him in doing that;
*avea nel quetar popolo autorità ed arte,* in appeasing the people he had both authority and art.

The prepositions for, without, before, after, &c., are literally translated.

If the participle is preceded by the preposition by, this preposition is generally omitted in Italian, and the participle rendered by the gerund of the corresponding verb; as,

*gli scolari imparano le regole di una lingua studiando-le,* scholars learn the rules of a language by studying them.
But if we wish to express the preposition, then the verb must be put in the infinitive, and by rendered by con; as,

_ìl divino Giulio rintuzzò la sedizione del suo esercito col dir solo: “Ah Qui-rri!”_

the divine Julius checked the sedition of his army by only saying: “Ah Romans!”

**Examples.**

_Veggéndolo to consumàre come si fa la nève al sole._ (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

_Dorméndo gli párve in sogno di vedére la dónna sua andar per un bósco assai bello._ (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

_Poich’ ébbi ripósato il córpo lasso,— Riprési via per la pìoggia disèrta._ (Dant. Inf. 1.)

_Quand’ ébbe detto ciò, cogli bechi tórti,— Riprési il tèscchio miserò có’ dènti— Che furo all’ osso, cóme d’ un can, fòrti._ (Dant. Inf. 33.)

_Tutto il rimanénte di quella mättìna consumò in cercáirì._ (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

_Fo mi crédò che le suórè sien tútte à dormître._ (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

_Non prima di iéri ébbi il pia-gère di vedére, in càsa dell’ ambasciádore del re di Fráncia, . . . . (Bent.)

_Se non ch’ ella m’ imédése di fárlo._ (Metast. lett.)

_Cónténto di òavér trováta Filoména._ (Bocc.)

_Egù si vánta d’ òavér la loro conoscénza._ (Gold.)

44°

I seeing him waste away as the snow does in the sun.

Whilst he was asleep, it seemed to him that he saw, in a dream, his lady going through a very beautiful wood.

Having rested my wearied body, I made my way through the desolated shore.

Having said this, with looks askance he took up once more that miserable skull with his teeth, which were as strong upon the bone as those of a dog.

He spent all the rest of that morning in looking after them.

I believe that the nuns are all asleep.

Not before yesterday did I have the pleasure of seeing, at the house of the ambassador of the king of France, . . . .

Except that you prevent me from doing so.

Being content with having found Philomena.

He values himself on being acquainted with them.
OF THE WAY OF RENDERING INTO ITALIAN THE ENGLISH PARTICLE TO, BEFORE THE INFINITIVE OF VERBS.

The particle to prefixed to English verbs is used sometimes as a mere sign of the infinitive, and sometimes as a preposition. When it is a mere sign, it is never rendered in Italian, except when the infinitive is used as a noun, and then it is expressed by the article il or lo. When to has the force of a preposition, it is rendered by the prepositions di, a, per.

When the infinitive of verbs can be expressed in Italian by a noun; as,—‘to read is useful,’ la lettura è utile; — ‘always to study is fatigueing,’ lo studio continuo è faticoso; — the particle to is rendered by the article il or lo; — il leggere è utile, ‘to read is useful’; — lo studiar sempre è faticoso, ‘always to study is fatigueing’; as,

le impose il seguitare [or, il proseguimento],
L’ astenersi [or, l’ astinenza] da quel che piace, è verità-virtù.
VERBS.

la dónna veggéndochel impartiality, seeing that to pray was useless, had recourse to threats:
pregáre non levélva [or, che le preghíère non le valévano], ricórse al mi-
nacciáre [or, alle mi-

But if the infinitive cannot be expressed by a noun, the particle to is rendered by a preposition.

If the particle to is preceded by a verb signifying remembering or forgetting, pleasing or displeasing, rejoicing or grieving, owning or denying, permitting or prohibiting, telling, declaring, affirming, supposing, suspecting, fearing, commanding, asking, entreating, doubting, promising, advising, concluding, finishing, proposing; or by any verb implying desire or aversion, it is rendered in Italian by the preposition di; as,

a me piáce di dirvi una no-
vélla, it pleases me to tell you a

m'è cadúto nell' ánimo di it has occurred to my mind to
dimostrárvi, show you;

a'me apparténe di ragioná-
re, it belongs to me to speak;

áma d' esseré svegliáto a he likes to be awakened by
suón di tròmbe, the sound of trumpets.

The particle to is translated by the preposition a, when it comes after verbs signifying beginning, teaching, learning, attaining, insisting, persisting, proceeding, remaining, continuing, opposing, contributing, engaging, liking, accustoming, encouraging, obliging; after verbs implying inclination, difficulty, application, thought, reluctance, fitness; and after verbs signifying motion; as,

cominciá a chiédere perdóno, he began to ask pardon;
égli è brútto a vedére, he is ugly to look at;
quánto m'èra ciód cáro ad how pleasing it was to me to
udire! hear this!
chi nol crédé, venga a ve-
dérla, let him who does not believe it,
come and see her.
And whenever for the particle to, joined with the infinitive of English verbs, can be substituted the phrases in order to,—with the design of; it is rendered in Italian by the preposition per; as,

PER _mostrare_ d' avere a grado la sua venuta, to show how agreeable his visit was to him;

l' agricola, che Cristo chiese all' orto suo per aiutar-lo, the husbandman, whom Christ chose to assist him [to be his helpmate] in his own garden.

**EXAMPLES:**

_La regina, a Filoména voltata, le impose il seguito._ (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

E _vera virtù._ — _Il sapere si astener à quel che piace,_ — _Se quel che piace offende._ (Past. Fl. 8. 8.)

_Le donna veggendó che il pregare non le valeva, ricorse al minacciare._ (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

A _me piace di dirvi una novella._ (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)

M' è caduto nell' animo di dimostrarvi nella novella, che a me tocca di dire . . . . (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.)

A _me omài appartiene di ragionare._ (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

_Ama meglio d' essere svegliato a suon di tromba, e romb d' arme, che a suon di cetra, o'dì viola._ (Dav. Stor.)

_Il medico cominciò a chiedere._ (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

_Egli è deformato di corpo, brutto à vedere._ (Varch.)

_O quanto mi è gra ciò caro ad udire!_ (Bocc.)

The queen, having turned to Philomena, ordered her to continue.

To know how to abstain from what pleases, when that which pleases is injurious, is true virtue.

The woman, seeing that to pray was useless, had recourse to threats.

It pleases me to tell you a story.

It has occurred to my mind to show to you, in the story which I am to tell you, . . . .

Now it belongs to me to speak.

He likes better to be awakened by the sound of trumpets, and the noise of arms, than by the sound of citherns or viols.

The physician began to ask pardon.

He is deformed in his person, and ugly to look at.

O how pleasing it was to me to hear this!
EXERCISE XXXIII.

Would to Heaven | that my fortune would allow me
Faccia il Cielo | fortuna dare
| to put them in execution. They came in sight
| di mettere opera.

of — (saw themselves near to) a small-castle | from |
vedere vicino castello di

which, having been seen, | about twelve men suddenly,
vedere, da2 fante2 subito2 rushed out upon them. Finally, no — (not any) virtue
uscre2 — — finalmente2 N2 virtù4

can be found | in those, who have given themselves
si trova2 essere dare
| up to gluttony. Oh! how true these things
in preda gola. come vero cosa

are. It was the castle of one of the family of the
castello

Orsini, and by good fortune | his lady — (a lady of
per ventura | non bisognano

his) was there. Words are not necessary | in this
Parola
business — (here). The mother said: "(O my) daughter, madre Dire: "figliubla, what warm | are you talking about?" |
caldo | fa | égli?"

The father, | on account of | the love (that) he bore
padre, | per | amore | portare
her, took no care — (gave himself little care) | to |
dare | poco | essere | di |
marry her again, and it seemed not modest (thing) | in |
maritare | piu; | — | parere10 | neste10 | cosa11 | a |
her | to | ask | it (of him). Who was a very young
in | riciedere14 | assai | giovane
and handsome | man | . And he saw a knight
bello | della persona | 1 | vedere | cavaliere7
dressed in black following — (to come after) her. But
— | bruno | venire | dietro-a2 |
the knight who saw this cried | from afar | to him.
cavaliere | vedere | di lontano |
The following day the Saladin caused a most beautiful
seguente | di | fare | bello10
and rich bed | to be put up | in a large hall.
ricco13 | letto12 | fare | gran7 | sala6.
Yesterday | at | this hour we were in Mugello. He
ieri | a | ora | — |
was one of those men, who are more attached to liberty,
omo, | affezionato | liberta,
than to life. Three months ago there was a conflagration.
vita. | mese | fa | incendio.
A noisy event happened this year. Perondo was
strepitoso1 avvenimento1 accadere anno. 2 Essere7
quite pale.
tutto | pallido.
To-morrow will be a holy-day. If thou wilt touch
Domani | festa. | toccare
her with this | written paper, | she will follow thee
scritta, | venire | dietro
immediately. He said he was pernicious and vile. He incontinent. — Dire — perfido — vile. —

took a leap, and threw himself down from the other side. He thought that this man was such as parte. — Pensare — costui — dovère essere

the wickedness of the Burgundians required (it). From malvagità — Borgognone — richiedere —

these — it was heard in the neighbouring fields, that si séppe — vicino — campo —

Terni was guarded by four-hundred horsemen. If he guardare — quattrocento — casallo —
thinks that the republic needs —— (has need) that the crédere — repubblica — bisogno

senators should speak freely, why does he enter into so senatore — parlare — libero — entraré —

trifling details? Do not make a noise. She saw débole — cosa — — füre — strépito. — conoscere —
clearly that her vision had-been true. She, who was Manifesto — — visión — — véro —

not a physician, believed without any doubt, that he was — médica — crédere — — falso — —
dead. Do not flatter thyself. morte — bisingare —

Come into the house, for I believe (that) it is venire — casa — crédere —

better that she should not see thee. What dost vedere —

thou wish that I should say to her, if I should happen volere — dire —

to — (it happens that I should) speak to her? He —

asked him what had become of the other leg of the Domandare — divenire — coscia —
crane. He was disposed to go wherever she grà. dispónere — di — andare dovunque —
pleased — (it was agreeable to her). I never should

have believed, that he would act so — (was capable of
créder, — — — capace
doing this). Who would have been the one — (that),
far |

that would not have — (set himself to) run-away.

The king having ordered. Setting fire to per
re ordinaire. Appiccare |
every place. I met them riding post. That day
largo. — Incontrare corree posta. giorno

having passed. Having done writing. When she
passare. finire servire.

began to sing.
comincidere cantere.

He forbids him to produce the proofs of his
— viétre produrre prova
innocence. I am very glad to see you — (I re-
innocenza. — — — — — — — — re-
joice myself much at seeing you). It is a crime in
leggere vedere. — delitto

Tyre to have a great fortune.* It begins to rain.
Tiro gran bene. — Comincidere piuere.

I beseech you to grant me that favor. If it was
— pregare accordare favore.

a fault to leave thee, behold I make amends for
copia. lasciare, écco — — —
it — (I amend it). He likes to play. I did
— ammendare. amare giuocare. — fere
so — (it) to oblige you. She speaks thus to
— obbligare. — Parlare

vex me.
tormentare .

* Fortune, in the plural.
CHAPTER VIII.

PARTICIPLES, AND USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN ADVERBS.

AGREEMENT OF PARTICIPLES.

It has already been observed (p. 344) that participles in Italian are considered and often used as adjectives, and that, when so used, (pp. 345, 411) they agree with substantives in gender and number.

This is always the case with present-participles, which constantly agree in gender and number with their subject; as,

\[ \text{una náve portántes uómi} \]
\[ \text{ni tempestánti, perico-} \]
\[ \text{lánti, soggiacénti a tán} \]
\[ \text{ti marósí,} \]

\[ \text{presente ágli occhi suoi Léi} \]
\[ \text{gridántes mercé svendró-} \]
\[ \text{no,} \]

\[ \text{delle dónde aspettánti si ri-} \]
\[ \text{volse, e disse,} \]

\[ \text{a ship carrying men tempest-} \]
\[ \text{tossed, endangered, and sub-} \]
\[ \text{ject to so many storms;} \]

\[ \text{before his eyes they slew her} \]
\[ \text{[who was] crying out for} \]
\[ \text{mercy;} \]

\[ \text{he addressed himself to the la-} \]
\[ \text{dies [who were] waiting, and} \]
\[ \text{said.} \]

By a peculiarity of language, and in imitation of the ablative absolute of the Latin, we often find in good writers a present-participle with its noun or pronoun, independent of any verb, and standing, as it were, alone in a discourse; as,

\[ \text{quándo, sopra} \]
\[ \text{avégnénte} \]
\[ \text{la nótte, sirse un tempo} \]
\[ \text{fieríssimo e tempestósí,} \]

\[ \text{Césare parló} \]
\[ \text{assettatamente,} \]
\[ \text{udénti nósí, della vita e} \]
\[ \text{dilla mórté,} \]

\[ \text{45} \]

\[ \text{when, night coming on, there} \]
\[ \text{came very severe and tem-} \]
\[ \text{pestuous weather;} \]

\[ \text{César spoke much to the point,} \]
\[ \text{[whilst] we [were] hearing} \]
\[ \text{him, about life and death.} \]
SYNTAX.

With regard to the agreement of past-participles, the following are the most sure rules:

When the past-participle is joined to the verb essere, 'to be'; or to such verbs as venire, restare or rimanere, vedersi, &c., used in the signification of 'to be'; it is to agree with the subject of the verb, with which it is joined, in gender and number; as,

ĕssi erano di frondi di quercia inghirlandati, they were garlanded with oak-leaves;
nor erano in fuite di Vitellii punite, ma ben paga;
mentre ch'ella [la lingua] non veniva [for, non sia] urlata da famosi scrittori,
procurerò che [egl]i resti [for, si] impiegato in questa città,
egl' rimase [for, tu] mavecigliato,
I giovane infelice si vide [for, fu] tosto tratto in prigione,

he was astonished;
the unhappy youth was soon taken to prison.

But when the past-participle is joined to the verb avere, 'to have'; — if this verb is used, instead of essere, in the signification of 'to be'; or is used in the signification of 'to hold,' 'to possess'; &c., as an active and not an auxiliary verb; the participle agrees with the object of the verb in gender and number; as,

per non poterti vedere 'l Averéstì [for, ti servestì] cavati gli occhi,
s'avea [for, s'era] messe alcune petruzze in bocca,
uno che paràta avea [for, tenèa, possedea] la gola,
thou wouldst have torn out thy eyes, not to see thyself;
he had put some small stones in his mouth;
one who had his throat pierced;
AGREEMENT OF PARTICIPLES.

I have a mind so accustomed to contemplate this lady alone;

although they had unsheathed their swords;

I did not hear these things from the neighbours;

the moon had lost her rays.

If the verb avere, to which the past-participle is joined, is used as an auxiliary verb, in order to represent the idea of past time, which could be equally expressed by a single form of the verb, which the participle belongs to; then this participle remains invariable; as,

come to avero dato [or, dare] loro ogni cosa,
cercato ho [or, cercai] sempre solitaria via,
m'ha dimostrato [or, mi dimostro] la cagione del tuo male,
chi queste cose ha manifestato [or, manifestò] al maestro?

As soon as I shall have given to them every thing;

I have always sought a solitary way;

he has manifested to me the cause of thy evil;

who has told these things to the master?

When the past-participle is preceded by one of the pronouns mi, ti, ci, vi, si, il, lo, la, li, gli, le, ne, che, chi, quale, quali, quanti, as objects of the verb, the participle agrees with the pronouns, or the objects represented by them, in gender and number; as,

ella medesima me le ha dat-te [or, mi ha datte queste cose],

she herself has told them to me;

il librario diceva averla esso uccisa [or, avere esso uccisa la donna],

the freed-man said that he had killed her himself;
thou hast delighted us so much to-day;

which I will relate to show you;

she caused the water to be given to her, which she had prepared the day before;

seeing such a lady, and one whom he had loved so much;

the evils which thou hast sustained on my account.

The participle, however, remains invariable if it is accompanied by an infinitive, and the abovementioned pronouns are the objects of this infinitive; as,

the things which he had heard of as having happened;

he will have put you all to death;

the lady, whom his long admiration had not been able to move.

Finally, past-participles may be used, like present-participles, absolutely; the gerund of the verb essere, or avere, being generally understood; and then, if the gerund understood is essendo, they agree with the subject, and if avendo, with the object of the proposition; as,

the domestic having arrived, and having consigned the the letters and delivered the message, was received with great joy.
Examples.

Una nave portante uomini tempestanti, pericolanti, soggiacenti a tanti marosi. (Giov. Vill. 11. 8.)

Presente agli occhi suoi lei gridante mercè e aiuto svenarono. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

Alle donne aspettanti si rivolse, e disse. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 10.)

Quando, sopralevemente la notte, con essa insieme sorse un tempo fierissimo e tempestoso. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Cesare parlò bello e assettamentamente, udenti noi, della vita e della morte, quando disse . . . . (Brun. Tes. 8. 34.)

Essi eran tutti di erbe quercia inghirlandati. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Nè erano le fâlte del Vitelliâni punite, ma ben pagate. (Dav. Stor. 9.)

Ma stasi una lingua nobile, poco le gioverà mentre ch'ella non venga usata da fanosi scrittore. (Boccal.)

Se non mi sarà licito di sposarlo, procurèrò almeno che resti impiegato in questa città. (Gold. Avv.)

Égli rimase maravigliato della brutta incisione. (Boccal.)

E il giovane infelice si vide tòsto da una squadra di satelliti circondato e tratto in prigione. (Scuv. Nov.)

A ship carrying men tempest-tossed, endangered, and subject to so many storms.

Before his eyes they slew her [who was] crying out for mercy and assistance.

He addressed himself to the ladies who were waiting, and said.

When, night coming on, there came with it very severe and tempestuous weather.

Cæsar spoke finely and much to the point, we hearing him, about life and death, when he said . . . .

They were all garlanded with oak-leaves.

Nor were the faults of Vitellius’ troops punished, but well paid.

But however noble a language may be, this will be of little use to it, whilst it is not adopted by celebrated writers.

If I am not allowed to marry him, I shall at least endeavour that he may be employed in this city.

He was astonished at the bad invention.

And the unhappy youth was soon surrounded by a band of satellites and taken to prison.
Di te stessa vergognandoti, 
per non poterti vedere, ti 
avresti cavati gli occhi. 
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Messer lo geloso s'avea mèse 
alcune petrúzze in bòcca. 
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

Un altro che foràta avea la 
Gòla. (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Lassì quel, ch'è più bramo: 
ed ho sì avvèzza—la mente 
A contemplar sola costei,—ch' 
Altro non vede (Petr. s. 80.)

Benché egli avevesso già 
le spade isguainate e menate. 
(Amm. Ant. 11. 1. 12.)

Io non ho queste cose sa-
pùte da' vicini; ella medési-
ma, sorti di te doléndosi, me le 
hà dette. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

Avea la lòna, essendo nel 
mézo del cielo, perduti i rag-
gi suoi. (Bocc. g. 6. Intr.)

Céme io avrò loro ogni cosa 
dato. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Cercato ho sempre solitá-
ria via—per fuggir quest' in-
gegni sordi e lasci. (Petr. s 
222.)

Domennéddio m'ha dimostra-
to la cagione del tuo male. 
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

Chi altri che tu, ha queste 
cose manifestato al maestro? 
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

Il libero dècava áverla 
ècco uccisa, e vendicava l'in-
giuria del padròn suo. (Dav.)

Se tu ieri ci affiggésti, tu ci 
hai oggi tanto dilicate che 
miuna di te si dice rammaricaré. 
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

Being ashamed of thyself, thou 
wouldst have torn out thy eyes, 
not to see thyself.

The jealous man had put some 
small stones in his mouth.

Another who had his throat 
perced.

I have forgotten what I most 
desire: and my mind is so ac-
customed to contemplate this lady 
alone, that it perceives nothing 
else.

Although they had unsheathed 
and used their swords.

I did not hear these things 
from the neighbours; she herself, 
complaining bitterly of thee, has 
told them to me.

The moon, although in the 
middle of heaven, had lost her 
rays.

As I shall have given to them 
every thing.

I have always sought a solitary 
way, in order to avoid these deaf 
and blind minds.

God has manifested to me the 
cause of thy evil.

Who else but thou has told 
these things to the master?

The freed-man said that he had 
killed her himself, and thus aveng-
ed the offence done to his master.

If thou didst afflict us yesterday, 
thy hast delighted us so much 
to-day that none of us can com-
plain of thee.
USE AND POSITION OF ADVERBS.

La quale, piacevole donna, io racconterò per farti accórrete . . . . . (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

E questo detto, si fà d'aire l'occhioléto, nel quale era l'acqua, che il di davanti avéva fatta, e tutta la bève. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Il quale cosi fatta dama, e cui egli cotanto amata avéva, per moglie vendersi. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Foi sono venuta a ristorarti de' danni, li quale tu hai già avuti per me. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Le cose che già avéva udito dire, che di notte erano intervenute. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

Dunque, un ubbi solo — Si partirà, che non l'avrete offeso, — Quandò t'otti v'avrà fatto morire? (Ariost. Fur. 17. 8.)

La dama, la quale il lungo vagheggiare, l'armeggiare, le mattinauté muovere non avévan potuto, mossero le affettuose parole. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Giunto adunque il famigliare a Genova, e date le lettere, e fatta l'ambasciata, fu dalla dama con gran festa ricevuto. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

Which, kind ladies, I will relate to show you . . . . .

And, having said this, she caused the vessel of water to be given to her, which she had prepared the day before, and drank it all off.

Who seeing himself united in marriage with such a lady, and one whom he had loved so much.

I am come to make thee amends for the injuries thou hast sustained on my account.

The things which he had heard of as having happened by night.

Then, shall a single man depart from hence, when he will have put all of you to death, without having been at all hurt by you?

The lady, whom his long admiration, tournaments, serenades, were not able to move, was moved by his tender words.

The domestic, having arrived at Genoa, and having consigned the letters and delivered the message, was received by the lady with great joy.

USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN ADVERBS.

Adverbs, as we mentioned at pp. 391, 394, may be put before or after the verb; they may be put, also, between the auxiliary and the participle, and between two participles; as,

in sì è bene come io sono agiato,

thou knowest well how I am situated;
 quickly [a wolf] seized her by
the throat;
I could sleep no longer after
that;
she had been very badly ad-
vised.

The adverb non, 'no or not'; is always put before
the verb; as,

I do not rave, Madam;
do you not perceive that we
are worms.

When the adverb non is employed to deny several
objects, and these precede the verb, the adverb is put
before the nouns, and not before the verb; as,

neither rain, nor hail, nor snow,
nor dew, nor frost falls a-
bove.

The adverb mài, which in itself strictly means 'at any
time,' may be put either before or after the verb;
when, however, it is put before, it takes the significan-
of never, and when after, it takes that of ever; as,

I beseech thee never to tell,
that thou hast seen me;
the Perugians never wished to
condescend to come to any
agreement;
what barbarians were ever!
the sky is as beautiful to-day
as ever it was.

The adverbs non mài, 'not ever,' 'never'; occurring
in the same phrase, are generally separated by the verb;
and then non, 'no or not'; always precedes, and mài,
'ever'; always follows that verb; as,

I never eat;
the arts never fared worse;
USE AND POSITION OF ADVERBS.

NON SPERAB DI VEDERMi IN TERRA MAI,
never hope to see me again on earth.

But they may be used, also, united; and then, if mai precedes non, they are to be put both before the verb; if it follows non, they may be put after it; as,

\[\text{to mai non dōrmo,}\]
\[\text{I never sleep;}\]
\[\text{che fērro mai non strīnge,}\]
\[\text{who never knew how to use arms;}\]
\[\text{girāgō di mai non dīrlo,}\]
\[\text{she swore to him never to tell it;}\]
\[\text{amici sedēti pōssōn diven- tār bēne, studditi non mai,}\]
\[\text{they can, indeed, become faithful friends, but subjects nev- er.}\]

\textbf{Examples.}

\textit{Pinuccio, tu sāi bēne cōme fo sōno aģiato.} (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)
\[\text{Pinuccio, thou knowest well how I am situated.}\]

\textit{Il quāle, prestamente s' avvientava alla gōla di costei.} (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)
\[\text{Which [wolf] quickly seized her by the throat.}\]

\textit{Io non ho mai pōscia portōtō dormīrē.} (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)
\[\text{I could sleep no longer after that.}\]

\textit{E ch' el' ēra stātā móltō māle consigliāta.} (Bocc.)
\[\text{And that she had been very badly advised.}\]

\textit{Disse allōra Pirro: "Non farnētico, no, Madōnna."} (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)
\[\text{Then Pyrhus said: "I do not rave, Madam, no."}\]

\textit{Non v' accorgēte voi, che noi siām vērmi. — Nāti a formār l' angēlica forfālla.} (Dant. Purg. 10.)
\[\text{Do you not perceive, that we are worms, made to form the winged insect imped with angel plumes.}\]

\textit{Perchē non piōggia, non grāndo, non néve, — Non ru- giāda, non brāna piū su cāde, — Che la saclettā de' tre grūdi brēece.} (Dant. Purg. 21.)
\[\text{Because neither rain, nor hail, nor snow, nor dew, nor frost, ever falls above that short ladder of three steps.}\]

\textit{Ti priēgo che mai ad alcūna persōna diģhi d' avērmi vedū- ta.} (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)
\[\text{I beseech thee never to tell to any one that thou hast seen me.}\]
SYNTAX.

I Perugiani, per loro alterigia, mai vollero dichiarare ad alcun accordo. (Matt. Vill. 8. 39.)

Quale barbarie fù mai, quid Saraceni! (Dant. Purg. 23.)

Così è òggi Séllo il cielo come fu mai. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

Se tu dìgì, io non m'ancor mai; se tu vegghi, io mai non dormo. (Passav.)

In questo mezzo, l'arti e la mercanzia non istetter mai peggio in Firenze. (Giov. Vill. 9. 12.)

Non sperar di vedermi in terra mai. (Petr. g. 212.)

Pópolo ignudo, pascentoso, e lente, — che pèrro mai non stringe. (Petr. e. 5.)

E giurògli di mai non dirlo. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Amici fedeli foss' on diver- tár bene gli Americani agli Inglesi, sudditi non mai. (Bott. Stor. Amer. l. 6.)

The Perugians, through pride, never wished to condescend to come to any agreement.

What barbarians, what Saracens were ever!

The sky is as beautiful to-day as ever it was.

If thou fastest, I never eat; if thou art watching, I never sleep.

During this time, the arts and commerce never fared worse in Florence.

Never hope to see me again on earth.

A race poor, fearful, and indolent, who never knew how to use arms.

And she swore to him never to tell it.

The Americans can indeed become the faithful friends of the English, but subjects never.

EXERCISE XXXIV.

After he had spent some (of his) time to con-

Peichè — ponere a quânto — tempo in docte

sole racconsolare — piangere.

Ireland, came the desire of hearing. (The) rivers

Irlanda, venire — voglia sentire.

Ireland, came the desire of hearing. (The) rivers

ree of (the) blood extinguished the rising flame. Happy,

sangue estinguere — nascerè fiamma.

and fortunate, and enjoying forever the fruit

fortunato, godere — in ogni tempo.
of their love. You are not the first, nor will you be
amore.

the last, that is imposed upon. I know not whether
ultimo, ingannare. sapere se

thou hast minded how close we are kept.

They having arrived at the city, went with
Esso pervenere esso città, ne andarono.

Mr. Torello to his house, where fifty of the
Messere casa cinquantà

principal citizens were come to receive them. The
maggior cittadino ventre ricevere

message which I have given to him to deliver
commissione dare di riferire
to the king. Thou knowest what is the offence,

which thou hast given me. Master, I have seen
fare Maestro, vedere

a thing which troubles me. One who had
casa dispiaceré.

the one, and the other hand cut off. Each one of
uno, altro man mozzare.

them had her right breast cut off, in order to
— diritto mammella tagliare, per

| carry | the shield | in battles. They are

| portare | lo scudo | aria battaglia.

handsomer than the painted angels, which you have
bello dipinto ágnolì,

often-times shown me. Thou hast been with that

lèi, whom thou hast deceived.

I have caused the greater part of my possessions to-

— fare maggior parte possessioni venn-

* You, feminine gender.
† We, feminine.
‡ House, in the plural.
§ Each one, in the feminine.
¶ They, feminine.
be-sold. They were glad that they had—(of having) dere'. — Rimandare conténto —
successfully—(with success) known how to mock the — 
succéssó sapéré — schernire
avarice of Calandrino. | No sooner had she entered (into) avarizia
avnaria | Né prima | entréré'
the room, than, the (beating of the arteries— the) pulse câmera', che battiménto — pósso
returned to the youth; and having left it—(she hav- 
ritornare giboane; — —
ing departed), it [the pulse] left him also—(it ceased).
partire, — — — — — — — cessére.

Is not this the land, which I first trod with
my feet | ? Ciaco replied: "Thou knowest very
care | ? Rispondere: " — sapéré —
well, that I shall come." Who quickly opened
béné, venire." prestamente aprire
the door. The Devil said once to St. Macarius:
pórta. Diovólo dixé una volta San Macário:
"If thou art always watching—(watchest), I never
— — — végliare,
sleep; if thou usest all thy efforts in thy works
donnére; — — —
(working), I never rest — (have never rest)."
opperare, — — — non mais riposo."
Did not thy master say, that we should carry
padrone dire, portéré
— —
home | these things? Caring (himself) neither
a casa | cosa? Curéré
— —
for | the palaces, nor | for | the ox, nor | for | the
di | palágio, | di | bús, | di |
horse, nor | for | the ass, nor | for | the money, nor
cavalo, | di | asino, | di | denário,
— — —
for any other thing, which he had seen.
di | cosa, — * vedéré'.

* Money, in the plural.
EXPLETIVES.

CHAPTER IX.

EXPLETIVES.

[Although many of the following words have been already mentioned in treating of the different Parts of Speech, which they respectively belong to, it has, nevertheless, not been thought altogether useless to present them here once more united in a single chapter.]

BÉLLO:

Il vostro vestito è BÉLL' e fàtto. Your suit of clothes is finished.

(Fir.)

per BÉLLE paúra gittò le ban- through fear he threw down

dière del comúne. (Cron. the standards of the com-

Mor.) monwealth.

per BÉLLE scritte di lor máno they were bound to each other
s' obbligaronó l' úno all' ál- by fine obligations written

tro. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) with their own hands.

BÉNE, BEN, BÉ:

Gli domandái, se gli bastáva I asked him, if he had courage
l' únino di cacciaíro via; ed to send him away; and he
ed égli rispóse: "Si BÉNE." answered: "Yes, indeed."

(Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

égli è quà un malvágio úmò, here is a wicked man, who has
che m' ha tagliáto la bórse cut my purse with full one
con BÉN cénio floríni d' óro. hundred florins of gold.

(Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

"BÉ;" rispos' to, "Messère, par- "well, Sir," answered I, "we
lerém pói; — Non fáte qui will speak afterwards; do
per or quéstó fracáesso." not make now such a noise

(Bern. Rim.) here.

CI:

Sémpré che tu ci viverái. (Bocc. As long as thou livest.
g. 6. n. 4.)

la dónna e Pirro dicévanó: the lady and Pyrrhus said:
"Nói ci séggiamo." (Bocc. "We will sit down."
g. 7. n. 9.)

CON:

Síássi con méco. (Petr.) He is with me.

spéro d' avére assá buón témpo I hope I shall have a fine time
con teco. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.) with thee.
SYNTAX.

ÉCCO:

ÉCCO, Pietro chiamò all’uscio. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Ed écco Pietro chiamò all’uscio. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

ÉCCO, Giannotto, a te piace che io divenga Cristiano. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

ÉGLI:

ÉGLI è una compassione a vedere. (Mach. Com.)

It excites pity to see him.

ÉGLI è una compassione a vedere. (Mach. Com.)

non ti fa mestieri il dirlo, il viso tuo favela ÉGLI. (Sen.)

It is not necessary to tell it, thy face manifests it.

ÉGLI è una compassione a vedere. (Mach. Com.)

ÉLLA:

ÉLLA non andrò così. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

It shall not go on so.

ÉLLA non andrò così. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

se non che ella ha in ciò voluto mostrare, che ella è gentile, ÉLLA. (Bocc. Corb, 79.)

except that she wished to shew by this, that she is courteous.

ÉLLA non andrò così. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

ÉSSO:

Andiamo a Roma con Ésso lui. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Let us go to Rome with him. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

ÉSso, as an expletive, is invariable, and may be used equally well before a masculine and a feminine pronoun, both singular and plural; as, con Ésso méco, 'with me'; con Ésso tèce, 'with thee'; con Ésso lui, 'with him'; con Ésso lèi, 'with her,' or 'with you'; con Ésso nói, 'with us'; con Ésso vó, 'with you'; con Ésso lóro, 'with them,' or 'with you:

fatti Élla finestrà, e chiámala, e go to the window, and call di' che venga a desinare con her, and tell her to come ÉSso nói. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.) and dine with us.

GÌÀ:

GÌÀ Dio non vóglia. (Bocc. May God forbid. g. 10. n. 5.)

I do not think you take it ill.

GÌÀ Dio non vóglia. (Bocc. May God forbid. g. 10. n. 5.)

non credo to gìà che ne avete a mâle. (Varch.)

And I:

Che faràbbé Égli sì to morirsi, What would he do if I should io? (Mach. Com.) die?
EXPLETIVES. 543

comechè ogni altro uomo molto di lui si lodì, io m'è pòso poco lod Cruc. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.) although every other person praises him much, I can praise him but little.

MÁI:

U'na parte del mondo è, che si giace—Mái sempre in ghiaccio. (Petr. c. 5.) There is a part of the world, which lies always frozen.

"céme?" disse Ferondo, "dunque sono io morto?"—Disse il Monaco: "Mái sí." (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.) "how," said Ferondo, "am I dead, then?"—The Monk replied: "Yes indeed."

MI:

Io mi sono un povero pellegrino. (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.) I am a poor pilgrim.

io mi credo che le suore sien tutte a dormire. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) I believe that the nuns are all asleep.

MÍCA:

Son novelle e vére, non sono míca fàvole. (Fir. Trin.) There are true news, they are not fables.

non míca idióta né materiale; ma scienziato, e di acuto ingegno. (Casa. Gal.) not an idiot nor a vulgar man; but learned, and of an acute mind.

NE:

Chetamente n' andò per la càmera insino alla finestra. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.) He went tranquilly through the room to the window.

andéanne là, e lavérmelo speciatamente. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.) let us go there, and we will wash it immediately.

NON:

Temo che vói non mi abbandoniáte. (Bocc.) I fear you will abandon me.

la qual modestia díbito che non gli sia dannosa. (Tolom. lett.) which modesty, I doubt, may be hurtful to him.
ÓRA:

Dek! or l' avéssero essi affogato. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) Ah! would that they had drowned thee.
óra che vorrà dir questo? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.) now what does this mean?

PÓI:

Non è pói véro quanto mi diceste. (Bocc.) What you told me is not true.
 io non mi sóno pói risoluto di partir di Roma. (Car. lett.) I have not come to the resolution of leaving Rome.

PÚNTO:

Senza sbigottir puntò. (Bocc.) Without being frightened at all.
Teladó non è puntó mórto. Teladó is not at all dead.
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

PÚRE:

La cosa andò pur costi. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) The affair went off so.
 fa puré che tu mi mostrì qual ti piace. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) do but show me him whom thou likest.

SI:

Del palàgio s’ uscì, e fuggìSSI He went out of the palace, and fled to his house.
a cása. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

SI:

Si è tanta la bennitinà, e la misericòrdìa di Dio. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.) So great is the goodness and the mercy of God.

TI:

Lo non so se tu t' hai posto in mènte. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) I know not, whether thou hast minded.

TU:

Tu di’ tue paròle, tu. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.) Thou mayest say what thou pleasest.
ELLIPSIS.

TUTTO:

La donna, udendo costui parlare il quale ella credeva morto, tutta stordita. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

The woman, hearing this man speak whom she thought dumb, was quite amazed.

UNO:

Vubi tu quell' uno? (Bocc.) Dost thou want that one?

VI:

Voi non sapete ció che voi vi dite. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.) You do not know what you say.

VIA:

"Va via," rispose; "e ció che tu vubi, cónsta." (Dant. Inf. 32.) "Go away," answered he; "and relate what thou pleastest."

CHAPTER X.

OF THE ELLIPSIS.

Ellipsis is a figure in grammar, which consists in the omission of one or more words in order to add conciseness and elegance to the phrase, without affecting its clearness. This figure is very frequent in Italian, and offers one of the principal difficulties in the grammatical analysis of the Classics. We will here give some examples in which the ellipsis is employed, supplying the words which are omitted, that the learner may familiarize himself with similar locutions.

ELLIPSIS OF THE SUBSTANTIVE:

Ruppe [la náve] in máre. He made shipwreck.

(Crusca.)

mi scusasi [délia cólsa] di ció. I exculpated myself from that fault.

(Class.)
Alessandro muore [per amore] di quella vedova. (Bocc.)
conoscendo che qui vi non era [luogo] da piangere ....... (Bocc.)
bastami [la disgrazia] di essere stato schernito una volta. (Bocc.)
io ci tornerò, e daròtene tante [bussi], ch’io ti farò tristo per tutto il tempo, che tu ci viverai. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)
niuno male si fèce nella caduta, quantunque alquanto cadesse da alto [luogo]. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Alexander dies for that widow.
knowing that there was no place to weep .......
it is enough to have been insulted once.
I will return, and give thee so many blows, that I will make thee sorry as long as thou livest.
he did not hurt himself in falling, although he fell from a high place.

ELLIPSIS OF THE Adjective:

E sempre pòi per [buono] da molto ’l ebbe, e per amico. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)

fu [abile] da tanto, e tanto seppe fare, ch’egli pacificò il figliuolo col pàdre. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

non suspicò, che ciò Guccio Balena gli avesse fatto, perciocchè non conosceva [capace] da tanto. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

il re gli chiamò, e quéi, quando il videro, tenersi [immobili]. (Nov. Ant.)

And considered him always afterwards as a very good man, and as a friend.
he was so able, and knew how to do so much, that he reconciled the son with the father.
he did not suspect that Guccio Balena had done this to him, because he did not think him capable of so much.
the king called them, and they, when they saw him, stopped.

ELLIPSIS OF Relative Pronouns:

Esaminiamo se della còse [che si sòno] dette ne ha fatto alcuna. (Mach. Princ.)

la donna gli fece apprestare panni [i quali erano] stati del marito. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

Let us examine if he has done any of the things which have been said.
the woman caused clothes to be prepared for him, which had been her husband’s.
ELLIPSIS.

riscontrélio quivi Petilio Cerriale [il quale èra] fuggito dalle guardie di Vitellio. there met him Petilius Cerriale, who had escaped from the guards of Vitellius. (Dav. Stor.)

ELLIPSIS OF THE Infinitive OF Verbs:

Andate per [prendere] essi. Go after them. (Bocc.)
qui il sole non vi pud [pene-trare]. here the sun cannot penetrate. (Class.)
to èra un asinaccio che non potéva [sostenere] la vita. I was a great ass that could not endure life. (Firenz.)

ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Indicative Mood:

Tessa, odi tu quel ch'io [ödo]? Tessa, do you hear what I hear? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)
questi è il capitano, gli altri [sóno] da nulla. this is the captain, the others are of no account. (Dav. Stor.)
era parente stretto di Vespasian, e [éra] soldato di cón-ta. he was a near relation of Vespasian, and a good soldier. (Dav. Stor.)

ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Conjunctive Mood:

Qui ha questa cena, e non sarébbe chi [potéssse] mangiála. Here is this supper, and there is no one to eat it. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)
avrí gridáto, se non [fosse stato] che egli mi chíesè I would have cried out, had it not been that he besought mercy both in the name of God and in your name. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)
ah! ah! se non [fosse] ch'io ho reverenza a vós, padre, ah! ah! were it not for the respect that I bear to you, father, I would tell the great honor he does me. (Mach. Com.)

ELLIPSIS OF THE Gerund:

[Esséndo] durante la guerra. [Being] during the war. (Bocc.)
having seen the solitary place.
the domestic having arrived at Genoa, and having consigned the letter and delivered the message . . . .

**ELLIPSIS OF THE PARTICIPLE:**

*Se essi mi cacciassero gli occhi a che sarebbe [ridetto]?*  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)  

*se non fosse [stato] il Gran Prete, a cui mal pregava.*  
(Dant. Inf. 27.)

*se non fosse [stato] ch'egli era giovaneco, egli avrebbe avuto molto a sostenere.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

If they should tear out my eyes, to what should I be reduced?
if it had not been for the High Priest, whom curses light on.
had he not been a young man, he would have had a great deal to suffer.

**ELLIPSIS OF ADVERBS:**

*Ora [così] fossero essi pur giù disposti a venire, che veramente potrémmo dire la fortuna essere favoreggianti.*  
(Bocc. Intr.)

*al mondo non fur mai persone talménte rátte, — A far lor prò . . . . — Com' io dòpo coté parete fàtte.*  
(Dant. Inf. 2.)

Would that they were disposed to come, that we might truly say that fortune is favorable.
ever among men did any with such speed haste to their profit . . . as I when these words were spoken.

**ELLIPSIS OF PREPOSITIONS:**

*In casa [di] questi usurai.*  
(Bocc.)

*serviva [a] cérli pescalóri.*  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

*usava molto [in] la chiesa.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.)

*sedette re [per] anni quindices.*  
(Crusca.)

In the house of these usurers.
she served certain fishermen.
he frequented much the church.
he reigned for fifteen years.
MODES OF ADDRESS.

coneiramo [con] un poco di carne saltata. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

E LLIPSIS OF Conjunctions:

Fo sono la misera [e] sventurata Zinèvra. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)


I am the miserable and unfortunate Ginevra.

a royal nature, and an angelic mind, and "clear spirit," and a quick sight, and piercing eyes.

REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT MODES OF ADDRESS IN ITALIAN.

The Italians have three different modes of addressing a person; — viz. the second person singular, tu, 'thou'; and its inflexion, ti, 'to thee,' 'thee': — the second person plural, voi, 'you'; and its inflexion, vi, 'to you,' 'you': — and the third person singular, feminine, ella, and its inflexions, le, la; representing the title Vôstra Signoría (generally contracted into Vossignoría, and often written V. S.), 'your worship,' 'your lordship,' 'your ladyship'; whether the person addressed be a man or a woman.

The second person singular is used in addressing a person of inferior condition; as by a master speaking to a servant, by a parent addressing a child. Likewise husbands and wives, brothers and sisters, and any two intimate friends adopt it in speaking to each other. It is also used in poetry, and in addressing the Divinity.

The second person plural is used in addressing a person of equal rank with the speaker, but not par-
terribly intimate with him. Also by children addressing their parents, by ladies speaking to gentlemen. It is likewise used in addressing artisans, tradesmen, dealers, &c.

The third person singular, feminine, is used in addressing a superior, or one towards whom the speaker wishes to exhibit special civility and respect; as by a servant to his master, by a tradesman to a gentleman, &c. Ladies, and persons respectable for their age or office, are addressed in this mode.

It is to be observed, that when the second person plural, voi, and its inflexion, vi, are used, the verb is put in the plural; but all the other words, such as adjectives, participles, &c., agreeing with the subject, remain in the singular, masculine or feminine, according to the gender of the person addressed; as,

\[\text{voi, Signoret, sarete rispettato, you, Sir, will be respected; vi, Signora, siete savi, you, Madam, are wise.}\]

When the third person singular, feminine, e'lla, and its inflexions, le, la; or the title Vossignoria, are employed, the verb is put in the singular; and the words agreeing with them take the feminine gender, whether the person addressed be masculine or feminine; as,

\[\text{ella, or V. S. sara rispettata, you [Sir], or your lordship will be respected;}
\[\text{ella, or V. S. è savia, you [Madam], or your ladyship will be respected:}
\[\text{elle, or V. S. sarà rispettata, you [Sir], are, or your lordship is wise;}
\[\text{ella, or V. S. è savia, you [Madam] are, or your ladyship is wise.}\]

Where two or more individuals are addressed in the third person, the third person plural, feminine, e'leno,
MODES OF ADDRESS.

and its inflexion, lóro; or the titles Vóstre or le Vóstre Signoríe, le Signoríe lóro, lor Signorí, are used; the verb being put in the plural, and the words agreeing with them, in the plural feminine; as,

*elle*no, or le Vóstre Signoríe saránno rispettái,

you [gentlemen], or your lordships will be respected;

you [ladies], or your ladyships will be respected;

*elle*no, or le Signoríe lóro sóno adívë,

you [gentlemen], or your lordships are wise;

you [ladies], or your ladyships are wise.

Some Italian Grammarians assert, on the authority of Bembo, Benki-vóghio, Ganganéllí, and other modern writers, that this agreement in gender of adjectives and participles, with the word Vossignoria or the pronoun ella, when used in addressing a man, ought to take place only, when the verb éssere, 'to be,' stands between them; as,

*él*la, or V. S. è molto dòtta,

you [Sir] are, or your lordship is very learned:

but if any other verb stands between the word Vossignoria or the pronoun ella and the adjective or participle, these are made to agree with the person signified by those; as,

V. S., or ella par molto pensie-

you [Sir] seem, or your lordship seems very thoughtful.

If the verb happens to be the auxiliary éssere, and the participle of another verb, then this participle agrees in gender with the word V. S. or the pronoun ella, and the following adjective or participle is made to agree with the person signified by them; as,

*él*la si è mostràta, Signóre, you have shown yourself, Sir, both non meno sàvio, che beneigno, wise and kind,

Adjectives of nations agree always with the person signified by the pronoun ella or the word V. S.; as,

*él*la senzà dúbbio è Románo,

you, Sir, without doubt are a Roman;

le Signoríe lóro saránno cérto

you, gentlemen, are certainly Italians.
Besides the abovementioned modes of address, the Italians often use the demonstrative pronouns *quello, quallà*, and the words *gióvane, úomo, dònna*, in speaking to a person whose name is unknown to them; and say *quél gióvane, 'young man'; quell' úomo, 'good man'; &c.* as,

*avvertisci, quél gióvane, take care, young man, for thou che tu t'inganni, deceivest thyself; quell' úóm dàbbène, che what is the matter, good man? cosa è stàta?*  
*vói siète móto altiéra, quél- you are very proud, my good la dònna,*  

but this way of addressing people, is only *used* by superiors towards their inferiors.

---

The following are the *Titles* used by the Italians in addressing the different qualities of persons: viz. in *speaking* to a *gentleman*, *Signòre*, 'Sir'; *Vossignoria* (written, *V. S.*), 'your worship,' 'your lordship': — to a *person of rank*, or to a *nobleman*, *Illustrissimo* (*Illmò*), 'most illustrious Sir'; *Vossignoria Illustrissima* (*V. S. Illmà*), 'Your most illustrious lordship'; *Eccellènza, 'Excellency'; Vòstra Eccellènza* (*V. E.*), 'Your Excellency': — to a *prince of the blood*, *Altèzza, 'Highness'; Vòstra Altèzza*, 'Your Highness': — to a *king*, *Sire, 'Sire'; Maestà, 'Majesty'; Vòstra Maestà* (*V. M.*), 'Your Majesty': — to an *emperor*, *Sire, 'Sire'; Maestà, 'Majesty'; Maestà Imperiale, 'Imperial Majesty'; Vòstra Maestà Imperiale* (*V. M. I.*), 'Your Imperial Majesty'; Vòstra Maestà Reàle e Imperiale* (*V. M. R. I.*), 'Your Royal and Imperial Majesty': — to a *monk*, *Pàdre, 'Father'; Vòstra Paternità* (*V. Ptà*), 'Your Paternity': — to a *priest*, *Reveréndo, 'Reverend'; Vòstra Reverènza* (*V. R.*), 'Your Rever-
ence': — to a **Bishop, Monsignore, 'Right Honorable'; Eccellenza Reverendissima, 'Most Reverend Excellency'; Vóstra Eccellénsa Reverendissima (V. E. Remā), 'Your most Reverend Excellency': — to a **Cardinal, Eminénsa, 'Eminence'; Vóstra Eminénza (V. Emzā), 'Your Eminence': — to the **Pope, Santità, 'Holiness'; Sánto Pádre, 'Holy Father'; Vóstra Santità (V. Stà), 'Your Holiness'; Vóstra Beatitúdine (V. Bétdnè), 'Your Blessedness.'

[For Illustrations of the above Remarks on the Different Modes of Address in Italian, see the Author's *Conversazioni Italiane*, where they have been fully exemplified.]
PART IV.

ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.

CHAPTER I.

OF ACCENTS.

The accent, in Orthography, is a small sign placed upon the vowels of words to determine their pronunciation.

There are two accents in Italian, the grave and the acute.

The grave accent is an oblique line drawn from the left to the right (\(^{'}\) ); and the acute, an oblique line drawn from the right to the left (\(\acute{\text{ '}}\) ).

These accents are generally put on all words in which a letter or syllable has been suppressed; as in natio from nativo, 'native'; in which \(v\) is suppressed; virtù from virtùx, virtùde, or virtùx, 'virtue'; in which \(te\), \(de\), \(e\), are suppressed; &c.

And on those words in which the sameness of spelling might produce a confusion of signification; as in per dú, 'but'; bába, 'power'; &c. to distinguish them from pero, 'pear-tree'; bába, 'nurse'; &c.

The grave accent is put

On all contracted nouns of more than one syllable;
as,

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{caritá} & \quad \text{[caritate, or caritade], charity; } \\
\text{mercè} & \quad \text{[mercede], } \text{mercy:}
\end{align*}
\]
On the names of the days of the week ending in i; as,

*Lunedì*, Monday; *Venerdì*, Friday:

On the compounds of *che*; as,

*perché*, because; *benchè*, although:

On the compounds of *tre*; as,

*ventitré*, twenty-three; *centottre*, one hundred [and three:

On the first and third persons singular of the future of all verbs; as,

*amarò*, love; *ament*, I will love; *amèrò*, he will love;
*temerò*, fear; *tèmerò*, I will fear; *sentirò*, hear; *sentirò*, he will hear:

On the third person singular of the perfect of all those verbs in which the first person of the same tense terminates with two vowels; as,

*cantò*, sang; *credè*, believed; *dormì*, slept:

On the words

*metì*, half; *cremè*, crimson; *baccalà*, cod-fish; *solfà*, sofa; *caffè*, coffee; *taffeta*, taffety; *tannè*, tawny; *aloès*, aloes; *falò*, bonfire; *alcalà*, alkali; *oidì*, fy; *collà*, there; *orsì*, come; *kosì*, so, or thus; *costì*, there; *tesì*, just now; *costì*, there;
*aùndè!*, alas! *ollà!*, ho there! *oomè!*, take care!

On the words

*ciò*, this, or that; *gliè*, already; *giù*, below; *quìè*, here; *più*, more; *quì*, *più*, may, or can;
which are written with a grave accent in order to show that the two vowels are to be pronounced both in one syllable:

And on the words

\[\begin{align*}
    d i, & \quad \text{(noun)} & \text{diy;} \\
    d a, & \quad \text{(verb)} & \text{gives;} \\
    z a, & \quad \text{(adverb)} & \text{is;} \\
    n e, & \quad \text{(affirmative particle, or adverb)} & \text{there;} \\
    n e, & \quad \text{(negative particle, or conjunction)} & \text{no, or neither;} \\
    s e, & \quad \text{(personal pronoun)} & \text{one's self;} \\
    t e, & \quad \text{(noun)} & \text{tea;} \\
    c h e, & \quad \text{(conjunction)} & \text{for, or because;} \\
\end{align*}\]

in which the grave accent is used as a mark of distinction between them, and the words

\[\begin{align*}
    d i, & \quad \text{(preposition)} & \text{of;} \\
    d a, & \quad \text{(conjunction)} & \text{from, or by;} \\
    e, & \quad \text{(conjunction)} & \text{and;} \\
    l a, & \quad \text{(article, or conjunctive pronoun)} & \text{the, or her;} \\
    l i, & \quad \text{(conjunctive pronoun)} & \text{the, or them;} \\
    s i, & \quad \text{(relative particle)} & \text{one's self;} \\
    n e, & \quad \text{(conjunction)} & \text{of it, or of them;} \\
    s e, & \quad \text{(relativr pronoun)} & \text{if;} \\
    t e, & \quad \text{(personal pronoun)} & \text{thee, or to thee;} \\
    c h e, & \quad \text{(relative pronoun)} & \text{who, which, or that.} \\
\end{align*}\]

The acute accent is put

On the i of the terminations \(ia, io\), of nouns, when the two vowels are pronounced in two distinct syllables; as, magia, magic; desio, desire:

On words in which the stress of the voice, by a poetical license, is transferred from one syllable to another; as, simile [for simile], similar; oceino [for oceano], ocean:

And, sometimes, on the words

\[\begin{align*}
    \text{Ancora}, & \quad \text{anchor;} \\
    \text{folgore}, & \quad \text{thunderbolt;} \\
    \text{seguito}, & \quad \text{suite;} \\
    \text{nectare}, & \quad \text{nectar;} \\
    \text{tinerere}, & \quad \text{tender;} \\
\end{align*}\]
to distinguish them from the words

ancora, [ancóra], yet, also, or again;
folgore, [folgóre], splendor;
ettare, [nettáre], to clean;
tenere, [tenére], to hold;
seguilo, [seguíto], followed.

These are all the cases in which the accents are used, except that, in some books which teach the principles of the language, the acute accent is employed to facilitate the pronunciation to learners.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE APOSTROPHE.

The apostrophe is a small sign, like a comma (‘), inserted between two words to mark the elision of a vowel.

The apostrophe is generally used at the end of those words that terminate with a vowel, followed by a word that begins with the same vowel; as,

[buóna avventúra] buon' avventúra, good fortune;
[gránde edifíció] grand' edifício, great edifice;

And at the end of words that terminate with a vowel followed by a word that begins with any other vowel, whenever it is necessary, to render the pronunciation more agreeable; as,

[quésto vómo] quest' vómo, this man;
[quélio líbero] quell' líbero, that tree.

The Italians write with an apostrophe

The articles lo, la, 'the,' making an elision of the vowels o, a, before words beginning with a vowel; as,

'I amico, the friend; 'I innocenza, the innocence.
These articles are also written sometimes without an apostrophe; as, lo amore, the love; la energia, the energy.

But when lo is followed by an o, and la is followed by an a, they are always written with an apostrophe; as, l’ombra, the honor; l’anima, the soul.

The article gli, the, when it is followed by an i; as, gli ingegni, the geniuses; gli idoli, the idols.

The article le, the, when the following word begins with e; as, l’esercito, the heresies; l’emendamento, the emendations.

Sometimes they write also with an apostrophe the article il, the; after a word ending with a vowel, and make an elision of the vowel i; as,

tutto ’l mondo, all the world; sopra ’l petto, upon the breast.

The words mi, me; ti, thee; ci, us, or here; vi, you, or there; si, one’s self; ne, of it; or of them; hence, or thence; se, if; di, of; when they come before a vowel; as,

m’ inganno, I deceive myself;
č’ ama, he loves thee;
c’ intende, he understands us; &c.

And the words i’, e’, è’, å’, dà’, cò’, né’, pé’, bé’, sè’, di’, sé’, rë’, pó’, mé’, mó’, vò’, té’, &c., abbreviated from io, I; ei, he, or they; dèi, of the; ái, to the; dài, from or by the; cói, with the; néi, in the; péi, for or by the; béi, or bene, hand-some, or well; séi, thou art; dici, say thou; fèce, he made; vèdi, see thou; póco, little; mé-glio, better; módo, mode or manner; vóglio, I wish; tiéni, hold thou; &c.
The apostrophe ought never to be used when the elision of the vowel might produce, in nouns or adjectives, a confusion of gender, of number, or of relation among themselves:

Thus the feminine of all the adjectives of the common gender, like innocénte, 'innocent'; errànte, 'wandering'; &c. preceded by the article la, 'the,' are written without elision, la innocénte, 'the innocent woman'; la errànte, 'the wandering woman'; to distinguish them from the masculine, l' innocénte [lo innocénte], 'the innocent man'; l' errànte [lo errànte], 'the wandering man':

Those nouns which in the plural do not change their termination, as, effigie, 'image'; éstasi, 'ecstacy'; preceded by the article le, 'the,' are written without elision, le effigie, 'the images'; le éstasi, 'the ecstacies'; to distinguish them from the singular, l' effigie [la effigie], 'the image'; l' éstasi [la éstasi], 'the ecstacy':

And the preposition da, 'from or by,' expressing the relation of derivation, followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, as d' amóre, 'from or by love'; is written without elision, to distinguish it from the relation of possession, d' amóre [di amóre], 'of love.'

Nor is the apostrophe to be used when the elision of the vowels would change the sound of the consonants; as in gli, 'the,' followed by the vowels a, e, o, u, where the elision of the i would render hard the liquid sound of the gl; as in

\[
\begin{align*}
gli & \text{ avéri,} \\
gli & \text{ edétti,} \\
gli & \text{ 6écci,} \\
gli & \text{ uccélli,}
\end{align*}
\]

(For) gli avéri; gli edétti; gli 6écci; gli uccélli; the misers; the ddicts; the eyes; the birds.

For the same reason, ci, 'us,' or 'here'; and words ending in ce, ci; ge, gi, are never written with an apostrophe before the vowels a, o, u; since the elision of e, i, would give to the consonants a hard sound; as in
ORTHOGRAHPHY.

c' ama,
suc' ardente,
dolc' accenti,
ping' apriche,
poggi' ameni,

{ cl' ama, he loves us;
{ suc' ardente, burning light;
{ dolc' accenti, sweet accents;
{ ping' apriche, sunny places;
{ poggi' ameni, pleasant hills.

Finally, words that end with two vowels, as cambiō, 'exchange'; nēbbia, 'fog'; though followed by another vowel, do not receive an apostrophe;

EXCEPT

A few verbs, ending in ico, as vōgliō, dōgliō, which followed by ico, 'I,' are written

vōgli ico, I wish; mi dōgli ico, I grieve.

Likewise words that are marked with a grave accent, as felicitā, 'happiness'; gioventū, 'youth'; &c. do not receive an apostrophe;

EXCEPT

Perchē, benchē, and all the other compounds of che; as,
perch' egī disse, because he said; bench' ella sìsse, although she was.

CHAPTER III.

REDUPLICATION OF CONSONANTS.

The Italians write all words as they pronounce them; and in those words in which a consonant is pronounced with double force, they double the consonant in writing; as,

obbligo, obligation; immagine, image;
facceda, business; legittimo, lawful.

Consonants are generally doubled.
REDUPLICATION OF CONSONANTS.

In words compounded of one of the particles a, o, i or in, si, se, nè, co or con, so, su, da, ra, fra, and of any other word beginning with a consonant; as,

[A féna]  appéna,  hardly;
[o véro]  ovvero,  or else;
[i or in nigáre]  irigáre,  to water;
[sì côme]  siccòme,  as;
[se bëne,]  sebëne,  although;
[nè méno]  némëno,  nor yet;
[co or con muó-commuóvere,]  move;

[so leváre]  solleváre,  to raise;
[su cédere]  succédere,  to succeed;
[da bëne]-  dabëne,  honest;
[ra cónto]  racónto,  relation;
[fra méssò]  framéssò,  put between:

In words compounded of a verb ending with a vowel bearing the accent upon it, and of a conjunctive pronoun; as,

[ha lo]  hállo,  he has it;
[dirò ví]  diróvvi,  I will tell you;

EXCEPT

When the verb is followed by the pronoun gli, when the g is never doubled:

In all words compounded of an adverb, a preposition, or a conjunction, ending with a vowel, and of any other word beginning with a consonant; as,

[óltre ciò]  oltrecciò,  besides that;
[là ciù]  lacoiù,  there below;
[gil mài]  giammài,  never;
[sópra nóme]  sopranòme,  surname;
[kr nùre]  cròure,  and yet.
CHAPTER IV.

INCREASE OF WORDS.

The increase of words is the addition of a vowel or a consonant, either at the beginning or at the end of a word.

When the words in, 'in'; con, 'with'; non, 'no', or 'not'; per, 'for,' 'by,' or 'through'; are followed by a word beginning with an s followed by another consonant, as, stráda, spavénito, scrive, schérzo; to avoid the harshness produced by the meeting of these consonants, the second word commonly takes an i before it; as,

in stráda,
con spavénito,
non scrive,
per schérzo,

instead of
in stráda, in the street;
con spavénito, with fright;
non scrive, does not write;
per schérzo, in jest.

In poetry, however, this rule is not so strictly observed as in prose; since the increase (adding a syllable to the word), would be often incompatible with the measure of the verse.

The preposition a, 'to,' and the conjunctions e, 'and'; o, 'or'; when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, sometimes take a d after them, to prevent the hiatus; as,

ad uno ad uno,
ambre en odio,
ôd in cielo od in terra,

one after another;
love and hatred;
either in heaven or on earth.

And the prepositions su, insù, 'upon'; followed by another u, take an r after them; as,
sur un mûnte,
isù un pûlco,

upon a hill;
upon a stage.
CHAPTER V.

DIMINUTION OF WORDS.

The diminution of words is the suppression or retrenchment of a letter or a syllable, either at the end or in the middle of a word.

The Italians retrench the last vowel of words ending in e, o, preceded by one of the consonants l, m, n, r, forming with them a syllable by themselves; as in sà-le, 'salt'; uó-mo, 'man'; mà-no, 'hand'; cuó-re, 'heart'; and followed by a word beginning with a consonant; as,

**SAL cománε,**
common salt;

**uóm di córte,**
courtier;

**MÁN di dómna,**
lady's hand;

**CUÓR dolente,**
grieving heart.

But if le, lo; ne, no; re, ro, do not form a syllable by themselves, but in concurrence with any other consonant, as in Só-fó-cle, 'Sophocles'; Án-glo, 'Englishman'; vi-gne, vineyards'; pé-gno, 'pledge'; á-cré, 'sour'; pi-gro, 'lazy'; the words are never retrenched.

When e is preceded by rr, as in condúr-re, 'to conduct'; and o is preceded by ll or nn; as in fanciúl-lo, 'youth'; hán-no, 'they have'; they retrench the whole syllable; as,

**CONDÚR séco,** to conduct with one's self;

**FANCIÚL vezzáso,** handsome youth;

**L' hán rubáto,** they have robbed him.

The last vowel of the words úno, 'a or an'; bénε, 'well'; buóno, 'good'; and the last syllable of the words béllo, 'handsome'; quéllo, 'that'; gránde, 'great';
when they are followed by a word beginning with a consonant, are always retrenched; as,

un fiore, a flower;
ben ti stu, thou deservest it;
buon vino, good wine;
bel prato, beautiful meadow;
quél libro, that book;
gran mercato, great market;
gran città, great city.

The last vowel of the word Signore, 'Master'; and the last syllable of the words Frate, 'Brother [Friar]'; Santo, 'Saint'; when they are used as titles; is also retrenched before a consonant; as,

Signor Carlo, Master Charles;
Fra Giovanní, Brother John;
San Paolo, Saint Paul.

Words ending in a are never retrenched;

**EXCEPT**

Suora, 'Sister'; which, when used as a title, loses the a; as,

Suor Maria, Sister Mary;

and ora, 'now,' with its compounds allora, ancora, talora, &c. which, before a consonant, may be retrenched; as,

ora, now say;
alla, then I saw;
ancora, he weeps still;
talora, sometimes he is awake.

Words ending in i are never retrenched;

**EXCEPT**

Fui, 'out'; and the second person of the imperative of verbs ending in nere, nire; as tienci, 'hold thou'; vieni, 'come thou'; from teneri, 'to hold'; venire, 'to come'; which before a consonant lose their i; as,
DIMINUTION OF WORDS.

FUÔR di città, out of town;
TIÉN quésto, hold this;
VIÉN présto, come quick.

Words ending in u, and words accented on the last syllable, are never retrenched.

Words ending with two vowels are never retrenched;

EXCEPT

When the two vowels are preceded by n, as in António, ‘Anthony’; testimónio, ‘testimony’; in which case they may be retrenched; as, ANTON-MÁria, Anthony-Maria;
TESTIMÓN veráce, true testimony.

Words retrenched in the singular, are never retrenched in the plural;

EXCEPT,

Gránde, ‘great’; which in its plural grándi, also, loses the last syllable; as,
GRAN pericoli, great dangers;
GRAN ricchézze, great riches;
and such words as cavalière, ‘cavalier’; demónio, ‘demon’; &c. which, in poetry, may lose the last vowel or vowels, even in their plurals; as,
le dónne, i CAVALIÈRE, the ladies, the cavaliers;
i DEMÓN diúri, the cruel demons.

Words, which would be retrenched before a word beginning with a consonant, are always written with an apostrophe before words beginning with a vowel; as,
bell’ aspétto, handsome appearance;
quell’ arco, that bow;
grand’ uómo, great man;
Frat’ Albérito, Brother Albert;
Sant’ Andréa, Saint Andrew;
EXCEPT

U'no, ‘a or an,’ and its compounds; quâle, ‘which’; buôno, ‘good’; bene, ‘well’; Signôre, ‘Master’; Sôbra, ‘Sister’; and the infinitive, and forms of verbs ending in l, m, n, r, which do not receive an apostrophe; as,

un amico, a friend;
alcim odore, no smell;
qual ardire, what daring;
buôn voôme, good man;
den inciso, well engraved;
Signôr Onôfrio, Master Onofio;
Suôr Angelica, Sister Angelica;
andar a spasso, to go and take a walk;
abbiém amâo, we have loved;
andrà xeônti, they will be exempted;
sarébber ârsi, they would be burnt.

Words are never retrenched, when they are followed by a z, or an s followed by another consonant; or when they are at the end of a sentence;

EXCEPT

In poetry where words are sometimes retrenched, even before a z, or an s followed by another consonant, on account of the measure of the verse.

Some words, when they undergo some alteration, lose a vowel in the middle, particularly if the tonic accent of the word, by such alteration, is transferred to the following syllable; as,

buônô, good; bonissimo, very good;
tuônô, thunder; tonôre, to thunder;
suônô, I play; soniâmô, we play.

Some compound words lose a letter, or a syllable in their composition; as,

[iêm sêra] ierêra, last evening;
DIMUITION OF WORDS.

{sótto térra] sottérra, under ground;
[dománi mattína] domattína, to-morrow morning;
[cénto cinquánta] cencinquánta, one hundred and fifty.

Infinitives, and those forms of verbs that end in le, ne, mo, no, when joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop their final vowel; as,

[amáre lo] amárlo, to love him;
[duóle ti] duólti, it grieves thee;
[viéne séne] viénsene, he grieves thesence;
[andiámvo vi] andiámvi, let us go there;
[aiútárono ci] aiútáronci, they assisted us.

The first and third persons singular, and the third person plural, of the imperfect of the indicative of all the verbs; which in the infinitive terminate in ére, ire, generally drop the v; as,

[fo ] teméva,] io, } teméa, I } feared;
[égli ] églino, } teméano, they } feared;
[fo ] sentíva,] io, } sentía, I } heard;
[égli ] églino, } sentíano, they } heard.

The words caválli, capéli, coltéli, fratéli, ruscéli, quélí, bèlli, délli, állí, dálí, nélí, péli, cólli, sulí, trálli, and quálli, máli, tálí, figliúlóli, may be contracted into cavá, capé, colté, fraté, ruscé, qué, bè, dé, ál, dá, né, pé, có, sú, trá, quá, má, tál, figliúó; which, when they are followed by a consonant, it is more elegant to abbreviate, and write with an apostrophe; as,

cavá' leggiéri, light horses; ruscé' ridénti, smiling brooks;
capé' biánchi, white hair; qué' signóri, those gentlemen;
colté' pungénti, sharp knives; bè' costúmi, good manners;
fraté' carnáli, own brothers; dé' neméci, of the enemies;
ORTHOGRAPHY.

ató parénti, to the parents; trà' bóschi, amongst the woods;
dá' lódrí, by the robbers; guá' dolóri, what pains;
né'bisógni, in the necessities; mà' pensiéri, malicious thoughts;
pé' cómpí, through the fields; tà' discórsí, such discourses;
cô' děntí, with the teeth; figliuól misér- very miserable sons.
štì mòntí, upon the mountains; "rimi,

The word églino, ‘they’; often loses its last syllable
and makes égli; and égli, ‘he,’ or ‘they,’ may be
contracted into éi, and written é”, ‘he,’ or ‘they.’

This is all that needs to be said on the diminution or
retrenchment of words; except that the rule respecting
the retrenchment of e, o, when preceded by l, m, n, r,
does not hold in certain instances, where such retrench-
ment would produce a harsh sound. Thus the words,
cómó, ‘how’; nóme, ‘name’; ánimo, ‘courage’; chiáro,
‘clear’; ráro, ‘ rare’; néro, ‘ black’; dáro, ‘ hard’; oscú-
ro, ‘obscure’; &c., are never written com, nom, ánim,
chiár, ner, rar, dur, oscúr, &c.

THE END.
TABLE OF CONTENTS.

PREFACE to the former Edition - - - - vii
  " to the present Edition - - - - xi
A LIST of Works examined with Reference to the Compilations of this Grammar - - - - xvii
A TABLE of the Abbreviations of the Names of Authors and of the Works quoted in this Grammar - - xxiv

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

INTRODUCTION - - - - - - - 1 - 10
ITALIAN ALPHABET - - - - - - 11, 12

PART I. — ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION - - 13 - 24
  CHAPTER I. — Sounds of the Vowels - - 13
    " II. — Pronunciation of the Consonants - - 14
    " III. — Of J and H - - - - - - - 16
    " IV. — Double Consonants - - - - - 17
    " V. — Of Syllables - - - - - - - 19
    " VI. — Diphthongs and Triphthongs - - 20
    " VII. — General Rules on the Italian Pronunciation 21
  EXERCISE on the Pronunciation - - - - 23

PART II. — ITALIAN ANALOGY - - - 25 - 388

PARTS of SPEECH - - - - - - - 25
  CHAPTER I. — Articles - - - - - - 25
    Union of the Prepositions with the Articles - - 28
    EXERCISE I. - - - - - - - - 34
  CHAPTER II. — Substantive Nouns - - - 36
    Gender - - - - - - - - 36
    Number, or Formation of the Plural - - 48
    Variation of Nouns - - - - - - 56
    EXERCISE II. - - - - - - - 60
TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER III. — Adjective Nouns. — Comparatives and Superlatives

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gender</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formation of the Plural</td>
<td>62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Agreement of Adjectives</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comparatives</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE III.</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Superlatives</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE IV.</td>
<td>78</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER IV. — Augmentatives and Diminutives

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Augmentatives</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE V.</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diminutives</td>
<td>84</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE VI.</td>
<td>89</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER V. — Numerals

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Cardinal Numbers</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ordinal</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Collective, Distributive, and Proportional Numbers</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE VII.</td>
<td>98</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER VI. — Substantive Pronouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Personal Pronouns</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Variation of Personal Pronouns</td>
<td>101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE VIII.</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conjunctive Pronouns</td>
<td>109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Union of the Pronouns mi, ti, gli, ne or ci, vi, si, with the Pronouns lo, la, gli, li, le, ne</td>
<td>114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE IX.</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relative Pronouns</td>
<td>119</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE X.</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Interrogative Pronouns</td>
<td>127</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE XI.</td>
<td>129</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER VII. — Adjective Pronouns

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Possessive Pronouns</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE XII.</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demonstrative Pronouns</td>
<td>137</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE XIII.</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indefinite Pronouns</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE XIV.</td>
<td>156</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER VIII. — Of the Particles Ne, Ci, Vi

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>EXERCISE XV.</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHAPTER IX. — Verbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Variation of Verbs</td>
<td>164</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
# TABLE OF CONTENTS

**Auxiliary Verbs**
- The Verb *Amare*, affirmatively 165
- " " negatively 165
- " " interrogatively 117
- " " interrogative-negatively 172

**Essere** 173

**Regular Verbs**
- Active Verbs — First Conjugation 177
  - *Amare*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *dre* 177
  - *Cercare*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *care* 181
  - *Pregare*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *gare* 182
  - *Baciare*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *ciare* 183
  - *Fregiare*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *giare* 185
  - *Noiare*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *iare* 186
  - *Inutiare*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *vare* 187

**Second Conjugation**
- *Temere*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in the infinitive in *ere* (long); and of those which in the perfect end in *ei* and *etti* 187
- *Tessere*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in the infinitive in *ere* (short); and of those which in the perfect end in *ei* only 191
- *Tacie*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *etere* 193
- *Empiere*, paradigm of the Verbs ending in *tere* 194

**Third Conjugation**
- *Sentire*, paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the present of the indicative, end in *o* only 195
- *Esibire*, paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the present of the indicative, end in *isco* only 198
- *Abborrire*, paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the present of the indicative, end both in *o* and *isco* 201

**Cucire**, paradigms of the Verbs ending in *ciere* 204

**Remarks on the foregoing Verbs** 205

**Exercise XVI.** 209

**Passive Verbs**
- *Essere Amato*, paradigm of the passive verbs 212

**Neuter Verbs**
- *Partire*, paradigm of the neuter verbs 216

**Pronominal Verbs**
- *Pentirsi*, paradigm of the pronominal verbs 220

**Unpersonal Verbs**
- *Piovere*, paradigm of the unpersonal verbs 224

**Essere**, unpersonally used 227

**Exercise XVII.** 232
### TABLE OF CONTENTS.

**CHAPTER XI. — Irregular Verbs**

| Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation | 238 |
| Andäre | 238 |
| Dére | 240 |
| Färe | 242 |
| Stäre | 244 |

**Exercise XVIII.**

| Second Conjugation — Irregular Verbs in ἐre (long) | 249 |
| Cadère | 249 |
| Dissauede, dulère | 251 |
| Dode | 253 |
| Giacère | 254 |
| Parère | 256 |
| Persuadaere, piaćere | 256 |
| Potère | 257 |
| Rimanière | 258 |
| Sapère | 259 |
| Sedère | 260 |
| Tucère | 262 |
| Tenère | 263 |
| Valère | 265 |
| Vedère | 267 |
| Volère | 268 |

**Exercise XIX.**

| Irregular Verbs in ἐre (short) | 272 |
| Invadère, paradigm of the first class [invadere, lédere, ri-dere, rôdere, allüedere, ardere, accéndere, chiudere, spär-gere, mérgere, börre, rivértere] of the verbs in ἐre (short) | 273 |
| Ass'bërere, paradigm of the second class [ass'bërere, vínçere, tôrcere, völgere, giûngere, pôrgere, distinguere, ass'mere, sólvere] | 277 |
| Cógliere, paradigm of the Verbs ending in glière | 278 |
| Spéngere, paradigm of the Verbs ending in gnère | 279 |
| Svèllere, paradigm of the Verbs ending in lèrë | 280 |
| Concédere, paradigm of the third class [concédere, scindere, esprimere, scôlère, discütere, connêtëere, muôbère] | 282 |
| Cubère, paradigm of the fourth class [cubere, dirigere, léggerë, scrivere] | 283 |
| Adaücere, paradigm of the Verbs ending in úcere | 284 |
| Distrüggere, trære | 285 |
| Rispônderere, paradigm of the fifth class | 286 |
| Chiédere | 288 |
| Pônerere | 289 |

| Other Verbs in ἐre (short) | 291 |
| Conôuscere, crêscere | 291 |
| Nuôcere, násccere | 292 |
| Rômpere | 292 |
| Béverere | 293 |
TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Remarks on the foregoing Verbs ......................................... 295
Exercise XX. ........................................................................ 301

Third Conjugation .................................................................. 303
Dire ....................................................................................... 303
Mortre ................................................................................. 305
Salire ..................................................................................... 306
Seguire .................................................................................. 308
Udire ...................................................................................... 309
Usire ....................................................................................... 310
Venire ...................................................................................... 311
Offerire .................................................................................. 312
Remarks on other Verbs in ëre .................................................. 314
Exercise XXI. ......................................................................... 316

Chapter XI. — Defective Verbs .............................................. 317
Defective Verbs ending in ëre (long) ......................................... 317
Calere ................................................................................... 318
Calere or colère, lectre & licre or lécer & locere .................. 319
Pañere, sitère ........................................................................ 320
Soñere, stupère ...................................................................... 321
Defective Verbs ending in ëre (short) ...................................... 322
Algere, angere ...................................................................... 322
Arrógere, capere ................................................................... 323
Chérere, convellere .............................................................. 324
Fiedere .................................................................................. 325
Lucere .................................................................................... 326
Möcere ................................................................................... 327
Riedere, sérpere .................................................................... 328
Soffícere or soffógere ........................................................... 329
Tangere, tôllere .................................................................... 330
Torpere .................................................................................. 331
Urjere, vijere ......................................................................... 332
Defective Verbs ending in ëre .................................................. 333
Gre ......................................................................................... 333
Pre ........................................................................................ 334
Olire ....................................................................................... 335

General Remarks on Italian Verbs ........................................ 338

Chapter XII. — Participles ...................................................... 334
Exercise XXII. ...................................................................... 348

Chapter XIII. — Adverbs ........................................................ 349
Simple Adverbs in common use — of Time .......................... 349
Place ....................................................................................... 350
TABLE OF CONTENTS.

*Order, quantity, quality, affirmation, negation, doubt, comparison, interrogation* 351
*Choice, demonstration* 352
*Compound Adverbs* 356
*Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs* 357
*Adverbial Phrases in common use* 359
**Exercise XXIII.** 361

**Chapter XIV. — Prepositions**
*Prepositions in common use* 363
**Exercise XXIV.** 365

**Chapter XV. — Conjunctions**
*Conjunctions in common use* 376
**Exercise XXV.** 382

**Chapter XVI. — Interjections**
*Interjections in common use* 384
**Exercise XXVI.** 387

PART III. — ITALIAN SYNTAX 389—553

**Chapter I. — Order and Position of Words** 389
*Simple Construction* 389
*Inverse* 393
**Exercise XXVII.** 395

**Chapter II. — Concordance or Agreement of Words** 397
*Concordance of Articles* 397
*of Adjectives* 397
*of Numerals* 403
*of Pronouns* 408
*of Verbs* 405
*of Participles* 411
**Exercise XXVIII.** 413

**Chapter III. — Regimen or Government of Words** 415
*Regimen of Substantives* 415
*of Adjectives* 418
*of Verbs* 421
*of Prepositions* 432
*of Conjunctions* 433
**Exercise XXIX.** 436

**Chapter IV. — Use of Articles** 440
**Exercise XXX.** 468

**Chapter V. — Position of Adjectives** 472
**Exercise XXXI.** 480

**Chapter VI. — Use and Position of certain Pronouns** 483
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Notes</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>AUG 3, 1918</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 12, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 13, 1919</td>
<td>3/15/19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JAN 2, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 14, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JAN 6, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 16, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 22, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 23, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 26, 1919</td>
<td>2/26/19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 10, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAR 10, 1919</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6161 11 MVN</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>